



I HAVE A MANSION IN THE POST-APOCALYPTIC WORLD

BOOK 05

Morning Star LL

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

I Have a Mansion in the Post-apocalyptic World

(我在末世有套房)

by

Morning Star LL

(晨星LL)

Synopsis

Ruins stretched across the landscape in the apocalypse after the nuclear war.

If you accidentally survived on the wasteland, then you must be ready to face the endless hunger, ceaseless dangers, the mad zombies at night, and the peculiar mutant creatures that are the aftermaths of the constant radiation.

But for Jiang Chen, this place was heaven.

Mansions stood tall, luxurious cars parked on the street, high tech products and gold abandoned everywhere.

What? You were the president of a game development company before the war? You were responsible for the development of the 3D virtual reality online multiplayer game? Well, that's great, why don't you come work for me. The salary is two pieces of bread a day.

iPhone? Ultra thin design? Don't you see that the phone I invented are thinner than condoms?

Aircraft carrier? Fighter jets? Oh, I have those things as well, but they are designed for space combat.

Watch the story of Jiang Chen, who possessed the ability to travel through space and time, as he witness the creation of an empire stretched across space and time..

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Min @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: Land Reclamation?

A middle-aged woman in a blue suit stood at the door of the mansion. Her sharp business outfit looked professional. From the label on her briefcase, Jiang Chen could tell she was from Netherland's BMA Construction. They were currently responsible for the infrastructure development and tourist resource development projects on Pannu Island.

The purpose of her trip, Jiang Chen could guess, was to ask for money.

This situation was rather embarrassing. Based on the contract, at the completion of every phase, the tender should be transferred to the construction company. But since Jiang Chen hadn't been in the modern world for a while, the payments couldn't be signed off, hence payment was delayed until now.

When they finally found out Jiang Chen had returned, BMA sent someone out in hopes of resolving the matter of the delayed payment. Since Future Technology was the guarantor, they weren't afraid that Jiang Chen would scam them, but late payments seriously challenged their cash flow.

Jiang Chen didn't make her wait long as he opened the switch to the metal gate and greeted her outside personally.

When she saw Jiang Chen, the lady did a light bow and introduced herself.

"Hello, Mr. Jiang Chen. I'm Hanna Cavillian, manager of BMA's European division."

"Please come in." Jiang Chen smiled and welcomed her inside.

Hanna nodded and came inside.

Following Jiang Chen to the mansion's door, she occasionally checked her surroundings. Dense subtropical plants bloomed neatly along the sides of the lawn while wide-leaved trees were like

mini huts making the entire mansion resemble a castle guarded by trees.

This was a beautiful mansion, but she felt something was odd.

"What are you looking for?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"Mhmm..." Hanna gave it a thought and suddenly realized the problem. "Why are there no gardeners working at your mansion?"

Due to business reasons, she visited the Middle East multiple times. She saw many similar castles there and all had gardeners who tended to the plants throughout the day. Judging by the well-kept lawn, this place certainly looked like it was well-taken care of, but she didn't see any gardeners here.

Jiang Chen smiled. "Meticulous observation, but my mansion doesn't need gardeners."

As he said this, he waved his hand towards a bush on the side.

A disc-shaped drone flew out of the bush and hovered beside his hand. From a single glance, the drone itself wasn't a shocking piece of technology, so Jiang Chen didn't bother hiding anything.

But Hanna widened her eyes in disbelief. Words only came out after a long pause as she exclaimed, "Drone gardening? What a stunning piece of technology. Although we have been following the progress in this field, it's the first time I've seen an actual product... Could I ask which company it's from?"

Jiang Chen waved his hand to send the drone back as he joked, "Bill Gates loves to modify his own mansion. Why are you certain a company made this?"

Hanna laughed.

"You are a funny person."

After inviting her inside the mansion, they sat on the sofa as Ayesha poured a cold beverage for both of them.

In this kind of weather, cold orange juice was the most wonderful

refreshment.

Shelving the small talk, Hanna took out some documents from her briefcase and placed them in front of Jiang Chen.

"I am here about the Pannu Island tourism area and basic infrastructure development projects. The projects are 50% completed and are expected to be completed by December of this year. Here are the details of the work. Based on our contract, we have already completed two phases - could your party please process the payment for these two phases?"

Jiang Chen only scanned the document briefly before he said nonchalantly:

"Of course, please give me the documents."

Hanna nodded and took out two other documents from her briefcase.

The two phases totaled 4 billion USD. After he confirmed that the number wasn't amiss or had an extra zero, Jiang Chen signed the paperwork.

When she saw Jiang Chen's signature, Hanna's anxious heart finally settled down as she felt relieved.

To be honest, she was afraid that Future International would delay payment even further. Although under their agreement they agreed to pay by phase, an auditing process still existed. If the tendering side didn't recognize that they completed the projects or dragged out the auditing phase for some time, that could complicate things. It was a gamble to do business internationally. Hanna prepared over one hundred ways of convincing him to pay before she arrived.

But this scene surprised her as Jiang Chen agreed on the payment without any mishaps as if he didn't just sign over 4 billion USD but merely the cost of a restaurant bill.

Both parties each retained one copy of the paperwork. Hanna put

away her copy into the briefcase in front of her, feeling reassured.

"I have to admit: before I came, we thought you were avoiding us because you didn't want to pay. I apologize for our rude assumptions."

Hanna then stood up and bowed to Jiang Chen.

"No problem." Jiang Chen laughed it off and made a funny comment, "If someone owed me 4 billion, you bet I would be afraid that he would disappear."

Perhaps it was the joke that made her laugh or perhaps it was Jiang Chen's broken English, but Hanna chuckled.

"Also, can I ask something?"

Since she successfully secured payment for the company, Hanna's mood was obviously pleasant. "Of course."

"Does BMA have expertise in building artificial islands?"

A famous quote goes: "God created sea, the Dutch created land." From the 13th century, this country began its massive journey in land reclamation. Over 20% of the Netherlands' land was created artificially by filling in the sea. The hills were all dug out and the entire Friesland province was created through reclamation.

Although Pannu Islands had an expansive sea territory, its land area had always been limited. While it looked like it had a low population density, this was because the total population was twenty thousand. Once immigration policies opened up without affecting tourism resources, Jiang Chen estimated that a maximum of one hundred thousand people could fit in the country. Yet in Hua, any town alone had more than half a million people - one hundred thousand people was clearly not enough.

Jiang Chen always thought that the Netherlands had highly advanced land reclamation technology. Since BMA was a renowned Dutch company, Jiang Chen thought it would be good to ask.

Chapter 402: Another Usage of Jumping Ropes

"Of course, our company's businesses include land reclamation and shallow artificial island construction." Hanna smiled.

"If I want to build an artificial island south of Ange Island near the equator, could you estimate the cost?" Jiang Chen asked keenly.

"South of Ange Island?" Hanna clearly paused for a second as Jiang Chen's question surprised her.

"Is there a problem?" Noticing Hanna's reaction, Jiang Chen frowned.

"If I remember correctly, the sea territory south of Ange Island should be deep water. Normally, artificial islands are mostly created in shallow water or on natural reefs. The amount of sand and soil to create a deep-water artificial island would be astronomical," Hanna explained.

"Would it be possible to build a floating island? Just like a giant aircraft carrier." Jiang Chen wasn't ready to give up on the idea yet.

"Floating?" Hanna chuckled and shook her head. "Then wouldn't it float away with the tide?"

"Then connect the floating island with chains, just like an anchor."

Hanna shook her head again. "That's not possible. If it is a small island, no chains would be able to withstand the immense force of the sea. Also, even if the material existed, the material to create the island itself would be a problem. It's just like putting a one-square-kilometer steel board on the water - it wouldn't take a year for it to get torn away by the tide. Unless you create this island with titanium... I can't think of any better material."

Titanium was 42% lighter than steel, but its mechanical strength was two times that of pure iron. From an objective point of view, titanium would be the best choice, but the cost...

Jiang Chen debated for a moment longer before he let out a sigh.

"Okay, looks like I still need to think a bit more."

"I'm sorry I'm unable to help you on this," Hanna said apologetically.

Although BMA stated they had no solutions, Jiang Chen didn't give up just yet. If it wasn't possible in the modern world, it might not be as difficult in the apocalypse.

After seeing Hanna out the door, Jiang Chen returned to the gym. His discussion with Xia Shiyu about virtual reality helmets was interrupted halfway; now they could continue.

But when he went inside, he saw Xia Shiyu lying on the recliner with the helmet on.

Seeing her like this, Jiang Chen didn't wake her up. Instead, he closed the door gently.

"Why don't you use this opportunity to do something?"

Ayesha came from behind and hugged him.

"I'm not a pervert." Jiang Chen facepalmed.

All five senses were blocked when the virtual reality helmet was active. Unless the user's environment exhibited high temperatures or other obvious changes, the safety protocol wouldn't be triggered. This was the reason why the helmet had to be worn in a private space - it was easy to be assaulted wearing the helmet in public.

"That's not what I told Xia Shiyu." A faint smile appeared on Ayesha's face.

Jiang Chen's heart paused a beat then he turned his head. He picked Ayesha up and slung her over his shoulder as Ayesha gave a

light shout.

"Oh? You're becoming more naughty... you dare to trick me?" Jiang Chen "fiercely" slapped her butt as it made a loud sound.

"Awwwwh~"

She began to kick her legs in the air. While rubbing against his firm shoulder, Ayesha let out a faint moan. She turned around and looked at Jiang Chen innocently. "I... I only wanted to help the both of you."

Because of her movements on his shoulder, a cool sensation constantly brushed on the side of Jiang Chen's face which tickled his mind as well.

"Oh? How were you going to help?" Jiang Chen said with a smirk.

"I told her that... Tonight, I'll leave you to her," Ayesha said, frightened, as her eyes drifted to the gym back and forth, afraid that Xia Shiyu would wake up and see her in a difficult position.

Although it wasn't like she couldn't escape Jiang Chen's hold, she never imagined resisting him...

When he heard Ayesha's words, Jiang Chen facepalmed.

[You weren't helping - you only made the situation worse.]

"Could you put me down? You can do this when no one is around..." Ayesha pleaded in a small voice.

"No, I plan to punish you."

Jiang Chen had a wickedness to him and ignored her pleas as he carried Ayesha to the gym.

Since people must learn by example, he would punish the "student" in front of other people. At least for the next while, Xia Shiyu shouldn't wake up.

This was exhilarating.

Where did the skipping rope go? He never used it before and now

he had to go find it.

...

The world seemed to be alive...

Perhaps because of Xia Yu's personality, she chose to be a magician known for her preciseness. But after registering the account, she didn't immediately start a mission or explore the wild, but rather, she began to tour the city as a "visitor."

Other than the NPC who seemed to be alive, what impressed Xia Shiyu the most was that, in this world, she could see the world clearly without glasses.

It made sense since the images didn't need to pass through her cornea.

Therefore, even for the disabled, they could live in the virtual world like normal people... Staring at the leaves and branches swaying in the air and breathing in the fragrance of the flowers, Xia Shiyu sighed.

Seeing as it was getting late, she moved her finger in the air and chose the exit button.

Xia Shiyu took off her helmet as she sluggishly stretched her body and sat up. She felt refreshed and energized like she just took a great nap.

But then she sniffed her nose and raised her eyebrows slightly.

There was an odd smell in the air, but she couldn't distinguish what it was. It just made her heart beat faster.

"Illusion?" She muttered as she put the helmet away and walked outside.

In the hallway, she happened to bump into Ayesha with an air freshener in her hand.

The girl's face suddenly turned red and she hid the air freshener behind her back. Ayesha didn't say a single word as she briskly

walked by with her head buried.

[Strange.]

Xia Shiyu turned her head slightly but immediately shook her head and pushed her confusion to the back of her head.

[It's fine, I still have things to discuss with Jiang Chen...]

Chapter 403: Safety Concern

The mansion was spacious. It took Xia Shiyu a while before she found Jiang Chen reading books in the office at the end of the second-floor hallway.

He was reading <Society and Economy> which surprised Xia Shiyu. "You read books now?"

"No other choice. At this position, even if I don't want to, I have to learn," Jiang Chen said, unfazed.

To Jiang Chen's "hardworking" attitude, Xia Shiyu nodded in praise. Although he didn't expect him to contribute greatly to the company's operation, it was never bad for the president to know more about the economy.

Jiang Chen put aside the book that he had yet to flip through the first page as he asked nonchalantly.

"What's up?"

Xia Shiyu nodded, pulled up a chair from the side, and sat down across from Jiang Chen.

"It's about the virtual reality helmet."

"Technical aspect?"

"No, about the operation, somewhat related to the technical." Xia Shiyu paused, arranged her thoughts, and continued, "With Future 1.0's channel, it is easy for users to learn about our product. But I have to confirm two points. First, how likely is it for someone to make a knockoff?"

"Zero percent chance, at least not possible within the next ten years." Jiang Chen shook his head.

Any attempt to disassemble the helmet would trigger the circuit to self-destruct, the internal structure of the helmet was a black box to the owner. Even without the protection mechanism, it was

still challenging to mimic. The chip and circuit board in the helmet were produced by graphene material, and the graphene material's research in the modern world was only in the initial stage.

Ten years was a conservative estimate. Once Future Technology dominates the market, the market's desire to research the technology would cooldown. Needless to say, the major VR equipment manufacturers would all go bankrupt. To be able to develop the virtual reality technology, the modern world would only take more time compared to the apocalypse.

Xia Shiyu was pleased with the number ten. She nodded.

"Two, the server's ability to handle the load. With the quality of the game, if I have guessed correctly, it would take an astronomical amount of computation power. With the server's ability, how many concurrent users could we handle online?"

"You don't have to worry about this. Our server resources are more than sufficient." Jiang Chen laughed.

While it was a civilian model, it was a quantum computer. Nonetheless, it was more than sufficient enough to run a fantasy MMORPG without the need to replicate physics. Let alone 3.2 billion netizens, it could easily support the entire world's population.

Xia Shiyu was skeptical with what Jiang Chen said, but she still nodded.

"After confirming the above two points, I can start writing up the marketing plan. Mhmm, also, have you considered another point."

"What?"

"Security concerns," Xia Shiyu said with seriousness.

Needless to say, the introduction of new technology would draw the attention of all parties. There was a lot of companies that bet big on virtual reality technology, Google, Microsoft, and even a social media platform like Facebook invested 2 billion in

purchasing Oculus.

With the bets on the table, the sudden emergence of Future Technology would suddenly sweep the table. Just like with Xbox, who played the SUBOR?

Therefore, in the foreseeable future, the companies that were among the heavy favorites a few years ago would experience a series of rapid downturns. The hot spot would be forced to switch from virtual reality equipment to virtual reality applications.

Therefore, the frontrunner that led the technological shift would receive the hostility from the potential beneficiaries.

Jiang Chen clearly understood what Xia Shiyu meant, but to the potential danger, he only laughed.

"Now, do you think it is necessary for me to invest on this island?"

Xia Shiyu took a moment to process.

"Could it be..."

"That's right, this island is my backyard. Here, my army will protect my interests and rights."

Xia Shiyu was obviously thrown off again.

After a moment of silence, she spoke again, "So... the shareholder behind Celestial Trade is actually you?"

"Yes." The tip of Jiang Chen's lips curled up.

Xia Shibu rubbed her forehead as she said bewilderedly, "So, the overseas organization you said is factitious right?"

"Not exactly, but it works for me, not I work for it."

She finally digested the massive amount of information in her head, she sighed.

"...Okay. In this case, security is not a big concern then."

Although she still had a lot of questions, Xia Shiyu chose to bury

them in her head for now. She trusted that Jiang Chen would tell her one day, just like what he told her today.

At night, Xia Shiyu would obvious not go to Jiang Chen's room. But she used the excuse of the room is too big and moved to Ayesha's room. To Xia Shiyu's request, Ayesha didn't reject because she wanted to improve her relationship with her "future sister."

But it made it hard on Jiang Chen. Before Xia Shiyu leaves, he could only eat discreetly...

...

Over the next few days, Xia Shiyu spent her time in the mansion and worked remotely on her laptop. She was creating a marketing plan for <Godly Land> based on Jiang Chen's recommendation while controlling the day-to-day operations of Future Technology.

Although Jiang Chen was impressed by her ability to multitask, he was afraid that she couldn't handle the workload.

While Xia Shiyu was busy between things, Jiang Chen didn't sit around. He spent the days on boats between New Moon, Coro, and Ange Island.

The construction of the New Moon Island military base was basically complete with five hundred soldiers serving. Most of them were soldiers recruited locally at Pannu with some soldiers from Niger.

To alleviate the problem of a lack of soldiers, the manager Barkary posted a hiring post on a social media site for Celestial's security position. A monthly salary of 4000 USD a month plus a 150 square meters house after retirement. The academic requirement was only a high school diploma. With such favorable benefits, Celestial received a high number of applicants from developing countries. After the selection process, Barkary chose 1000 people out of the over ten thousand applicants.

A lot of them were retired soldiers with Han making up the majority. After they arrived on the plane, Ivan didn't immediately station them in New Moon but placed them at the military base on Coro Island for three months of training.

Once their ability and loyalty were confirmed, they will be joining New Moon Island as an official member of Celestial.

Chapter 404: Buy, Buy, Buy

What did Jiang Chen do in the past few days?

To summarize it in two words, spend money.

With a unit of billions.

The military base on New Moon Island has a 2300 meters long double runway airport, a radar station as well as a platform connected via a dam the size of two football fields. After he paid for the construction, Jiang Chen lost another 1.4 billion on his account. Including the 4 billion he spent a few days ago, he used 5.4 billion in three short days.

And that was not all.

To prepare for the extraction of molybdenum, Jiang Chen infused 1 billion to Future Mining, through a tender, he planned to build two semi-submersible offshore platforms south of Ange Island.

The semi-submersible offshore platform will mostly be used in the deep sea with its primary application in oil and gas extraction. Its principle was similar to a submarine with the platform built on a giant floating device. The device would submerge below the water and connect to the seabed through tubes. A balancing device similar to the weight on a fishing rod will be installed below the floatation device which would allow the platform to maintain its balance through the tides and storms.

The benefit of the offshore platform was that it was moveable. Once the mining deposition on the seabed has been completely exhausted, it could be transported away by a transport vessel. Jiang Chen planned to station two soldiers and three workers on the offshore platform and control the underwater mining device through electronic components. A boat would visit every week to bring the necessities and haul away the molybdenum ore rich with

manganese nodules.

Although the mining robot technology was still under development, Jiang Chen believes that it won't take long before results come from camp 27. Before that, it was not a bad choice to first build the offshore platform.

These mined manganese nodules will be pulled to Ange Island because, in addition to the rich molybdenum oxide, more than 50% of the structure was composed of iron oxide and manganese oxide. To treat these manganese nodules, Jiang Chen had injected two hundred million more USD in Future Mining and built a manganese nodule treatment plant, a molybdenum ore refinery, as well as a steel plant and an aluminum plant.

The manganese nodule treatment plant would first crush the ore, complete the initial sorting and output the manganese and rich molybdenum slag. The slag will be sent to the molybdenum refinery for secondary processing and the manufacturing of the molybdenum ore required for the virtual reality helmet.

The steel plant and aluminum plant were used to process the iron and aluminum ores purchased from BHP while also treating the residues of the manganese nodules.

The complete production line was expected to be completed in three months. By that time, the first step of Ange Island's industrial transformation would be complete. The rich mining resources would not only satisfy the demand on the island, but it could also be exported for profit!

Once he finished taking care of Future Mining, Jiang Chen began to work on the headquarter of Future Technology.

Coro Island was chosen as the location of the headquarter to ensure the safety of the quantum computer. Jiang Chen spent one hundred million USD to build the headquarter with no consideration of its cost to ensure that the building was strong enough.

Also, Jiang Chen decided to place the virtual reality helmet in the modern world. Since billions of virtual reality helmets would need to be produced, he would never be able to transport all of them back. Especially if he had to transport food, steel, and firearms back to the modern world.

Since he made the decision to produce in the modern world, then he must be cautious with security and the privacy of the production of these virtual reality helmets.

But to this point, Jiang Chen had already planned ahead. The platform he built near New Moon Island was perfect for producing the virtual reality helmet!

No place was more secure than right beside the military base. Under the surveillance of the wide range life signal detector, no agents would be able to escape the eyes of the workers in the radar station. Once they discovered any unregistered personnel, the drones would either capture or evict them. To the people resisting arrest, the drone would initiate its attack program to eliminate the threat.

Jiang Chen decided that the production of the virtual reality helmet should be done automatically. Other than the input of raw resources and the export of finished products requiring some human involvement, the production process that must be kept a secret has to be done in a "black box." Although the cost to the autonomous production line would be high, it was necessary for privacy purposes.

The design of the plant was based on Lu Huasheng's blueprint and built by modern world construction companies. There were a total of three buildings, and each occupied a corner of the triangle shaped platform. The cost totaled two million, which was negligible compared to the mega projects.

After a buying spree, Jiang Chen used 6.7 billion of the 30 billion loan. But he didn't feel pained at all because he knew that he would

make the money back in no time.

Putting spending money aside, Jiang Chen certainly made a lot of money too.

Tao Ming didn't disappoint him as he signed a total of four hundred thousand boxes from Future Biology. With an estimated profit of 500 USD per box, the total profit was 200 million USD.

On the other hand, the agent of Emma Watson quickly agreed to the sponsorship agreement and immediately arranged Emma to head to Coro Island for the filming of a commercial and advertisement design. The reason why they agreed without hesitation was partially due to the one million USD sponsorship and partially because of the opportunity to distribute advertisement through Future 1.0.

The insane number of users for Future 1.0 meant that not a lot of people would reject the opportunity to put their face on there.

Since the sales were successful, production could not stagger behind.

To increase the production of nutrient supply, Jiang Chen made a few trips to the apocalypse and brought back five newly built organic converters, as well as 10 tons of inducers to expand the plantation area of DH seaweed.

Therefore, the nutrient supply plant workers began a nightmare of overtime schedules. To finish the production task, the technicians responsible for inducing the DH seaweed even slept on the ground of the lab. The plantation boat on the sea worked rotating shifts. The workers from the three shifts poured the DH seaweed down, fertilizing the sea farm, and cutting the newly grown seaweed...

Of course, Jiang Chen was generous with the overtime bonuses. Compared to the 200 million, overtime bonuses were nothing.

To prevent the workers from working excessively, Jiang Chen

ordered Zhan Shujie to hire 60 additional workers to fill the void in labor. To Zhan Shujie and Tao Ming's outstanding contributions to Future Biology, Jiang Chen gave them a generous bonus.

A dividend of 1% per person as their annual bonus. While they were both ecstatic, they worked even harder.

Everyone could see the future of Future Biology. Even a dividend of 1%, with the current growth trend, they could at least take in more than ten million USD at the end of the year.

In his half month, Jiang Chen finally felt what it was like to be busy. He wanted to split himself in half so that one half could be on Ange Island, while the other stationed between New Moon and Coro.

But after a busy half month, everything was finally on the right track.

Just as Jiang Chen thought he could take some time off, a new problem quickly emerged.

Without including the independent Celestial, Future International's employee number in Xin reached 400. While it was a small number on paper, Xin had a total of 20,000, to begin with; the working population barely reached 10,000.

Fishing boats could rarely be spotted on Xin's sea territory, people were demanded everywhere. Basic infrastructure development boosted the local employment rate. What used to be an island with the highest unemployment rate, Ange Island, now lacked a workforce.

Especially once the tourism resources were completed, there would be a more significant gap in the labor force. Jiang Chen estimated that once the projects are completed, his employees would at least increase by 2000, and at least create an additional 5000 positions in supporting industries!

Xin didn't have that many people looking for work.

Therefore, Jiang Chen set his eyes on a superpower currently experiencing an immigration wave.

But he was not looking at the rich who did everything they could to leave, but the labor force with an academic background higher than high school.

Chapter 405: Immigration Wave

No.1 Wanghai High School.

A young-looking math teacher with glasses was packing away his stuff in the office. Three days ago, he handed in his resignation letter. Today, the principal finally agreed.

"Guangpin, you're really not going to work here anymore?" The director stood beside him as he said reluctantly.

Li Guangpin was a teacher they hired three years ago. Although he was just an undergraduate student at that time, he demonstrated excellent teaching ability. With the philosophy that math can be fun, he employed a humorous but rigorous teaching style. Not only did he manage to increase a class with mediocre math scores to the best class today, but he also gained the respect and love of all the students in the class.

This type of teacher, not a single person would be willing to let him go. And because of that, the principal dragged out his resignation for three days before seeing that he had made up his mind and finally signed the letter without any other choice.

"Director Wang, you don't need to try and convince me anymore." Li Guangpin smiled and stuffed a pen a student gifted him into his bag.

Director Wang let out a sigh. "Okay, I'll stop trying to convince you."

Perhaps upset by the fact that a school executive personally tried to persuade him, a teacher correcting homework in a low voice said bitterly.

"Private high schools have better benefits, how could the small No.1 High School hold your glorious presence."

The voice was not too high, but not too low.

Director Wang's expression didn't look good, but he didn't say anything as he just pretended he didn't hear anything. Private schools acquiring talents from public schools had been giving the school executives headaches, but they could do nothing about it. Since "People walked up, water flowed down," talent could not just be retained by culture. Private school's salary and bonus structure are much better than public schools. It may be more tiring but was undoubtedly more attractive to young teachers with ambition and ability.

When he heard his coworker's words, Li Guangpin paused for a second, but he didn't mind and only smiled.

Although Wu Jiefeng had some conflicts with him in terms of awards, since they were no longer people from the same world, he didn't let it bother him.

"I'm not going to a private school, I'm going to teach overseas."

"Overseas?" Director Wang was shocked.

"Mhmm, a few high schools in Xin posted positions, and I happened to pass the interview. They wanted me to come as soon as possible." Although he used a casual voice, from the smile on his face, however, he was proud.

When they heard Li Guangpin's words, the teachers who were working on their own things began to chat amongst themselves.

"I saw the posting too. It is through a video conference with a salary of 4000 USD a month!" A male teacher whispered.

"Really?" A female teacher said, shocked.

4000 USD was 24000 RMB in salary, and it was just a starting level salary! To the average teacher at a public school, it was an astronomical number!

"It shouldn't be fake, Xin government is doing the hiring. They wanted to solve the lack of talent in their schools and hospitals, so they are offering a competitive package to oversea teachers and

doctors. The news even went on Future 1.0's headline.

"Xin is this rich? Weren't they in a war before?" A Han teacher was skeptical.

"That was half a year ago. With the new government, they introduced a series of stimulating economic measures. They want to build Pannu Islands into the Hawaii of the west Pacific!" A slim male teacher said very vocally.

He was the type that enjoyed reading the news. Seeing how uninformed his coworkers were, he began to sell what he knew.

"Also, Xin introduced a labor immigration policy. Anyone with a work visa could apply for Xin nationality once they have worked two full years in Xin."

"Old Li, once you get the green card, when we go visit you, you can't pretend not to know us." A teacher that had a good relationship with Li Guangpin joked.

"Of course. Haha, once I settle down, I will invite you all over."

Li Guangpin said goodbye to his colleagues.

Only one person in the entire office was gloomy; head uncomfortably buried, and eyes filled with jealousy. Wu Jiefeng would not tell other people that he saw the job and applied. But unfortunately, he was eliminated in the first round.

...

Similar scenes happened all over Xin.

It all originated from an immigration promotion video on Youtube. The entire video had three central ideas. The place was stunning, filled with work opportunities, and just waiting for you to go!

Then, the video was reposted by Future 1.0 news channel and hence spread across the country. This began a frenzied amount of reposting and comments. Compared with the lack of response in

UA and Europe, the citizens of Hua had a favorable impression of Xin.

As to why?

It was because of the cultural similarity.

The only other country in the world that used Han as its official language. The Han society obviously felt close to Xin. People may fear the culture difference from immigrating to the UA or Europe, but it would not happen in Xin.

Especially when the place was filled with job opportunities, beautiful sceneries, a loose political structure, the desire to immigrant was even stronger. Another important thing was, the cost to immigrate to Xin was low.

Without the need for a lot of money, people could immigrate without money!

Two types of immigration policy were open; investing immigration or labor immigration.

Investing immigration had a policy of possessing property over one million or providing at least ten work positions in Xin. They would only need to submit proof to the Bureau of Immigration before they could directly obtain Xin nationality.

The labor immigration was even more accessible. Xin needed a tremendous workforce with an education background greater than high school. Any of the foreigners with a proof of work could immediately obtain a work visa. As long as they work over two years in Xin, they would obtain permanent resident status while enjoying the same social benefits as citizens. Work for five years, and they could obtain Xin nationality.

For companies looking to hire enough people, Xin even pushed a special policy. Any of the companies requiring labor could post its hiring needs on Xin's minister of foreign affair website to ease the process.

In the country where everything was in its infancy, anyone could find a position that belonged to them. Han's curiosity and longing for Xin were just like European's longing for America in the 18th century.

The day the immigration policy was made available, Xin's embassies received a total of 4410 immigration applicants with two-thirds coming from Hua. It wouldn't take long before the lack of a labor force that's disturbing the growth of Xin would be solved by the gradually heated immigration wave!

Chapter 406: The Relaxing Time on the Beach

It has been over half a month since Xia Shiyu arrived at Coro Island. She had spent a relaxing time there, but it made life tough on Jiang Chen. Because the two girls slept together, Jiang Chen basically had no intimate time with Ayesha.

The only thing that made it worthwhile was that Ayesha and Xian Shiyu's relationship got a lot closer. Perhaps because they slept on the same bed, the faint hostility Xia Shiyu had toward Ayesha faded after a half month of meshing together.

All in all, the three people lived harmoniously together. Xia Shiyu spent the day working at home, Jiang Chen stayed out among islands, and Ayesha would sometimes drive for Jiang Chen, occasionally visit Jiang Chen's parents and do the chores in the mansion from time to time.

The busiest half month passed by. Jiang Chen and Xia Shiyu both had free time. To treat himself for his hard work, Jiang Chen proposed a vacation on his private island.

To Jiang Chen's proposal, Xia Shiyu only hesitated for a moment before she agreed. After such high-stress work, the rare trip to the beautiful southern island would be a waste if not enjoyed now. Since she lived most of her life among the noise of the city, the proposal was indeed attractive to her.

As to Ayesha, she never had any opinions on Jiang Chen's proposals. She was timider than a small lamb.

Therefore, the two days' vacation had been agreed on.

...

Other than the nine islands, hundreds of deserted islands also spanned across Pannu Islands. Some of them looked only as big as a house with a single wave capable of flooding the entire island.

Some of them were as big as New Moon Island, only uninhabited due to the lack of access to fresh water.

This inhabited island was 170 nautical miles to the east of Coro Island, one of the islands was sold to Jiang Chen from Xin government. The island was one square kilometer big with dense vegetation in the middle of the island and was surrounded by beaches on all sides. Other than the wooden cabin on the beach, there was no other facility on the island.

Jiang Chen intended to retain the original scenery of the island.

"You certainly know how to enjoy life," Xia Shiyu exclaimed.

She lied soothingly on the recliner. Staring at the waves mixed with white bubbles and feeling the saline sea wind that swayed her hairs, she sucked on the cold orange juice. It was like living in heaven.

Xia Shiyu felt all her weariness leave her body. Her mood couldn't have been better.

"I'll take that as a compliment. But to be honest, this is my first time on the island too," leaning on the chair with his arms under his head, Jiang Chen said sluggishly.

"Oh really?" Xia Shiyu turned her head.

The sea blue two-piece swimsuit fitted perfectly on her figure of perfection. Although she didn't intentionally show off her body, her gorgeous face was revealed without anything obstructing it. The water droplets left on her body after playing among the waves sparkled on her smooth leg, just like a lotus after the morning dew.

"What are you looking at." Sensing Jiang Chen's gaze, Xia Shiyu felt her face burn. She put on a straight face and said with some harshness to hide the panic in her heart.

Under the sunlight that made people lazy, Jiang Chen answered without processing it in his head.

"A hot girl."

"..." Xia Shiyu bit her lower lip and turned around to hide her burning red face.

Looking at the door, Ayesha had a smile on her face.

Their progress was far better than she had expected...

The sun began to slide down the east coast. Under the ray of the dusk, Jiang Chen began to set up the BBQ on the beach, took out the ingredients and beer that was chilled on the boat, and began to prepare for a bonfire party.

As he chugged the cold beer while biting on the crispy and golden skewers, Jiang Chen was thrilled by the experience. On the contrary, Xia Shiyu was more reserved as she ate the skewers bite by bite, enjoying the delicacy.

As to Ayesha, compared to eating, she seemed to enjoy being eaten... Mhmm, that sounded weird. Correction, she enjoyed watching the happiness that flowed out of Jiang Chen and his praises when he ate her work.

After a nice dinner, they cleaned up the garbage, and the three fooled around on the beach for a while before they lied back down.

Peace returned to the beach.

As Jiang Chen stared at the sun slowly descending, Jiang Chen abruptly asked.

"Are you leaving the day after tomorrow?"

Xia Shiyu was silent and then nodded.

"Mhmm, I have been away for a while, I have to be there for a lot of things."

"It's been hard on you." Jiang Chen sighed.

"Not at all." Xia Shiyu shook her head and watched the same dusk. "Although tiring, not hard."

To be able to prove her worth was something she dreamed of doing, why would she think it is hard? Or rather, it was an exhilarating experience to be able to witness the growth of an internet empire in her own hands.

The dusk glided a golden edge on her face. The faint smile on her face made Jiang Chen hold his breath.

It was not her stunning beauty, but something even brighter.

But then, Ayesha suddenly stood in front of Jiang Chen and put him behind her.

"What's going on?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Helicopter.' Ayesha's eyes narrowed as she gazed at the sky. Her eyes became alert and flickered with cautiousness.

Following Ayesha's sight, he also discovered the black dot that surfaced in the distance.

Not long after, the edges of the helicopter become more and more clear.

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows at the miniature helicopter. He didn't remember buying this model. He became more alert and prepared to take out his weapons from the storage dimension.

But when he saw the person at the side hatch, his loosened up, sighed, and sat back down.

"By the looks of it, the higher being doesn't want me to have a good vacation."

As he muttered, he drank the last drops of his orange juice.

...

Frankberg, the library of the University of Ber.

The dusk had long been gone, but the library was still bright from inside out.

A teen with a relatively attractive face sat at the corner of the

library and concentrated on the laptop in front of him with his fingers typing furiously on the keyboard. Other than the laptop computer, a couple of German computer textbooks laid on his table along with a cup of black coffee.

When he pressed the last button, Xie Lei let out some of the air in his chest and sunk into the chair.

It has been half a month. The opponent hid carefully, and their skills were impressive, but they finally exposed some information. After breaking through a series of firewalls, Xie Lei finally managed to capture the real IP masked behind layers of fake IPs.

The IP was located in Poland.

After Xie Lei captured the real IP, he didn't alert the opponent. Instead, he used the opportunity when the opponent relayed information back to send the Trojan program to their computer. The Trojan program would not do any harm to the computer, it would only package some of the documents in the computer discreetly and discreetly transfer the information back to his computer.

Watching the progress bar on the screen, an egotistical look appeared on his face.

"Let me see who you are."

As Xie Lei muttered, he reached for the coffee on the table.

But when his finger touched the cup, a couldn't be helped expression surfaced.

The coffee was cold.

He looked up at the clock on the wall, he mumbled.

"Already 8?"

He'll just do the rest at home...

He was a bit hungry. Seeing that the progress bar was complete, he stood up, put the laptop on his back, and headed out.

But just when Xie Lei went downstairs, he caught a glimpse of two black vehicles parked outside.

Four men in black suits and shades walked out and headed to the front door of the library.

"Did the library do some donation program again? But it's already so late." Xie Lei mumbled to himself and didn't mind these people.

When he passed by the men in black, however, he felt a chill run down his spine.

It was as if a venomous snake was staring at him.

Fortunately, the feeling faded away in a glimpse.

Perhaps because he looked too young, the sight of the men in black stopped for a second before they left as they began to scan in the library.

But just in that one glimpse, Xie Lei felt his entire back was drenched in cold sweat.

[Dammit, what kind of people did that guy mess with?]

Xie Lei left the library and cursed in his mind. Instincts told him that the men in black were definitely not friendly individuals. They were probably looking for him!

IP location was reversibly trackable, and he didn't have a clue! With how fast they responded, they had been monitoring him for a while.

If he stayed in the library, the consequence would be unimaginable.

Also, he was lucky that he used the library's wifi...

Chapter 407: You are being Monitored

The helicopter with a name he didn't know hovered above the beach. A rope was thrown down. A hot blonde lady in a white tank top and short shorts agilely hopped down.

Without any equipment, only Russians could do such risky things.

Natasha.

Since the last time Jiang Chen saw her at the hotel in Xiangjiang, he hasn't seen her for half a year.

When both of her feet touched the ground, she signaled the helicopter pilot before walking to Jiang Chen.

The helicopter turned around and Jiang Chen focused on the Russian girl walking in his direction.

Natasha stood in front of Jiang Chen and ignored Ayesha's cold expression as she raised her chin.

"You still owe me a shot of Vodka."

"When did the audacious Russian get so pesky?" Jiang Chen said as he sat up from the recliner.

"Sniff-, I smell BBQ and beer. Unfortunately, looks like I'm late to the party... Don't look at me like that; I'm not hostile." With Ayesha's cautious look, Natasha put up both of her hands, but her tone was flirtatious.

"Who is she?" Xia Shiyu frowned and whispered to Jiang Chen.

"A KGB agent, or should I call them the Russian Federation Security Bureau? Anyways, both are not wrong," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

When Xia Shiyu heard the word agent, she instinctively felt fear since she was captured by the CIB before. She could still not let go of the fearful memory. But when she saw Ayesha, her tense heart

became calm again.

To the anxiousness on the beautiful Han girl's face, Natasha only scanned it before moving away.

Then, she stared straight at Jiang Chen and smiled.

"We haven't seen each other for a while, why such a cold expression, are Han men this heartless?"

Jiang Chen glared at her, "Your Han is improving, but I have to say, your choice of words could be better."

The tip of Natasha's mouth curled up as he walked up to him. But Ayesha didn't have any intention of moving away as she just stood there.

Although the small B was not convincing enough for the "massiveness," the emotionless expression added another vibe no less than Natasha's.

'Hello, I'm a security personnel responsible for the safety of the embassy, are you trying to start a diplomatic conflict?"

Ayesha's expression didn't make Natasha unhappy at all. She pointed at her gun multiple times, now that she finally was without a gun. The Russian girl grinned and looked down at her with aggressiveness.

"Ayesha." Jiang Chen coughed.

When Ayesha heard Jiang Chen's reminder, although she still didn't want to back down, she stood silently to the side.

With a pause, Jiang Chen asked Natasha, "The security personnel of the embassy? Could you explain?"

"Xin and Russia officially established a diplomatic relationship. I'm here along with the Russian ambassador. I got off the plane at noon. When I heard you were here, I immediately came with the helicopter." Natasha walked beside the recliner and sat beside Jiang Chen's leg.

Xia Shiyu's eyebrows jumped at the scene as she had a bad feeling. Ayesha only silently stared at the back of her head. Although she didn't mind how many women her husband had, to the woman who clearly had other intentions, she didn't want them to get close at all.

"Does KGB know that I'm the shareholder of Celestial Trade?" Jiang Chen asked while he discreetly moved his leg away to avoid the flirtatious curve.

[Sending out a KGB agent as the bodyguard for diplomats, the Russians are quite interesting.]

"Is this a secret? You didn't intentionally hide it." Natasha grinned.

"Then your intention is?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"Would you believe I'm here just to visit you?" Natasha's said while raising the massiveness that would even make Liu Yao envious.

[36D, 36E? It looks like I underestimated her before.] Jiang Chen said shockingly in his mind.

It was not that the massiveness did not tempt him, but he knew better than to touch the rose with thorns. Perhaps after they hooked up, she would have sold him already.

"Our diplomat discussed an arms sale with president Zhang, but he told us to discuss it with you." Natasha leaned on the side of the chair as her body moved towards Jiang Chen.

The deep trenches...

"Arms? If it is AK or something like that, then it's okay," Jiang Chen gulped while he said courteously.

"Tank, fighter jet, artillery, we sell everything." Natasha glanced at Jiang Chen's beach shorts as she the tip of her mouth dubiously curved up.

The eyes seemed to be saying, [You are saying no, but your body is more honest.]

Jiang Chen ignored the teasing look as he rebuked, "You sell everything? Do you sell people?"

Natasha was clearly not agitated by Jiang Chen's words. Instead, she flirted back, "If you want, we can have a deep discussion about it."

"Ahem." Xia Shiyu coughed loudly.

Natasha turned around as she seemed to have understood something, she looked dubiously at Jiang Chen.

"You certainly have the joy than most men desire."

"Don't say random stuff." Jiang Chen was out of sorts.

Natasha then abruptly said, "Also, just a reminder, you are being monitored."

'Monitored? By who?' Jiang Chen paused, suddenly alerted.

Natasha stood up.

"Are you not going to welcome me to your party?"

...

Jiang Chen didn't know what Natasha had planned, but he agreed to her staying in the wooden beach cabin. While the cabin looked primal from the outside, all the necessary amenities were available.

Guest room, bathroom, even a spa; a range of equipment only available in five-star hotels.

But the most fun thing on the island was the hot spring. As long as a hole was dug on the beach, once a wave passed through, a hot spring mixed with sand would form. It looked muddy, but it was filled with unpolluted natural minerals. Great for the skin.

The hot spring on the beach was across from the cabin and

because Xia Shiyu wanted to try it, Ayesha accompanied her. Not confident with leaving Natasha with Jiang Chen, the two girls "kidnapped" her along. Jiang Chen wanted to go too, but they had to be naked. With how stern Xia Shiyu's face was, Jiang Chen stayed in the cabin.

Just as Jiang Chen was in the spa ready to drift off to sleep, the phone on the table began to ring.

He picked up the phone. It was an international number.

Caller: Xie Lei.

"Hello?"

"I confirmed the opponent's identity," Xie Lei said in short breaths.

"Are you okay?" Jiang Chen frowned.

"I'm fine, but they almost saw my face." Xie Lei looked back on the street, still feeling anxious.

He was in a public phone booth and cautiously scanning the street.

"Keep it simple," Jiang Chen said.

Xie Lei took a deep breath as he said briskly, 'I obtained a file named V from their database, but the file inside was encrypted, and the encryption method was the most outdated one, I could not crack it without the password. Also, the opponent detected my presence and almost just blocked me in the library.'

"Where is the file?"

Xie Lei adjusted his breathing, "I sent it to a safe email at the net café, and I'll tell you the account and password now."

"Go ahead."

Jiang Chen pressed a few buttons on the phone and opened the notepad function.

Once Xie Lei finished the last letter, Jiang Chen saved the information.

"Be safe."

"Mhmm." Xie Lei nodded.

"If it is not safe, just stop. Your sister is there after all."

He knew how restrained it felt when his family was being threatened.

"Thank you!" Xie Lei said sincerely.

His sister was his concern. He at least received three months of military training in Nigeria and could easily run when discovered, but it would be a different scenario if he had to bring his hospitalized sister along.

The game of cat and mouse should end soon.

Chapter 408: Arms Sale and Conditions

When the three ladies returned, it was almost nine o'clock.

The pursuit of beauty was a natural tendency for women. When they found out that the hot springs could slim down their figures in addition to whitening and contracting their pores, they all agreed unanimously to stay there a bit longer, so it was late when they got back.

After they dragged their weary bodies back to the beach cabin, all three dived into the bathroom to wash off the sand and seawater from their bodies and change into new clothes. Then Natasha, still unsatisfied, proposed another BBQ on the beach.

Xia Shiyu and Ayesha rejected the idea at first because it was easy to gain weight from eating at night, but Natasha didn't care for their opinions. Seeing as no one was going to accompany her, she set up everything by herself in front of the hut and took out food from the fridge as if it was her house.

In comparison to Ayesha and Xia Shiyu who were both full, she didn't eaten dinner yet.

Because Xia Shiyu couldn't resist the temptation of BBQ meat, she forced herself to sleep. On the other hand, Ayesha had mental fortitude and ignored the smells carried by the wind. But Jiang Chen's resistance was much weaker as his eyes lit up when he smelled the meat.

Because he didn't need to worry about his weight with his body superior to that of Superman's, it wouldn't be a problem even if he ate a cow.

"Sigh, it's so nice to be rich; being an agent means you have to worry about being shot every day." Natasha chewed on the BBQ while chugging down a cold beer as she swung around her wet blonde hair.

"You make it sound like it's so easy to be one." Jiang Chen made a skewer disappear as he grinned.

Russian BBQ was like Turkey's roast meat, but it was his first time seeing the meat mixed with orange juice and red wine. Mixed with garlic, even if the meat was relatively big, it was delicious nonetheless.

"I just have to marry rich." Natasha's lips raised as she put her bottle to the side.

Jiang Chen glanced at her flat but athletic abs; he didn't know where all the food she ate went.

"Then that wealthy man's life would be miserable; his wife is a KGB agent, so he must prevent himself from doing anything naughty outside."

"Is that so? To men with ability, I don't mind how many women he has." Natasha glanced at Jiang Chen's beach shorts and said aggressively, "But without ability, it's better not to bring trouble on oneself."

[Fu*k, why don't you try to see if I have the ability or not, I'll make you... Mhmm, I can't fall for her tricks.]

Jiang Chen's arousal was quickly suppressed.

He paused for a moment before changing the topic.

"Earlier, you said I'm being monitored."

"That's right, being monitored by me." Natasha's chuckled.

"Be serious." He glared at her.

"Let's first talk about the arms sale." Natasha also diverted the topic.

"Is this an added condition?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

"Not exactly, but since you want us to share our intelligence with you, at least convince us that we're standing on the same frontier

together." Natasha leaned on a wooden post while she stretched her legs out sluggishly.

"Can't I stay neutral?' Jiang Chen ignored her seductive position and smiled.

Natasha tossed her hair behind her back as she audaciously burped, then she looked mockingly at Jiang Chen. "Neutrality is the dumbest choice, especially when you have NATO allies surrounding you."

"You do make a good point." He laughed. "Then should I accept the friendly gestures from the UA or stand with you? You guys have been dragged into a mud pit in Eastern Europe and aren't in the best state due to the problems in Syria."

The meaning was obvious: [You guys can't even hold your own - what makes you attractive enough for me to stand with you?]

"You won't join the UA as long as you're not dumb." Natasha shook her head.

"Oh? Explain."

"Country F is an ally of UA, but in establishing a strategic balance in the Asia-Pacific, did F manage to gain a lot out of it?" Natasha said with a grin.

"So, we choose not to stand with anyone," Jiang Chen said dubiously.

"You're like a beautiful girl with an ambiguous attitude towards your pursuers. But have you considered that since you're a needle stuck in the second island chain to block China, the UA will keep compromising with you? There are two methods to conquer a woman; one is to use flattering words, the other is to use force." Natasha gave a derogatory but easy-to-understand analogy.

"Is that so?" Jiang Chen scoffed.

[Funny, I haven't even taken out your nuclear weapons yet! If it

wasn't for Xin being in a state of economic development to avoid unnecessary international problems, Xin could be a part of the nuclear club right now. It's a bit too early, but once I establish a few nuclear silos in the Pacific, even the five thugs will have to be afraid.]

Natasha noticed that Jiang Chen was silent. Thinking that he didn't believe her, she laughed, "Don't forget what happened in Kane."

"What happened?"

"If the UA is willing, they only need one billion USD to form a 'civilian force' equipped with tanks and artillery in Xin." Natasha wolfed down another skewer.

To Natasha's words, Jiang Chen only laughed.

"I will consider your arms sale, but our stance to maintain neutrality internationally will not change. Arms sales in Hua have a much lower barrier compared to you guys. If you insist on adding conditions then I hope we can form a partnership in other areas instead."

[Whatever, it's not like you're the only store. Only Iran and India are willing to do arms business with Russia. Who's more eager to expand into the international arms market? Natural gas and crude oil from Eastern Europe are no longer highly sought after. Without arms sales, what do you have to feed the almost bankrupt arms plants?]

Natasha's eyebrows raised as she said expressionlessly.

"If you purchase Han firearms, the UA will be tense."

This was indeed true - compared to Russia who had nothing to do with South Asian affairs, an arms sale from Hua would have a higher chance of crossing UA boundaries. But Natasha clearly ignored a key point:

"We are a private company; we don't represent the country of

Xin."

This was a shameless excuse.

The mercenary Xin hired had nothing to do with the Xin government. Although everyone knew that Celestial was Xin's unofficial army, the army was not controlled by the government after all.

After a long silence, Natasha spoke with her eyes narrowed. "You are devious."

"Thank you for your compliment. If you are interested in doing business without conditions, can you first tell me how you are monitoring me?"

Natasha spoke a name which made Jiang Chen surprised.

"Willie society."

"Willie society?" With shock in Jiang Chen's eyes, he frowned. "Aren't they only active in Eastern Europe?"

"Who told you they're only active in Eastern Europe?" Natasha continued, "Their eyes are all over Europe. We call them Neo-Nazis; NATO refers to them as reformed 'good friends.'" What's important is not how they made history but the role they play now."

"What role do they play now?"

"The disruptor of Eastern Europe," Natasha said emotionlessly. "NATO provides them with funding, intelligence support, and even weapons, attempting to use these Nazis to prevent us from unifying our people-"

"But what does it have to do with me?" Jiang Chen frowned.

South Asia and Eastern Europe were two completely distinct places.

"That's what we're curious about too." Natasha turned to look at Jiang Chen. "What does it have to do with you?"

Jiang Chen paused then asked:

"Do you not know either? I thought you could give me answers."

"KGB's influence is nowhere near as strong as before." Natasha sighed. "Willie society surfaced in the Gorbachev era. During that time, we could no longer even look after ourselves; there was too much bloodshed in our domestic conflicts... For so many years, our agents only managed to obtain one keyword."

"What keyword?" Watching the waves, Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly.

"The Golden Apple."

Jiang Chen's pupils instantly contracted.

Chapter 409: It was not a Secret after all.

[The Golden Apple? The fu*king Golden Apple again.]

Two clues intermingled in his head.

Based on the Golden Apple symbol on Carmen's ring, Rothschild may have some connection to the Golden Apple.

Based on Natasha's words, Willie society was also connected to the Golden Apple.

Then Rothschild must be connected to the Willie society somehow!

[Allies?]

Jiang Chen frowned but immediately rejected the thought.

The Rothschild family was Jewish and even supported the founding of Israel. Considering what Natasha said, the Willie society consisted of Neo-Nazis. Therefore, the two groups had to be in an eternal rivalry.

[So, are they competitors then?]

Jiang Chen closed his eyes; his deductive skills were only mediocre at best. Without any more clues, this was the only conclusion he arrived at.

Natasha definitely didn't provide him with all the information. Jiang Chen wasn't even sure how much they know about the Golden Apple.

"Have you heard of the Golden Apple?" Natasha asked.

"The apple that Eve and Adam ate?" Jiang Chen disguised the shock in his mind and spoke with a smile.

He wouldn't tell Natasha what the Golden Apple actually was, just like how she must've held back some information from him. It was better to play the fool now; his instincts told him that a lot of

people were searching for the Apple.

It was obvious as to why everyone wanted to control the mystery behind the Nazi's technology.

Natasha's question may have been a test to begin with.

Although Jiang Chen really wanted to explain to her that the knock-off Golden Apple was at best a one-way radio that received certain information based on a specific time frame but didn't possess the ability to communicate with the future... No one would accept his explanation anyways.

"... You need to catch up on your history; the Golden Apple originated from Greek Mythology, not the <Bible>." Natasha glared at him and took a sip of beer.

"Is that so? I will remember your words. It's getting late, time to sleep." Jiang Chen got up and headed inside.

"Hello? About the arms - are you going to buy them or not?" Natasha turned her head and shouted at him with her mouth reeking of alcohol.

"Submarines and vessels – I'll only buy these two, nothing else."

Jiang Chen closed the door.

...

[Submarines and vessels, those are going to be hard to secure...]
Natasha frowned.

Although they were included as part of the arms sales project, they were usually only sold to their allies.

[It was better to contact the ministry of national defense...]

Natasha took out her satellite phone.

What she didn't know was that Ayesha, in the next room, was monitoring her calls under Jiang Chen's instructions.

...

Jiang Chen had a great sleep that night.

What woke him up from his dream was the sound of the tide shuffling and the tickling of his ear.

He opened his eyes and saw a pair of sapphire-like pupils.

It was Ayesha.

She was kneeling beside the bed, watching him quietly.

"Are you a cat?" Jiang Chen caressed her face with a smile.

It was rumored that cats would observe their owners while they slept. Although he didn't know if the urban legend was true or not, Jiang Chen thought Ayesha gazing at him was cute.

Ayesha closed her eyes as she leaned her head against Jiang Chen's warm head and gently asked:

"Should we go see the sunrise first or eat breakfast?"

"Let's see the sunrise first," Jiang Chen said then sat up on the bed.

After a few routine stretching exercises, he walked outside with Ayesha.

When he was outside, he was surprised to find that Natasha was already up. And by the looks of it, she already took a morning jog.

"I'm really curious – considering how sluggish your routine is, could you still beat me now?" Looking at Jiang Chen with eyes still half-closed, Natasha joked.

[Funny, do I need to exercise to beat you?]

Jiang Chen ignored Natasha and walked out on the beat, took a breath of fresh air, faced the turbulent waves and shouted.

"Ahhhh-!"

This loud roar felt so delightful. With Natasha rolling her eyes, Jiang Chen laughed presumptuously then took Ayesha to go wake Xia Shiyu up.

The four of them then headed to the east beach to watch the sunrise and returned to the cabin for breakfast.

Right now, the satellite TV in the living room was playing CNN's morning news.

The news was reporting on the open trial records of the supreme court of Xin regarding the captured country F soldiers. 41 F soldiers who disguised as pirates and trespassed on another country's territory shocked the world; it made the world understand how shameless a country could be. The 59 casualties were unfortunate but deserved. Xin's government was willing to return the soldiers' bodies back; they would mockingly place country F's flag on the 59 caskets.

The Han media had the biggest reaction and the most unified response. They stood firmly with Xin and criticized F's hideous actions, and they also stated that F's actions in the south sea were unreasonable.

Because CNN had an ideology in line with the Liberal party, while they questioned some of the actions of Xin, they mostly mocked F's unlawful "government-organized pirates."

Aquino called for two press conferences that day - one international while the other would target the domestic population in an attempt to change F's image, but it was futile.

"I can't believe your security is actually pretty good. I remember F used to conduct joint military exercises with the UA before." Natasha stuffed some buttered toast into her mouth while she chatted casually.

"So what? My soldiers are superior to them," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

[It's because of technology.]

M4A1's bullets couldn't penetrate the polyethylene blast board of the kinetic skeleton, but the Reaper assault rifle could penetrate

most of the walls they used as cover.

"No wonder you just need submarines and vessels." Natasha grinned before she gobbled down the last piece of toast.

"So? What's your verdict?" Jiang Chen asked.

"I'm not the one calling the shots. I can only relay information, so I passed your request to the Kremlin." Natasha crossed her arms and leaned into her chair.

[Is that so?]

The tips of Jiang Chen's mouth imperceptibly curled up.

He listened to her phone call with the Kremlin last night. Her superiors' orders for her were to try to persuade him, even if she had to sacrifice her body to better understand his connection with the Golden Apple.

Therefore, the Russians obviously understood the "use" of the Golden Apple.

Since Willie society was investigating him, the KGB became interested in him as well – this was the only explanation.

Also, Jiang Chen heard from yesterday's conversation that the Kremlin already agreed on the arms sale because they really needed money. And Jiang Chen was a person with money who wasn't "picky" and willing to pay for their inactive vessels.

They were right - Jiang Chen really didn't care about the outdated technology their vessels and submarines contained since he could make modifications. For example, he could replace the engine, missiles, anti-radar equipment, and add life-detection devices.

"I'm really curious if Xin knows that the head of security for Russian diplomats is a KGB agent. What kind of expression would president Zhang have?" Jiang Chen said with a joking voice.

"It would depend on what expression you want him to have,

right?" Natasha glared at Jiang Chen as she grinned back.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes.

It wasn't a secret after all.

Chapter 410: Do you sell Nuclear Submarines?

Just like yesterday, the second day of their vacation was still spent on leisure. But because of the arrival of the unexpected visitor Natasha, the four of them could now do some fun activities.

Such as beach volleyball which could make people's face turn red and heart pump faster.

Ayesha and Xia Shiyu were okay - one of them hadn't completely matured yet while the other possessed the slim figure unique to Asians. Aside from her beauty, there was nothing that could make him "nosebleed."

But Natasha was different.

Jiang Chen felt his nose becoming warm because of the two balls jiggling from her jumps.

The only person who could compare to her would probably be Liu Yao. Speaking of her, he hadn't seen her for a while. Although they had been in contact through WeChat, Jiang Chen still missed her.

In the evening, they still enjoyed delicious BBQ. Natasha's Russian style BBQ and Ayesha's Chinese style BBQ all had their bright spots. The two seemed to be in a silent competition in the field of BBQ.

It was a fantastic experience for Jiang Chen because he was the judge, so his stomach was treated well.

After going through a long day, the gang all felt tired, and even the resilient Ayesha was tired as well. But since they were leaving tomorrow, the girls still dragged their weary bodies and spent two more hours in the beach hot spring.

Jiang Chen sensed that the three seemed to be getting along

better. Even Ayesha showed less hostility when she looked at Natasha...

As long as Natasha maintained a "safe distance" with Jiang Chen.

The morning of the third day.

Jiang Chen did some simple cleaning before he took the three women onto a boat. The garbage left on the island would be cleaned up by servants; they didn't need to worry about it.

The boat docked at a private port on the south coast of Coro Island because Xia Shiyu needed to catch a flight at 3 in the afternoon. The three of them still needed to return to the mansion to pack up, so Natasha said goodbye to them. Before she left, she thanked Jiang Chen for hosting her and said she would visit often.

After blowing a kiss to Jiang Chen under two pairs of eyes filled with hostility, she turned around before quickly disappearing at the end of the street.

After spending half a month together, Jiang Chen and Ayesha were accustomed to Xia Shiyu's presence. The idea of returning to a private life with Ayesha made Jiang Chen feel joyful and melancholic at the same time.

Was this what it meant to: "Eat the food in the bowl while looking at the food in the pot?" Sometimes Jiang Chen felt he was a terrible person... Mm, that might be too harsh; maybe he was just honest about his own desires?

All in all, when he helped Xia Shiyu pack her things, he felt dismayed.

At the airport terminal.

Ayesha and Jiang Chen both sent her off at the airport.

"When I head back, I'll start the selection process of internal test users as soon as possible and initiate the marketing campaign preparing for the release of the game. I'll have to count on you for

establishing the server and preparing accommodations for the internal test users." Before she boarded, Xia Shiyu reminded Jiang Chen of this multiple times.

Because of issues with privacy, before the game helmet could be released officially, internal tests had to be conducted on Pannu Island. It was all part of their plan which could be immediately executed once Xia Shiyu returned to Xiangjiang.

"Don't worry, leave it to me." Jiang Chen smiled confidently.

"Mhm."

Xia Shiyu suddenly lowered her head.

Just as Jiang Chen was puzzled by this sudden change, Xia Shiyu dropped her luggage, walked up two steps and pecked him on the cheek.

"Thank you."

Just as Jiang Chen was still processing what happened, Xia Shiyu stiffly turned around, took her luggage, and walked away briskly.

He touched his cheek. A wetness still lingered on that spot.

"You got kissed." Ayesha, standing beside Jiang Chen, had a smile on her face as she spoke in a low voice.

"Mhm, I got kissed."

Jiang Chen watched Xia Shiyu's back and shook his head as he watched the plane take off.

...

When they left the gate, they walked to their car at the airport entrance.

Ayesha helped Jiang Chen open the car door then sat in the driver seat.

"Let's head home?"

"Mhm." Sinking into his soft seat, Jiang Chen closed his eyes.

With his free time, he wanted to set a plan to prioritize the next steps.

But then a call came through.

Jiang Chen took out his phone and when he saw the name, he laughed and picked up.

"Hello?" Jiang Chen said with a grin.

He already knew who it was.

"It's me, the Kremlin agreed," Natasha said concisely.

[Nice acting, they already agreed last night.] Jiang Chen mocked her in his mind.

"Do you sell nuclear submarines?" Jiang Chen said jokingly.

"Don't even think about it." She rejected it without hesitation.

[Fu*k, you're so heartless in your rejection. I didn't even want it.]

Jiang Chen thought in his mind.

[Once I replace the engine with a nuclear fusion engine, who would want your nuclear fission engine?]

[Weak!]

Jiang Chen had a rough idea of what arms he wanted to buy already. He didn't care about the weapons and equipment on board since they would all have to be modified and replaced anyway, so he chose a type that was relatively agile and easily hidden.

"'Guardian' class frigate, Type-636 'Kilo' class submarine," Jiang Chen requested.

"Kilo" class was a submarine with the highest displacement that Russia exported. It was renowned for its strong firepower and quietness. Type-636 was its improved modern version, known as the "Song of Warsaw." It was considered the leader in diesel power submarines, one of the quietest diesel submarines in the world.

And the "Guardian" class frigate was one of the best multipurpose

frigates Russia possessed. It was equipped with a helicopter pad. Its compact weapon configuration and agile mobility was the reason why Jiang Chen choose it. The 100 mm A-190 cannon in the front could easily be replaced with a Type-50 electromagnetic pulse cannon.

After a brief silence, the noise of paper flipping was heard through the phone.

"'Guardian' class frigate, 130 million USD. Type 636 'Kilo' class submarine, 250 million USD," Natasha replied.

[So expensive.]

"Could you give me a discount?" Jiang Chen tried to bargain.

Although he didn't lack money, a single submarine close to 300 million still made him feel pained.

"If you can buy eight at once, I can sell them to you for 200 million."

[Eight...]

If Jiang Chen remembered correctly, a single submarine required a crew of 50-60 sailors. Even if he wanted to buy eight to build a massive nuclear fleet, he didn't have enough crew to man them.

"Two 'Guardian' class frigates, two Type 636 'Kilo' class submarines - 650 million USD." Jiang Chen made a counter-offer.

"700 million USD with ammunition, training, and two K-27 'Snail' anti-submarine helicopters."

"Do they include a warranty?" Jiang Chen proposed without shame.

"No," Natasha answered with eyes narrowed.

"Okay, deal," Jiang Chen said, sensing that he had no option but to accept.

To be honest, he was never good at bargaining.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen became alert.

Ayesha sensed something too as she cautiously narrowed her eyes.

At the same time, the small truck in front of them suddenly decelerated and the trunk jerked open.

Staring inside the container, Jiang Chen's pupils suddenly contracted.

Chapter 411: The Clash on the Expressway

The back popped open, and a soldier in a black, special forces uniform raised the rifle in his hand as the muzzle pointed directly at Ayesha in the driver seat.

The instant Ayesha saw the rifle, she released her foot on the gas and slammed the brakes while her hands turned the steering wheel rapidly.

The screeching tires left black skid marks on the ground; their car skidded to a small road beside the highway. At the same time, the rifles began to fire.

Tatatata-!

The rifles unleashed a barrage of bullets. With the jumping sparks and bullets, Jiang Chen saw with the illumination of the bullets that two shooters were inside.

The windshield shattered and glass scattered all over their bodies. The bullets also left a trail of bullet holes on the car roof. People on the street let out deafening screams as they ran for their lives and put distance between themselves and the scene unfolding in front of them. The cars on the street were also in a panic as they desperately tried to maintain control; some even slammed onto the sidewalk.

"Ughhhh!"

Ayesha shouted in pain as blood splattered on her shoulder and began to spread on her white shirt.

"Ayesha!"

Witnessing the blood splattering, Jiang Chen's pupils violently contracted as rage filled his body. He almost uncontrollably entered Fury.

"I'm okay."

With gritted teeth, Ayesha's hands stayed on the steering wheel as she drove the car back onto the highway.

Using a nitrogen shield in this enclosed space would cause suffocation, so Jiang Chen could only duck with Ayesha to avoid the bullets whizzing above their heads.

"Drive to the port." Jiang Chen took out the PK2000 from the storage dimension while suppressing his internal rage.

"Understood!"

Beyond the rubber posts beside the road was the sea. With one simple mistake, they could end up in the ocean, but Ayesha wouldn't allow that to happen. Even if the pain in her left arm was about to make her lose consciousness, she still grasped the steering wheel tightly.

Fortunately, not a lot of people took this route to the deep-water harbor; it was just their two cars in the middle of a Hollywood-esque pursuit.

The car stabilized as Jiang Chen smashed his car window open with the barrel of his gun before he took aim at the shooter.

But before he could fire, the opponent was quick to react. The shooter who climbed on top of the truck fired at Jiang Chen's hands outside his window.

The bullets barely whizzed by Jiang Chen's hands, forcing him to retract them. These people obviously received specialized training with more accurate shooting compared to average soldiers. Even Jiang Chen, who had experienced battles before, felt a sense of danger from these men.

"Fu*k you," Jiang Chen cursed as he took a heat sensor grenade from the storage dimension and tossed it out the window.

Trailed by flames, the heat-seeking grenade made a noticeable pause in the air before it redirected its course and flew to the small truck.

With flames and a large explosion, the top was blown off the truck. But these shooters were obviously prepared - not only was the truck reinforced, but even the windows were bulletproof. The truck rammed through the smoke of the explosion, remaining hot in pursuit.

Due to loss of blood, Ayesha's eyesight was beginning to blur, but she still held the wheel tightly and locked her gaze onto the curved road ahead. Jiang Chen noticed that a fine mist of sweat covered her forehead.

Jiang Chen noticed her seat was stained red; his heart was bleeding.

He took a deep breath as he lowered his head.

"Stop the car."

"I can still do it." Ayesha's lower lip was about to bleed, but her foot didn't release the gas.

"I said stop the car, I'm going to kill them." Jiang Chen's pupils turned into a crimson red.

The daunting crimson red reflected his bloodthirsty fury.

Not far in the distance, a black helicopter appeared in the air as it maintained the same speed as the car. Jiang Chen noticed there was a sniper at the hatch door, aiming into the distance.

The sniper didn't shoot, perhaps afraid of hitting Jiang Chen.

They intended to kidnap, not assassinate.

"No... Your secret will be revealed. We're almost at the port – there's no one there." The rare occasion when Ayesha went against Jiang Chen's wishes, she stuttered.

"Fu*k! Is your life more important or is the fu*king secret more important?!"

Roaring, Jiang Chen kicked open his car door.

When she heard these words, Ayesha's face instantly turned red.

But before she could relish this warm feeling, her eyes widened in shock.

"No-"

Jiang Chen ignored her words as he ripped off his seatbelt.

A grim smile surfaced on his face as he jumped out of the car and dropped to the sea, ten something meters below.

"If there are fu*king reefs down there, I'll be done."

With his eyes locked onto the sea, Jiang Chen gritted his teeth.

Splash!

Staring at the splash created on the sea surface, everyone was shocked.

They didn't expect Jiang Chen to jump.

This type of courage wasn't typical of a rich person. In their heads, Jiang Chen would get out of the car and beg on the ground for their mercy, just like the influential people they kidnapped before.

The truck came to a sudden stop. The black helicopter also hovered above the area where Jiang Chen jumped. No one bothered with the car Ayesha was in.

They only had one mission: to capture Jiang Chen and use him as a hostage to force a swap. The moment the helicopter lifted off the fishing boat, it appeared on New Moon Island's radar. The force stationed on New Moon Island was on its way; if these kidnappers couldn't secure the target quickly, they would be surrounded.

"Fu*k, is that guy crazy?" A bearded man with brown skin cursed as he jumped out from the back of the truck.

Their uniforms had a small arrow representing their identity.

Arrow Military Company.

Registered in South Africa, they were stationed on the island of Madagascar across the Mozambican Strait. They were one of the most despicable private military companies in the world. Most of their members were retired NATO soldiers who participated in the Iraq war. For a generous sum, they were willing to turn on the force they served without any consideration, or they could help the CIB capture drug lords in Africa.

They were hired by the country F government.

They had to capture the primary shareholder of Celestial Trade and threaten him to pressure the Xin government to release the 41 captured F soldiers.

F finally learned its lesson. When they realized their "special force" was no match, they decisively threw out ten million USD and hired international experts to conduct this operation.

"Change of plan. Team C, move to coordinate (301,212)." Another soldier in a helmet got out of the car and scanned the sea surface before he immediately spoke into the microphone attached to his ear.

"Roger."

The large fishing boat docked 10 kilometers away suddenly moved to where the helicopter was hovering.

"Team A, follow me to build a line of defense. Team B, help me retrieve the package."

"Affirmative."

The truck stopped in the middle of the road. A soldier brought out machine guns and rocket launchers from the back of the truck while the other three made an "L" shaped barrier and set it around the truck.

The engine of the helicopter roared as it slowly made its descent.

Waves began to form on the surface of the sea because of the

turbulence created by the helicopter. A soldier in diving gear with a rope attached to his back signaled his comrade before he dived inside.

"Did you find him?"

Fortunately, there were no reefs under the water - the target should still be alive.

"Wait..."

He turned on his searchlights. The diver moved underwater while searching for the target.

The water wasn't deep, but the jagged reefs and corals obstructed some of his vision. When the light scanned the area, the Clownfish swam away to hide in seaweed, but a crab just stayed there blowing bubbles.

"Sh*t, where is that guy hiding?" The diver cursed.

The soldiers in the helicopter watched the police force appearing at the entrance of the road, preparing their rifles.

"Liam, stop playing, quickly."

"I know... sh*t! What is that!? Ahhh!"

"Liam! What happened! Liam!"

Watching the blood gradually bubble up to the surface, the soldier in the helicopter widened his eyes. When he saw the object appearing on the surface of the water, dumbfounded, a single word came out of his mouth.

"God-"

Chapter 412: Tearing it Up

Splash!

Because of Jiang Chen's body position when he dived in, the sea surface contacted his chest. Even considering his strength, the collision was still able to force some water into his mouth.

Bubbles rose to the surface.

He maintained his downward momentum and tried his hardest to hold his breath while swimming forward.

When his hand reached ten meters under the surface of the water and he confirmed that the people above couldn't see to this distance, Jiang Chen immediately started interdimensional travel.

The force of the water squeezing his body instantly disappeared as he appeared on the bed in the mansion in the apocalypse, completely wet.

Without stopping, Jiang Chen took out the backup T-3 power armor he kept in the storage dimension and squeezed inside.

<Enclosed mode activated>

The four turbine engines behind the armor contracted inward and closed the engine outlet. The vents around the armor were all closed and the oxygen storage system inside the armor opened. The entire power armor was closed off from the external environment, preventing any material exchange with the outside world.

In theory, neither the airdrop type or the land type power armor could be used to dive under water because the massive amount of metal in the armors caused it to sink. There was also no air inside the water, so the turbine engines in the power armor using air as force would naturally lose their function.

But while the power armor had no diving functions, it could act

as a simple waterproof suit!

After confirming the equipment was operational, a grim smile surfaced on Jiang Chen's face.

"See how I will torture you all."

Interdimensional travel, activated!

Just as he left, Sun Jiao pushed open the door.

Seeing the empty room and the wet sheets, she pouted her mouth in disappointment.

"I thought you were back for good."

But seeing as he came back only temporarily, he must've met some trouble on the other side.

When Sun Jiao realized this, she began to worry.

"If only you could take me there."

She sighed.

She grabbed the wet sheets before she walked out.

...

The water in his surroundings was emitting an even amount of pressure. Just as Jiang Chen appeared on this side, his eyes fell upon a diving mask. Although he couldn't see the expression of the person behind it, judging by the person's stopped movements, he was shocked.

The shock only lasted for a second before he immediately raised his underwater pistol.

With a trail of white bubbles, the bullet hit Jiang Chen's armor and deflected without any damage done.

Jiang Chen immediately stepped on the seabed and without pulling out his gun, he grabbed the person's face.

"Ahhhh, glooglooo-!"

With his face stuck, the diver desperately fought for his life.

The person's sounds of agony rang out, but Jiang Chen didn't care as he grabbed his head with a grim smile and freely unleashed his anger. He smashed the person's head on the reefs by the side.

"Go die!"

His head exploded like a watermelon. The nearby group of fish scattered because of the blood that began to diffuse through the water.

Jiang Chen tossed aside his corpse. He took out a knife, cut the rope on his back, grabbed the rope and looped it a few times around his own hand.

Another grim smile appeared on his face again as Jiang Chen ascended to the surface along with the diffused blood.

Just as he was about to reach the surface, Jiang Chen's left arm violently pulled the rope and leaped out of the water.

<Enclosed mode deactivated>

"Liam is down."

"Cut the rope!"

"No, ascend, we'll seek revenge for Liam!" The soldier took out his machine gun, attached a hook to the helicopter door and set the machine gun on the side of the helicopter with blood-red eyes.

"Turn the head, quick!"

"Roger." The pilot pulled up the helicopter.

The rotor blades instantly began to accelerate as the helicopter quickly climbed in elevation; the three-hundred-kilogram mass that was Jiang Chen was nothing for the mid-sized helicopter. At the same time, the pilot "dashed forward" while "rotating the head." Using the momentum of the helicopter, the power armor at the tip of the rope began swinging in the air.

The crosshairs locked onto Jiang Chen at the tip of the rope. The soldier maintained his aim while trying to keep still from the momentum of the helicopter. He pressed fire with a ferocious expression.

"Go die, monster-!"

The bullets hit the surface of the armor. The 12.7 mm caliber machine gun bullets were deflected by the power armor and just left a trail of barely visible dents on the surface of the black paint.

Sparks flew everywhere. The light was blinding to the eye, but it didn't do any damage to Jiang Chen.

At the same time, a battle on the highway was already underway. Xin police cars lined up in the middle of the road while exchanging fire with the three mercenaries stationed around the truck. But in terms of firepower and experience, the Xin police force was clearly weaker than the experienced mercenaries. With their light machine guns set up behind barriers, the mercenaries quickly managed to gain the upper hand in the exchange.

Jiang Chen wanted to use the minigun on his right arm to finish the group of mercenaries, but his eyes caught the people screaming on the street in the distance as well as a few people, unafraid of death, raising their phones to record the whole ordeal. He quickly changed his mind as he put his arms above his head, pretending to be completely helpless.

"Dammit! I can't penetrate this thing!" The cold air cut his lips as the soldier roared out while he took out another clip.

"Don't bother with that thing! Bob! Cut the rope and get rid of him! Use your machine gun to take down the ground units!"

"Affirmative... Fu*k!" A few bullets flew by Bob's forehead, causing him to be immediately drenched in a cold sweat.

A pickup truck in police camouflage drove to the road not far away, and behind the pickup truck was a Type 67-2 heavy machine

gun. It was the type of machine gun removed from the Pannu force's armory because Celestial didn't need such an old weapon, so it was left with the police department. It now had a use.

"Fu*k, are they the police or terrorists?!"

Bob ducked down in fear.

At the same time, the sound of bullets hitting the helicopter surface echoed inside.

The pilot immediately moved the helicopter up while dragging the annoying power armor away from Coro Island.

"The enemy has anti-air units! Team A, you're on your own!" He shouted into the microphone.

"Affirmative, head to the retreating point and meet with team C."

"Okay!... Bob, why's that metal thing still hanging on there?!" The pilot turned his head and asked his comrade in the back.

"Wait, I'll cut it off now."

"Hold on! Find a deserted island; we need to get revenge for Liam!" the mercenary beside Bob said with fierce eyes.

"Heh, great point." Bob sneered as he retracted his knife.

When he saw the helicopter leaving Coro Island, Jiang Chen's eyes began to turn cold as a curvature appeared on his lips.

[Wait until I can't see Coro Island, it will be your death sentence!]

The mercenaries clearly didn't realize what they were dragging along; they thought it was just a "dragon scale" full-body bulletproof suit. Aside from the armor's sci-fi looking appearance, it didn't look dangerous at all at a surface level.

But soon they would feel deep regret for this mistake.

One of these wiped out an entire elite CIB agent force!

They flew around Coro Island for ten minutes before the pilot finally found an appropriate island. With jagged cliffs at the

bottom, a sneer appeared on his face as he hovered the helicopter 2000 meters above the island.

Falling down from this height, the armor would definitely be shattered into pieces, even if it was made out of titanium.

"Bob, do it!"

"Affirmative." Bob put his machine gun to the side as he took out his dagger. He smiled grimly at Jiang Chen without knowing any better. "Goodbye, buddy-"

But his expression quickly froze.

Jiang Chen took out the tactical rifle on his waist, aiming it at him.

Tatata-!

After unleashing the bullets, Jiang Chen also pressed the trigger with the same grim smile.

A bullet penetrated the soldier's head. The knife slipped out from his hand and fell into the ocean along with him.

"Dammit! Bob is down too!"

When the pilot saw the rifle in Jiang Chen's hand that appeared out of nowhere, he felt a fear he never felt before, but since he was an experienced soldier, he immediately made a decisive choice.

"Jim! Cut the rope-"

As he said the first word, the mercenary called Jim was already doing exactly that.

But it was too late.

The helicopter tilted.

Jiang Chen jerked on the rope with his left arm while the turbine engines behind his back burst out and quickly shortened the distance between himself and the helicopter.

Jim cut the rope, but it was too late. A moment later, he met

Jiang Chen at the hatch.

Jim's expression was as if he had seen a ghost!

"Here's your rope."

Jiang Chen smiled maliciously. He lifted up his left arm, still wrapped by the rope, and punched.

The sound of steel crashing through bone faded quickly. Blood splashed onto the power armor.

"Die, Devil!" Another soldier screamed, dove onto the helicopter floor, raised his rifle and fired it as fast as he could.

Bullets bounced within the narrow space. Jiang Chen glanced at his frightened expression for a moment then instantly popped his head.

"Fu*k! Fu*k! Fu*k!"

The pilot tried to tilt the helicopter in an attempt to force this demigod out of the open hatch door. But instead, he merely dropped out the two corpses.

Sensing his intentions, Jiang Chen laughed contemptuously.

"You really don't welcome me."

Jiang Chen abided by the pilot's wishes. He shook his head and jumped out of the helicopter.

But before he jumped out, he left a small gift.

A pulled EMP grenade.

"Sh*t! Finally got rid of him." The pilot quickly checked the condition of the rotor blades.

The assistant pilot was curled in his seat, still traumatized.

"What is that monster?"

"Who knows! Fu*k! Those guys never said he was like this... Wait, wait, what's going on?!"

A static noise entered his ears.

The space immediately turned white. The pilot desperately shook the joystick in desperation, but it was futile.

"Fu*k! What are you doing!?"

"I, I don't know! Dammit! AHHHHHH!"

...

With a trail of blue flames behind his back, Jiang Chen descended slowly in the air.

As he watched the helicopter fall 2000 meters in the sky, he sneered.

But just as he was watching the helicopter crashing to the earth, he swore and slapped himself on the forehead.

[Fu*k, forgot to leave one alive!]

He shook his head with a wry smile. Jiang Chen looked back at Coro Island, which was so far away that it looked like a dot.

[Whatever, there's three more.]

[I'll just change into the amphibious K1 kinetic skeleton and head back. Hopefully, they haven't escaped.]

As he thought, Jiang Chen lowered the engine output while directing the power armor to land.

[How is Ayesha doing? Did she get taken to the hospital?]

There was a giant splash in the sea.

After a short silence, a trail of white bubbles came up from underneath and headed towards the Coro Island harbor.

Chapter 413: Bumping Shoulders with the Slim Reaper

"Fu*k! What is team B doing!"

The bearded man held up the rifle and shot back while retreating back to the deep water harbor in panic.

"Mission failed, retreat, I repeat, mission failed..." Blood dripped down from the scratch on his forehead, Srell in a black combat suit shouted into the microphone ordering team C to immediately retreat.

An unprecedented defeat. A helicopter crashed. An entire team of elites fell without any survivors. The opponent's combat ability far exceeded what they had imagined. The metal thing that popped out from under the water instantly suppressed team B. They didn't expect this at all.

"Sh*t, is that Ironman?" A soldier with a rifle cursed while panting.

"Bullsh*t!" Someone else swore.

"Then what the fu*ck-"

"Shut up! Retreat to the boat and remain alert!" Srell in short breaths slowed down, threw a C4 on the ground and caught up with the team again.

The siren in the distance was becoming more visible.

When he estimated the location was about right, he pressed the detonation button.

Flames blew five meters high and engulfed the police vehicle rushing to their location. He scorned and threw away the detonator.

[Garbage even weaker than the Mexican police.]

The fishing boat they prepared beforehand was parked in the deep water harbor; they purchased this from the local fishers. Xin's labor demand helped them tremendously. Without much convincing needed, they bought the fishing boat from a fisher now working in a factory. They replaced the engine with a much more powerful one.

As long as they board the boat, no one could stop them on the vast sea.

But just as the beard dashed into the cabin, his eyes were met with a black muzzle.

Before he could react, his consciousness stopped in front of a flashing light.

Bang!

Type 11 pistol spit out its flame, blood and brain matter splashed beside an indifferent face. Without stopping, Ayesha ducked into the shadow of the cabin, readjustment, and pressed the trigger again. "Bang!" another headshot.

In a glimpse, two out of three died.

Just as she was about to take care of the last person, a sharp wind blew by and kicked away the pistol in her hand.

Slightly shocked, Ayesha didn't bother with the pistol that dropped on the ground. She lowered her body and smoothly wielded the dagger around her waist and stabbed in the person's direction.

Sharp metal sounded. The two blades collided.

While she had a small figure, she was injected with the genetic vaccine. Ayesha still had the upper hand.

Her hand was in pain because of the intense collision. The opponent was also shocked as he kicked out without holding back.

Ayesha agilely dodged the fearsome kick as she swung the dagger

toward his standing left leg. If the dagger hit, his left leg would be done.

But that person was not to be underestimated. He used the recoil force from kicking the wall and fell back. Ayesha's slash only barely cut open his muscle and unfortunately missed his vital point.

Srell rolled to the wall of the cabin and picked up the rifle on the ground. Though before he could press the trigger, a knife pinned his arm.

"Ahh!"

With a scream, the girl had already dashed in front of him. He lifted his hand and threw the barrel in her direction.

Ayesha's movement was uninterrupted as she moved aside to avoid the hit. At the same time, her left hand reached for his wrist, and her right pulled out the second dagger, searching for his throat.

But then, a mishap happened.

Because her left arm muscles were tightened, the crudely bandaged wound on her left shoulder suddenly exploded. The sharp pain made her left hand lose its strength.

The force restraining his wrist loosened. Srell, who caught the opportunity, was ecstatic as he used his brute force and swung the barrel.

"Ooooh-"

With a deep sound of pain, the barrel smashed right onto Ayesha's eyebrows and forced her to tumble. Blood dripped along her face; the dagger didn't manage to penetrate his throat. It only managed to cut his collar.

With droplets of sweat on her face, she kicked her legs without hesitation. While she was ducking down, he extended his left leg,

clamped onto her throat, and pinned her against the wall.

"Gurr-"

Ayesha desperately tried to fight him off in pain with both legs kicking at his hands, but she couldn't use any power because of the lack of blood.

"Go die."

He stared gravely at her.

Her feet left the ground as her movements became weaker and weaker.

For some reason, looking at the girl in front of him, he suddenly remembered the time he served in Afghanistan. He remembered the hell that he wasn't even willing to remember.

[Oh no, almost to the limit.]

Ayesha's consciousness began to blur.

[Sorry... I can't anymore...]

She suddenly felt a bit sad.

How ironic.

The same day, when she was fleeing, she could use a nonchalant tone and ask him "could you give me a bullet?" She was prepared to die for him from the beginning, but now she began to fear.

[I don't want to die...]

[I... I finally got it.]

[...]

White foam and blood began to drip out of her mouth. She began to fight back with a rush of energy. She attempted to claw away from the hand locked on her throat and despairingly kicked his legs with all her force, but the feeble limbs made everything feel powerless.

"Gurr-"

"Go die with my comrades! B*tch."

With anger in his eyes, Srell stared at the girl.

He suddenly remembered the Taliban that shredded his comrade to pieces with the roadside bomb. When he caught the bastard, the murderer looked contemptuously at him, as if he had just completed a virtuous mission, and already put aside his life.

Still, he remembered what he did. He chopped off his hands, pinned both his arms to the wall, shot his legs, and waited until his eyes began to turn into despair before finally dripping out his last drop of blood.

Although he was brought to the military court, he had no regrets. The sensation of unleashing his anger made him addicted to the feeling. He spent two decadent years in Los Santos before he joined "Arrow". He had stored that memory in the back of his head, but now everything flooded back.

There was nothing more enjoyable than watching the enemy die struggling.

"Hahahahaha, go die-!"

He laughed hysterically. He increased the power in his hand as he watched the despair of the weak.

But suddenly, he felt a pull on the back of his neck.

Before he could react, he was thrown out by an explosive force.

He smashed onto the door as his spine made intimate contact with the barriers outside of the cabin.

A sharp and crisp sound, his back bent back in an unimaginable 90 degrees as his spine was broken in half by the force.

His eyes almost popped out from his eye sockets. The broken spine penetrated his intestine but didn't kill him immediately. He slid down from the barrier and collapsed onto the ground.

[Is this what it feels like to suffocate...]

His lungs were clamped by his ribcage, he coughed blood, but he couldn't breathe in a single molecule of air.

At the end of agony, consciousness drifted into darkness.

At the same time, Jiang Chen who threw the mercenary back hugged the girl sliding down from the wall. He hugged her tightly in his arms as if he was holding onto a fragile porcelain doll.

Jiang Chen's eyes were covered in a crimson red, the calmed emotion almost exploded into fury again.

"Ayesha. Ayesha!"

Because of the loss of blood, she couldn't respond anymore.

Holding onto her, Jiang Chen ran out of the cabin, hopped onto the harbor, and ran to the road. When the police and ambulance saw that there was someone in his arms, they all stopped, and the doctors dashed over with stretchers.

[Saved...]

Looking at the side of the furious face, Ayesha felt the relief of surviving through a disaster.

She should be happy, but she suddenly wanted to cry.

Although she never cried before. She was never fragile.

Tears rolled down her eyes and splashed onto his firm shoulder.

Blue and red light. A stretcher. The shaking blood bag, and the panicking face ...

[Once I wake up, he will be really mad... I made the decision myself to do something so dangerous.]

[Whatever, I'll think about it once I wake up.]

Ayesha closed her large eyes.

...

Chapter 414: Rage

Outside the emergency room.

Jiang Chen sat silently in the chair with a gloomy expression on his face.

No one dared to approach him other than the soldiers in kinetic skeletons. The fluid-looking armor covered their chest, and the sleek helmet shielded their head. The soldiers with rifles on full alert protected him in the middle. They examined anyone approaching with sharp eyes... If anyone dared to approach in the first place.

An assassination in public.

With an accident like this in broad daylight, Ivan didn't say anything and handed in his emblem himself, but Jiang Chen tossed it back at him.

Ivan was not to blame. New Moon Island was hundreds of kilometers away from Coro Island. From start to finish, the whole incident took place in ten minutes. The mercenaries entered the border disguised as tourists, and the weapons and equipment they used were all smuggled into Xin with fishing boat marked with Xin's flag.

Although Jiang Chen was furious, he didn't blame anyone. Unleashing his anger on his people was the most foolish and useless choice.

The doctors and nurses in the hospital passed him anxiously, fearing to anger the demigod that is clearly fuming.

Then, a soldier with a rifle turned from the corner and stopped in front of Jiang Chen. He leaned forward and whispered.

"Four pedestrians wounded; one person pronounced died in the hospital. Eight police wounded; two pronounced died in the hospital; four police died because of C4 explosion..."

The cold casualty numbers didn't stir any emotion in Jiang Chen's heart. After the soldier finished, he only said emotionlessly.

"Who's the perpetrator?"

"Reliable evidence indicated that the perpetrator is Arrow Military Company. Xin's Ministry of Foreign Affairs already protested against the Madagascar government to punish the perpetrator..."

But everyone knew that these protests were useless. It was not that Madagascar didn't want to take care of these problems, but because their military force would not even win against the battle-trained soldiers.

Because of this, the emerging nations maintained the stance of keeping an eye open and an eye closed to the illegal militants' misdeeds internationally. As long as they didn't cause trouble domestically, they would not question their legality.

"I'm talking about the actual perpetrator."

"...Sorry, we didn't manage to capture anyone alive. But the boat fled in the direction of country F's territory, and our boats were blocked by F's coastal guards at the border." The soldier lowered his head.

The fishing boat that released the helicopter immediately fled to Xin's border. Although New Moon Island sent out fast boats to chase them, when they escaped into country F's borders, Celestial had to stop pursuing.

Country F's coastal guard freely allowed the militants to enter. It was almost certain that country F was the perpetrator behind this kidnap mission. The only problem was the lack of evidence, and it was virtually impossible to find proof hiring mercenaries to do the dirty deeds.

Jiang Chen closed his eyes.

He was reflecting on his mistake.

The army stationed at New Moon Island could protect Xin like a steel fortress, but he ignored the work in intelligence. Willie society's spy already reminded him, but he didn't think too much of it. Only till now did he realize the severity of the problem. Xin's national security was as penetrable as a piece of paper. And the immigration policy would continue to deteriorate the security of the country. He somehow overlooked this problem before.

He must establish an intelligence department fast before the national security worsens.

Ayesha...

The corner of his eye glared at the closed doors. Jiang Chen felt twisting pain in his heart.

[Fool, why were you trying to prove yourself with wounds... so what if a few rats ran away?]

At the corner, Zhang Yapin with flowers walked over.

He looked at Jiang Chen face full of gloom and let out a sigh.

"Tulips. Help me give these to the wounded. Sorry..."

"I'll form a national security department as soon as possible," Jiang Chen said expressionlessly.

Zhang Yapin paused, sighed.

"That would be best."

Zhang Yapin patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder as he didn't know how to comfort him. He left the flowers on the chair before turning around.

"Execute," Jiang Chen said apathetically.

Zhang Yapin stopped, turned around, and looked at him in disbelief.

"Died of fire, 41 captives all died."

"Are you insane!"

"The circuit board is outdated, the fire equipment lacked maintenance, and there were security disturbances at Xin that day. Just release the statement and send your condolences."

"That's impossible! It's too much of a coincidence! I know you are sad, but we don't have evidence to prove that country F did this. Even if they if they did, we can't seek revenge by executing the prisoners of war. We are a civil society! The international image we finally managed to create-

"You do it." Jiang Chen tilted his head and ordered a soldier.

"Yes." The soldier nodded and left.

Zhang Yapin blankly stared at the soldier leaving, he opened his mouth wanting to say something, but he knew the soldier would not listen to him.

[This lunatic, what would killing a few prisoners of war do? The international society would all stand with country F. 41 lives! Captives without any weapons! The despicable crimes against humanity! Even if they started a war, people would think it would be with a cause.]

Or rather, if Xin did execute the prisoners, it would be the exact response country F was looking.

"Wait," Jiang Chen said.

The soldier stopped and turned around.

"Commander?"

After deliberating for a moment, Jiang Chen slowly closed his eyes, "Just wait a bit."

"Yes, commander."

Zhang Yapin let out a sigh of relief. He felt as if he was about to collapse.

"Thank god, you finally regained your rationality."

Jiang Chen glared at him and didn't say anything.

[Is that so?]

He suddenly felt that it was not only too low to execute the prisoners of war, but it was also too easy of a punishment for them.

A curvature appeared on his lips, and his eyes flashed with coldness and apathy.

Zhang Yapin watched the silent Jiang Chen as he felt a chill down his spine.

...

A video filmed by tourists appeared on Youtube.

The video shook violently, but a helicopter dragging "Ironman" could still be barely made out." People on the helicopter fired at the "Ironman" with the machine guns, but it didn't manage to do any damage.

The video stopped after the helicopter dragged the armor away from Coro Island. It didn't manage to capture the iron armor from being pulled out of the water nor where the helicopter headed. People were speculating about the identity of the "Ironman", the cause, and the ending.

No one knew the ending, but the cause could be traced.

People connected it to the gunfights at the city of Coro that day. A lot of the media believed the two were connected.

But because of the gunfight, the government of Xin tightly controlled the information. They only revealed it was two groups of criminals attempting to rob a bank to divert the public opinion from the truth. Although there were a lot of skeptical information, people had to accept this as the truth and build off of the facts by using their imagination.

Because the fight between the iron armor and the machine gunner was very Hollywood-esque, the truth behind the story was

completely hidden and mysterious. Also, the government's lack of disclosure to the event caused the view of the video on Youtube to be extremely high, and it became a hot topic on the web. Even the actor of Ironman, Robert Downy Jr. wrote a joking status on Facebook.

Burp, I was drunk last time, who saw my armor?

Chapter 415: Smart Medical Chamber

The buns on the table were a bit cold, and the back of the egg was somewhat dry. It has been a while since he faced an empty dinner table. The person that always brought him delicious breakfast was in the hospital. The doctor said that she was no longer in critical condition, but it would still be a lengthy recovery process.

The gun wound triggered acute inflammation, the blood loss pushed her body to the limit as she had constant fevers.

Two days passed by and she still didn't show any signs of waking up.

Whenever he thought about the frail face, a sharp pain would penetrate his chest.

He took a bite of the egg stuffed inside the bun and frowned.

He put down the bun back onto the plate and brought the plate back into the kitchen, he stuffed the food as terrible as his mood into the trash. Then took out the frozen pizza from the fridge and put it in the microwave.

He brought the steamy pizza back to the dinner table and expressionlessly turned on the TV. Then he picked up the pizza with a fork and stuffed it in his mouth.

He didn't feel like eating, so he tried to put his anxious attention on the TV.

The morning news was on.

It happened to play the gunfight that occurred three days ago and had a glimpse of the iron armor being dragged away.

A UA military expert who wished to remain anonymous commented that the single soldier armor's usage in actual warfare is limited. The increased defense as the cost of hiddenness perhaps could block normal bullets, but it would be futile against anti-

armor snipers or cannons. The combination of tanks with infantries is enough to make up for the lack of defense of infantry force, there is no reason to spend high cost to develop the "useless" single soldier armor...

Some experts also questioned the authenticity of the video, especially the fact that the crew on board the helicopter were reluctant to cut the rope.

As to the effectiveness of anti-armor sniper to power armor, Jiang Chen never tried it before, but it shouldn't be possible. Since the power armor in the apocalypse could withstand a few shots of the sniper.

The TV is a great thing to waste time on. As he watched TV, he mechanically stuffed pizza into his mouth before he finished feeding himself.

He put the plate into the dishwasher and glanced at the time, he wanted to take a nap.

But then, the phone rang.

It was Xia Shiyu.

"I saw the news... are you okay there?" Xia Shiyu was worried.

She didn't know that the protagonist in the news was Jiang Chen.

"I'm okay." Jiang Chen stiffly forced a smile and tried to use the least suspicious voice he could muster.

"Your voice is making me worried, are you sick?" Xia Shiyu raised her eyebrows.

"No. Oh... you should have arrived in Xiangjiang yesterday. I had something to do and didn't get to call you, sorry."

"No, it's okay. I don't mind." Xia Shiyu's face turned red as she could only use her cough to hide the panic in her heart.

Jiang Chen's words made her remember the kiss at the airport.

She didn't know what kind of courage she had to make that move. When she got off the airplane at Melbourne, her heart was still pounding furiously.

"The selection of the internal test users have been completed. They will arrive early July, so you'll have to take care of them." Xia Shiyu jumped to another topic.

"Mhmm, leave it to me." Jiang Chen didn't sense Xia Shiyu's mental state and nodded.

"What about Ayesha, is she doing okay?"

"... She, she is sleeping." Jiang Chen made up a not fake lie.

Xia Shiyu paused as she was slightly bitter and jealous, but she couldn't do anything about it. She knew that once she left, the two would definitely start living their intimate and shameless life again.

She just didn't want to torture herself by thinking about the problem.

"Okay. You... Mhmm, don't overdo it."

Jiang Chen took a moment to process as he sensed the jealousy that drifted all the way from the other side of the ocean. He couldn't help but smile...

"Don't overdo what?"

"Don't overdo, that."

"What's that?" Jiang Chen pretended not to know.

"It's, it's that..." Xia Shiyu's face was completely red, her lips trembled, and only a word squeezed out of her mouth, "PERVERT!"

She hung up the phone.

Jiang Chen shook his head with a smile.

It was only a while before his mood became better and he cheered up again.

"I'll go visit Ayesha in a bit... Mhmm, it's almost the end of the month, I'll go to the warehouse first and send food-" Jiang Chen suddenly stopped.

The apocalypse.

Right, the apocalypse! He almost forgot about that side!

He slapped his forehead and walked out in quick steps.

...

Grains, wheat, flour were piled into a small mountain, as well as fresh meat, preserved meat and all kinds of canned food, and added to that were dairy products and salt. This batch of food had the cost of over half a million USD. Part of the food was produced at Xinlong Food Processing Plant relocated to Pannu Island, while some were from Australian farms.

Followed by the increased amount needed to be transported, Jiang Chen hired a professional in Australia to assist Cassan who chewed on sugarcanes at the door. This ensured that food would stuff the warehouse to its fullest on the second last day of the month.

After spending ten minutes moving the warehouse full of food to the apocalypse. Jiang Chen returned to the mansion in the apocalypse. He directly looked for Lin Lin and explained to her his intention.

"Ayesha? Is that the girl I saw last time?" With a finger pressed against her bottom lip, Lin Lin asked.

"Mhmm. She is wounded and still unconscious now, is there some all-purpose medicine or something?" Jiang Chen asked.

"There is no all-purpose medicine." Lin Lin rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen and said with an attitude, "It's hard if I don't know where she is injured or if her brain is damaged..."

"It's not the brain." Jiang Chen shook his head, "It's a gun wound,

but because of the loss of blood and the wound rupturing there is a bacterial infection... and hypoxia."

When Lin Lin heard Jiang Chen's words, it made her jump up.
[How severe was the wound?]

But it was all good.

Since there were all external injuries, without any damage to the brain region, it shouldn't be too hard to heal.

"Smart Medical Chamber, I remember the community center at the base has around seven or eight of them. That thing is extremely effective in repairing normal damage to human tissue. Based on the severity of the injury, float in there for a while, and she should be okay. How behind is your medical condition over there?" Lin Lin ridiculed.

"Why don't you just look through the history textbook."

While Jiang Chen said that, his tensed heart calmed down.

He didn't even know the base had something amazing like this which was his mistake. He always heard that people were injured at the base, but didn't see anyone recovering on a bed. No wonder this was the case with such advanced technology.

"Be aware, before lying inside the Smart Medical Chamber, the special nutrient liquid must be poured. That should be in the base's warehouse. Remember not to forget."

"Thanks."

"No worries, just bring me some mango pudding back-"

Suddenly, Lin Lin covered her mouth and began to gag.

Jiang Chen was startled by her abrupt action, and he immediately asked her, "Are you okay?"

"Nothing. Just some small problems in the past few days... might be better after a while." Lin Lin dodged Jiang Chen's eyes as she replied ambiguously.

"What exactly is the problem? Explain." Jiang Chen grabbed Lin Lin's shoulder and stared into the differing color pupils with seriousness.

Lin Lin blushed at the "fervent" sight. She twisted her body and turned her burning face away.

"It's getting hotter, fool."

"Hotter?"

Jiang Chen asked in confusion, but he didn't receive the appropriate response.

She buried her blushing face and pushed him out of the door without explaining anything.

Chapter 416: The Punishment for being naughty

Because of the chaos that happened, the hospital hall was empty without anyone to be seen. Being "frightened" by the four soldiers, the people who usually came to the hospital instead headed to local clinics. The doctors and nurses all enjoyed their free time. (Xin has a universal health care system.) After six hours in the emergency room, Ayesha's condition was stabilized. It would be a matter of time before she woke up.

When Jiang Chen was told this, the director of the hospital felt relieved.

If something happened to that girl, he was afraid that man would tear this place apart.

Leon hadn't closed his eyes for 24 hours. He put the diagnostic report on the side of the table as he wearily put his head on the table to take a nap.

But before he could fall asleep, someone knocked on the door and interrupted him. Leon got up from the table, rubbed his heavy eye bags, and said tiredly.

"Please come in."

It was the head nurse that came in.

"Director, Mr. Jiang Chen handed in the discharge application for Miss Ayesha."

'Oh... What? Discharge?' Leon, who just processed the information, almost fell off his chair. He immediately pressed himself against the chair and stood up.

"Yes, he wanted you to immediately arrange an ambulance and send Miss Ayesha to his home," The head nurse said in wry.

"How is that possible! She just left critical condition and hadn't

even woken up yet. She doesn't meet the discharge standard. This is putting the patient's life on the line! If she is discharged now and her condition suddenly deteriorates to that she becomes permanently unconscious, who would bear the responsibility?" Leon said emotionally.

"But director... this is his order," the head nurse said with a wry smile.

Leon felt conflicted before finally let out a sigh.

"Grant the discharge application... Also get him to sign a disclaimer."

"He already signed the disclaimer." The head nurse took out the paper from the brief.

"Then he can do whatever he wants." The director snatched the disclaimer from her hand and walked outside wearily.

Not long after, the ambulance arrived at Jiang Chen's mansion. A few doctors and nurses helped unload the stretcher while accompanied by two soldiers. Then they anxiously sent people inside the mansion.

The two nurses put Ayesha on the bed and injected her with the infusion again.

"If there are any symptoms, please immediately contact us."

Because of her sense of responsibility, before she left, the head nurse still made notes to Jiang Chen.

"Mhmm." Jiang Chen nodded with a smile.

Seeing that the important person wasn't as difficult to communicate with as she had expected, the head nurse discreetly felt relieved before she left.

The mansion door closed and the mansion returned to its tranquil state.

Jiang Chen went back into the bedroom and sat beside Ayesha.

He combed the hairs in front of her forehead and caressed the haggard face. Jiang Chen's throat moved a little before only one word came out.

"Fool..."

Jiang Chen stood up and took out the Smart Medical Chamber from the storage dimension.

The fluid design, the pristine white color. From its appearance, this device was quite similar to the hibernation chamber; the only difference was its size being slightly bigger and the top of the chamber not having a processor used to run the virtual reality program.

Jiang Chen carefully removed the needle on Ayesha's arm and then removed her clothes.

He looked the flower buds, then followed her abs to her soft and athletic waist till he finally reached the holy land.

Jiang Chen gulped.

But then he knew that this was not the time to be distracted. He focused again.

"Medical Chamber activated, patient please lie flat inside."

The gentle voice played. Based on its description, Jiang Chen carefully picked up Ayesha as he controlled his aroused mind and put her in.

"Please inject 300 L of nutrient liquid."

The storage dimension opened as Jiang Chen took out five fist-sized black balls. Those were the concentrated forms of the nutrient liquid, its density was the same as steel. The cost of a single ball after the war was as high as ten crystals. So most survivors who had access to the Smart Medical Chamber would only choose to put one bag inside. Although the time would be longer, there was no difference in terms of effect. Since a cost of 50

crystals per treatment was not something typical survivors could afford.

But Jiang Chen didn't care.

If it was not for the fact that only a maximum of five could be dissolved, Jiang Chen wanted to stuff more in so she could wake up faster.

He injected 300 L of distilled water and dropped the five concentrate inside and put on the cover.

The indicator flashed green as the drum device gently buzzed. From the transparent glass, the 300 L liquid already turned an emerald green color with a thick, gel-like consistency.

"Treatment program activated."

The breathing device was automatically attached to her and the cover of the medical chamber slowly closed to cover Ayesha's body. From the transparent part on the surface, the liquid was starting to submerge Ayesha until it completely surrounded her.

A blue laser scanned her entire body and drew out her hologram picture at the top of the chamber, revealing areas that were damaged.

"Estimated treatment time is 21 hours, please wait patiently."

The soft announcement dragged Jiang Chen back from his astonishment towards the technology.

If every single family had one of this, clinics and hospital can all close.

Jiang Chen exclaimed in amazement as he put his hand on the surface of the medical chamber.

[Please wake up...]

...

21 hours passed by, Jiang Chen waited quietly beside the medical

chamber.

Ding-.

A noise and the liquid level in the hibernation chamber slowly dropped.

At the same time, the door opened.

The gorgeous face with more life in it reappeared in front of Jiang Chen.

Slowly, Ayesha opened her eyes.

Her eyes met with his. Sparkling teardrops swelled in her pupils. It was the first time Jiang Chen saw such a fragile expression on her face. A lot of criticism and blaming words were stuck in his throat and swallowed down.

"My sleeping beauty, you are finally awake." With a smile, Jiang Chen extended his trembling hand and caressed her face.

He almost lost her.

He carried Ayesha out of the medical chamber and put a towel around her. Although she said she could do it herself with a blushed face, Jiang Chen demandingly carried her in his arms and then sat her down beside the bed to wipe off the droplets from her hair.

"Don't do dangerous things ever again." Jiang Chen felt the softness he almost lost while he said with a tone of criticism.

Ayesha buried her head.

"I can't promise you that."

"Why?"

"Because, protecting you is the meaning of my existence, I am willing to-AHHH!"

While Ayesha screamed, Jiang Chen threw her on the bed and slapped her firm butt.

Pa!

"Nooo-"

A whimpering noise slipped out of her throat as her face instantly turned bright red, Ayesha gritted her teeth.

With the burning sensation on her butt, she said with defiance.

"Why?"

"Why? You dare to ask me why? Do you know how worried I was?!" Jiang Chen said fiercely and raised his hand simultaneously.

Pa!

"Nooo!"

Another whimpering noise, Ayesha twisted her body, a wronged mist covered her defiant eyes.

"I, I was thinking for you-"

"If you really are thinking for me, then while you take care of me, take care of yourself! Do you really think you dying would make me happy?! I would rather those bastards cause a mayhem here and escape than you becoming like this!"

It was the first time Jiang Chen was angry at his woman.

Pa!

"Nooooo!"

The intense burning sensation made Ayesha struggle. Her eyes were filled with sparkling mist.

In heavy breaths, Jiang Chen looked at the vivid "five fingers mountain" as he couldn't even endure the sight. His emotional state gradually stabilized.

He stopped and used a more gentle tone.

"Do you know why you are wrong?"

"I know."

"Why are you wrong?"

"I... I shouldn't have tried to be brave. I was injured, I should have gone..." Ayesha's voice was mixed with a whimpering tone as she said while stuttering. The expression was just like a girl that made a mistake with her hand being slapped by the teacher's bamboo stick.

"Gone where?"

"The hospital," Ayesha said in a quiet voice.

"Mhm," Jiang Chen said calmly.

He was afraid. He was afraid that she would do something stupid for him. He didn't think Ayesha's thought process was a bit "dangerous" until three days ago when he realized his mistake.

Even if it is Superman, how much combat power would be left if he lost blood?

"Ayesha."

"Mhmm," Ayesha replied faintly.

"Do you think the purpose of your existence is to protect me?" Jiang Chen used a calm voice.

"Mhmm... Nooo!" Just as she replied with her head buried, her head raised again as she cried in pain.

A slapping sound.

Her butt had another five finger mountain added to it. It looked painful.

Jiang Chen couldn't bear the sight anymore. But he knew that he had to do it. If he doesn't change her perspective, she would kill herself one day.

"You said, you were willing to be my bride."

"Mhmm." Ayesha nodded with force.

But her eyes were filled with grievances.

"Then keep your safety in your mind, okay? Just for me," Jiang Chen looked into her eyes and said earnestly.

"... Okay."

She whimpered in a quiet voice with her head buried. She hid her face behind her dark brown hair. Her legs kneeling on the ground trembled for some reason.

With how mistreated she looked, Jiang Chen let out a sigh and didn't say anything else.

But then, an odd expression appeared on his face.

The silvery silk, the water stain on the sheets...

[This girl, she-]

Jiang Chen was dumbfounded.

He almost forgot that Ayesha was an M.

Chapter 417: I need a list

Because of some reason, the lecture that was supposed to end was extended for another two hours. If it were not for a visitor, Ayesha's "grievance" would last for two more hours.

Natasha was standing outside. If it was for Jiang Chen's instruction, Ayesha wanted to lock the girl outside.

"Oh, recovered already...What happened to you?"

When Natasha walked into the mansion and noticed Ayesha's limping motion, she raised her eyebrows in confusion, but then she started laughing as she realized something.

"..." Ayesha looked at her coldly and stood beside Jiang Chen again.

Natasha sniffed the air and looked dubiously at Jiang Chen on the sofa.

"Do you not welcome me?"

"Very welcome." Jiang Chen exaggeratedly opened his arms and showed a welcoming gesture. Then he pointed at the vodka on the table with "please," "The vodka you wanted."

Natasha grinned and sat across Jiang Chen as she leisurely crossed her legs.

"You owe me vodka from Moscow, not vodka from Coro. Drinking hard liquid in the tropics is not a fitting scene."

"Ayesha, lower the air condition temperature to Moscow temperatures."

"No need, I'm not here for a party," Natasha rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen as she uncrossed her legs. "Country F's vice minister of national defense hired Arrow Military Company. The decision maker is F's presidential palace. They planned to kidnap you, and use your influence on the Xin government to force them to release

the 41 prisoners.

Jiang Chen looked at Natasha, surprised.

"KGB is on my side?"

"KGB is on Russia's national interest side." Natasha smiled.

"What do you want to obtain from me?" Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

"It's only a friendly gesture, Kremlin thinks we have the opportunity to work closely together." Natasha shook her head. "If there is a condition, I wouldn't have disclosed everything to you from the start."

Jiang Chen watched Natasha without any change in expression; he didn't know what her plan was.

As he was looking at her, she was also observing him with a grin.

The eye contact lasted for half a minute before she said abruptly.

"You are a man the KGB doesn't understand."

"It's my honor then."

"Do you not want to know why?" Natasha chuckled.

"If you are willing to tell me," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

"You can always bring out something amazing." Natasha looked at Ayesha, "For example, an injury that would need a month of recovery time was healed in 24 hours."

Precisely, it was 21 hours.

Ayesha looked apathetically at Natasha and was unmoved by her smile.

"How many rats did you put on my island." Jiang Chen sighed.

"Only me."

"Do you think I will believe that?" Jiang Chen glared at her.

"Up to you." A smiling curvature appeared. The green pupils

gazing into his eyes seemed to penetrate his soul.

Jiang Chen thought for a moment and then said.

"Can I ask you a question?"

"Go ahead."

"By telling me this information, is your intention making us disrupt the landscape in southeast Asia thus accelerating UA's strategy of returning to the Asia Pacific, therefore balancing your disadvantage in Veit and Syria?" Jiang Chen didn't dodge Natasha's eyes.

Surprise flashed across the green pupils as Natasha looked quite interested in Jiang Chen.

"I want you to take the word disadvantage out. At least change it to equal."

Therefore, not rejecting the first part?

Jiang Chen laughed.

"I don't like being used."

"You are not being used, it just happens that we share the same interest," Natasha swayed the hair on her shoulder and leaned on the sofa with her arms across her chest, "If I don't come find you, are you planning just to let go of your disobedient little neighbor?"

"Then your purpose today?"

Natasha's lips curved up, "Kremlin is willing to provide you with some support."

A pillow just when you need it.

Although without Russia, he also had the confidence that he could do it. However, with their support, it would indeed save him some costs.

"Oh? That's perfect then."

"First, let me be clear. We are not going help you on boring and

useless things like assassinating the ministry of national defense or the president. Although KGB has some agents in country F, it doesn't mean we are willing to take the risk for you. The most we can do is to selectively provide you with some intelligence support." Natasha reminded him.

"That's enough." Jiang Chen looked at Natasha with a smile, "I only need you to provide a list, the type with contacts."

List?

Natasha raised her eyebrows as she didn't know what Jiang Chen was planning.

But when she heard the list that Jiang Chen was looking for, her eyes lit up immediately.

"You are such a bad person." With a grin, Natasha smiled.

"Thank you for your compliment." Jiang Chen accepted the compliment without any shame at all.

She stood up and walked to Jiang Chen in cat steps. Then she caressed Jiang Chen's chin flirtatiously.

"Wait for my good news."

Ignoring Ayesha's cold stare, Natasha stood in front of her and raised her head.

"You've been standing for a long time, why don't you sit for a bit."

"..."

A hint of embarrassment flashed through her cold pupils, but Ayesha quickly controlled her emotion.

Natasha scanned her butt with other intentions before she left in quick steps.

The door closed.

Once she left, Jiang Chen asked Ayesha in a quiet voice.

"Did you leave any voice recorders?"

Ayesha shook her head.

"No."

Jiang Chen nodded, to Ayesha's anti-reconnaissance ability, he was confident.

Jiang Chen took out his phone and opened the monitoring function, the screen quickly switched to the camera in the garden.

Natasha walked innocently to the gate of the mansion and didn't "touch" the flowers and plants along the way. But when she walked to the door, she stopped and blew a kiss to the camera.

"This girl..."

Jiang Chen couldn't help but shake his head.

Ayesha gently dragged on Jiang Chen's sleeve.

"She is a dangerous woman."

"I know, That's why I didn't do anything to her that day." Jiang Chen referred to when he was in Donetsk.

But Jiang Chen was surprised too because it was the first time Ayesha was jealous.

She seemed to have read Jiang Chen's mind as her face turned red and she rushed to explain.

"Not because of jealousy... I'm just afraid you'll be tricked by her."

"Haha, am I the type that can't control my lower body?" Jiang Chen laughed.

[Mhmm...]

[Perhaps a little bit?]

Chapter 418: Xin National Security Bureau

A large number of tourists and immigrants flooding into Xin led to many unfamiliar faces filling the streets. Not only did foreigners bring their bills, but they also brought crime, drugs and even terrorism.

The warm tropical climate made it easy for people to become complacent. Xin had a police force of 50 before, but the stable Xin didn't experience a lot of crime. Now, with their door opened to internationals, the Xin government had to introduce three changes.

The police force increased to 200 people, added five police helicopters and twenty police vehicles from Australia, in addition to delegating Celestial Trade to form a national security bureau.

The first two changes were meant to target typical criminals, but the last one was to fill the void in the national security protection of Xin.

Xin must have its own intelligence department.

And Jiang Chen clearly wanted to have a part in forming it himself.

The newly formed intelligence department was named the National Security Bureau of Xin. It would remain independent of Celestial's management structure and directly report to Jiang Chen. As for the director position, after careful deliberation, Jiang Chen chose Ayesha.

When it came to her abilities or loyalty, Jiang Chen had no doubt.

"The director of national security?"

At the dinner table, when Jiang Chen proposed this, Ayesha looked at him, perplexed.

"Mhm. Xin must form its own national security department, and I want you to be the director," Jiang Chen said with seriousness.

Ayesha was hesitant.

"But I want to stay with you."

"Being a director doesn't mean you have to be far away from me."

Although Jiang Chen said this, Ayesha still had some concerns. She liked the life she had now without the need to appear in public frequently. She only needed to cook for her husband, drive for him when needed, and occasionally visit his parents...

"But I can't manage people," Ayesha said in a small voice.

That is a concern...

It was just like how a great athlete may not be a great coach, and the best coach may not be the best athlete. Ayesha's individual combat, reconnaissance, and anti-reconnaissance abilities were all strong, but she might not be able to manage an agent force equally well. Especially since she wasn't good at communicating with people, that would prove to be a significant obstacle to her being a leader.

Jiang Chen began to reconsider while scratching his chin.

Ayesha looked disappointed because she couldn't help Jiang Chen, but Jiang Chen quickly came up with a good solution.

"How about this - could you help me train a group of agents?"

Ayesha deliberated for a moment before nodding.

"If it's just training, I can do that."

"Okay then." Jiang Chen snapped his fingers. "I will post the hiring information on Celestial's website. After the deadline, help me pick 100 applicants with potential and train them to become qualified agents. Once training ends, you can choose a talented individual to become the director. Can you do that?"

Ayesha agreed. It wasn't that hard.

That afternoon, Jiang Chen sought out the logistics manager, Barkary, and explained the hiring information to him. But to Jiang Chen's proposal for posting it online, Barkary brought up one concern.

"It might not be secure to post it online - there may be other agents hiding among the agents we end up hiring. Unless we can investigate the background of every applicant, it's hard to prevent something like this from happening. I propose that we do the hiring process by approaching people in person."

Take MI6 for example - their hiring process at top university campuses was done by patting people on the shoulder. Usually, university professors working for the intelligence service would scout candidates then ask students to come in for a talk. If students were interested, they could join MI6 or they could choose to reject.

Although this selection method was highly secure, the efficiency was lackluster. Jiang Chen refused to spend two to three years to select 50 agents.

"Don't worry, I have my own method of investigating their background."

[Funny, what secret cannot be revealed by truth-telling serum? Even senior KGB agents won't be able to withstand interrogation that way.]

Seeing Jiang Chen's explanation, Barkary didn't try to convince him further. He knew his boss had a lot of secrets unknown to him or methods he had yet to disclose to uncover people's backgrounds. He didn't need to be curious; he only needed to do his part of the job.

Just like that, an interesting, or rather, a suspicious hiring post appeared on Facebook and Twitter.

<Do you want to do something meaningful? Do you want to

escape a dull and routine life?>

Under these tempting words was a line of distinct red words, as well as a picture of the beautiful tropical island.

<Salary of ten thousand USD per month, and a plane ticket to the new world.>

The description of the position was as follows:

"You must be acute in your observations and remember every detail you encounter."

"You will frequently drive day and night, and you must be able to calmly maneuver any kind of road conditions."

"You must be able to use only a tourist map to freely traverse between two points in a foreign country."

"This job is prone to unexpected changes. Therefore, you must be able to make the best choice in the shortest time."

"Because of job demands, you may not be able to contact your family for a prolonged period of time. Before you accept this job, please carefully consider this."

"If you have thought everything through, please join us."

"Perhaps you will be the next 007!"

The posting also explained the number of people required.

The number of positions was 100-150.

The applicants had to be adults with complete civil capabilities. Males must not exceed a height of 185 cm while females must not exceed a height of 177 cm because taller people would be more conspicuous in a crowd, thus harder to disguise.

No alcohol or drug addictions.

Applicants with IT knowledge were preferred.

After the applicants finished inputting their information, there was an additional test.

The test was comprised of three games: finding a difference, audio, and reaction speed.

Finding the difference tested for observational skills - applicants must find the discrepancies between two almost identical pictures in one minute.

The audio test looked not at language ability, but rather the filtering of information. For example, one question was: "Eight people got on the bus, five people got off at the first stop, then nine people got on two stops later..." Once the problem was done, the question asked how many times the bus stopped and how many people got on the second time. If the applicants only focused on how many people were left on the bus, then unfortunately, they were cut.

The reaction speed test was pretty straightforward - it required playing against a fighting team to determine how high the applicants could score in reaction speed.

After the three games were completed, the applicant's information and test result would be sent to Celestial Trade. Applicants would only need to wait for one week before they received a response.

If they were hired, the applicants would receive a corresponding email with a ticket to Coro Island.

Then came the benefits.

Agents in training would receive a salary of ten thousand USD per month. After 80 days of highly intensive training, the salary would increase to fifteen thousand USD without the need to pay income tax. Even in developed countries, this was a generous salary.

An "exciting and wild" experience and a competitive salary.

Just like Jiang Chen expected, the posting was only open for two days on social media before Celestial Trade received over one

thousand applications. And this number grew exponentially in the next few days.

Chapter 419: The new Ghost Agent Recruits

Something worth mentioning was that the teens and young adults were easy to trick.

A society with great social benefits allowed people to be fed without needing to work, but it could also kill a person's drive. Why would so many foolish people run to IS to become sex slaves and soldiers? People in most developing countries thought it was incomprehensible foolishness. But from a different perspective, most were searching for excitement to appease the adventurist spirit hidden in their genes.

Of course, Jiang Chen was recruiting agents, not terrorists.

In seven days, Celestial Trade received a total of 437,401 applicants from all over the world. Just like what Jiang Chen expected, most of the applicants were from western Europe, some were from Russia and even South America. Because of the influence of tradition, applicants from Asia and the Middle East made up only a small percentage. Due to the lack of internet infrastructure in Africa, the number of applicants from there was nearly zero.

Jiang Chen was pleased with this result. It would be against his intentions if he tricked his own people.

After seven days of deliberation, Ayesha chose 117 qualified applicants from the four hundred thousand applicants and forwarded them to Celestial Trade. Immediately after, Barkary responded to the applicants and arranged plane tickets along with necessary documents.

These people boarded different flights and finally arrived in Melbourne before taking a chartered flight to Coro Island.

The third day.

Under the bright sunshine, around one hundred lively figures

walked out of the Coro airport. They had colorful luggage, wore beach clothes and slippers, and looked like a planned field trip group from a high school.

They had varying skin colors, but most of them were white.

The high number of foreigners simultaneously showing up at the airport made locals turn their heads. Even with the increasing number of tourists, this was not a common occurrence.

On the street not far away, Jiang Chen asked Ayesha while facepalming:

"Why did you just choose girls?"

Ayesha tilted her head and used a defensive tone:

"Didn't you tell me to do as I wanted?"

Although Jiang Chen didn't mind, in Ayesha's traditional culture, a qualified wife could not have excessive contact with men other than her husband, let alone lead training where contact was common. Therefore, even if 80% of the applicants were male, she stubbornly chose a hundred females out of the remaining 20%.

Because Jiang Chen trusted Ayesha so much, he didn't even ask for information about the selected applicants beforehand.

Jiang Chen was speechless as he let out a sigh, his head throbbing.

"Okay. That's fine, just train them well... All in all, I'll have to count on you for this since I have to return to the other side soon."

He was prepared to make a speech to the new recruits, but upon seeing all the chatty girls, Jiang Chen lost interest. He left Ayesha in charge and took off by himself.

Staring at Jiang Chen's back, Ayesha nodded with seriousness.

Her serious expression meant that the new recruits would suffer.

Jiang Chen didn't realize that the "Ghost Agents" who could

make people tremble in fear were surprisingly born on this ordinary morning.

...

When the girls got off the plane, they waited at the spot instructed by the email.

For a lot of them, it was their first time leaving the country. Everything here seemed so refreshing to them. They exchanged names on the plane already, but now, they gathered in small groups taking photos and discussing how to spend their 80-day "vacation."

Celestial Trade didn't make them wait for long - three buses appeared in front of them soon after their arrival.

Six female soldiers in kinetic skeletons and an indifferent looking girl walked up to them. Ayesha called their names off her list. She crossed off the seven people who hadn't arrived, divided the remaining people into three groups, and assigned seating plans.

While cheering, the girls loaded their luggage and boarded the bus as if this was a field trip. Then Ayesha and the six female soldiers all boarded their bus and signaled the first bus to start moving.

Ayesha sat at the front of the bus in silence as she glanced at the talkative girls. Although the girls had yet to understand the situation, when they arrived on the island, she would make them understand that this was no joke.

An Asian girl who was sitting beside a window quietly gazed at the scenery outside. In contrast with the rowdy crowd, she looked quiet and a bit left out of the group. The black hair falling over her shoulders looked silky. With her glasses, she really looked like a dedicated student.

"My name is Penny. I'm from California, what about you?"

Beside her was a blonde white girl who was chewing on bubble

gum. She looked at her with a grin. Judging by her appearance, she seemed to have recently graduated from university.

"Zhu Yu, Michigan," Zhu Yu said softly.

Penny's eyes lit up.

"Michigan? My grandma from my mom's side is from there too. I spent three years there... You don't like to talk?"

Zhu Yu smiled peacefully.

"Not exactly. I just don't know what to say right now."

"You could say a lot of things... For example, why did you choose to be an agent?" Penny attempted to make small talk.

Zhu Yu tilted her head as she thought. "Because I want to live a life without studying... What about you?"

"Me?" Penny laughed. "I want to live a life that doesn't involve having an endless amount of parties to attend. Of course, there's also the fifteen thousand salary."

Zhu Yu smiled but didn't speak.

Compared to her introvert personality, Penny was an extrovert.

"Also, what were your test scores?"

Penny was proud of her test scores as all three subjects were above 80. For her, a fresh university graduate, it was an unimaginable achievement.

"91,98,100," Zhu Yu answered honestly.

Penny looked at the high-school-looking girl with an expression like she just saw a ghost.

"God, do you Asians know all the answers from the moment you're born?"

Zhu Yu only smiled and didn't respond.

She received too many compliments like this in school. The

reason why she chose to leave home for this place was to escape her planned-out life.

Although she was an adult now, she had to use a lot of courage to make the decision to leave the life planned out for her by her parents. But she believed that this decision would pay off.

What she didn't know was that, within two short hours, she would start to regret her decision.

Before signing the contracts, Celestial Trade repeatedly reminded the applicants that the job wasn't a joke.

Chapter 420: Spartan's Training

The three buses arrived at a hospital, and the girls were injected with an anti-virus vaccine there. After they were injected, however, they lost consciousness. Faintly, they heard people ask them if they worked for any intelligence service before, and they all responded truthfully.

When they woke up, they realized they were on a boat.

"Ahhh!"

Penny screamed as she checked her clothes. After realizing she hadn't been violated, she seemed to calm down. The other girls on the boat all had the same reaction; any girls woken up from unconsciousness would first check their clothes.

"What happened?' Zhu Yu had a frown.

Although she was an introvert, in this unclear abnormal situation, she still felt a sense of panic.

Then someone started to have a mental breakdown.

"I knew it. This is too weird! They said they were hiring men and women, but only women were selected. I knew there was something fishy about that! I want to go home, dad...." A blonde girl kneeled on the ground crying while grasping her own head in agony.

People started to stare at her.

Needless to say, fear was contagious, especially in an enclosed space.

One girl started crying, another was pounding on the window screaming, someone else tried to turn on their phone but the signal was clearly jammed.

"The door is locked."

Zhu Yu came back to sit beside Penny.

"Why're you so calm? Maybe we will be sold as sex slaves to Africa." Penny's voice carried a hint of trembling fear.

Even if they were sold, it wouldn't be to Africa.

"Because there's no use in panicking." Zhu Yu shook her head and sat down.

She was also afraid, but when she realized that being afraid wouldn't solve anything, she quickly calmed down.

What the girls in the cabin didn't know was that their actions were all being recorded by the camera and viewed by Ayesha in the control room.

<That Asian isn't bad, she controlled her emotions quickly.>

<That Italian is pretty good too, she's trying to comfort her friend.>

<That...>

Other than the camera, the EP on Ayesha's left wrist also displayed everyone's heartbeat.

When they were injected with the truth-telling serum, an electronic collar was put on them. Until the private doctor Jiang Chen hired was familiar with spine neural injection technology, their electronic collar would be replaced with slavery chips.

Ayesha was recording every person's reaction in this crisis situation while focusing on each person's development. This training knowledge was all obtained from her studies in the virtual reality training chamber.

Because of the limited number of training chambers, the new recruits' primary training method would be physical training combined with the effects of the genetic vaccine; the virtual reality helmets would be the secondary method.

After five hours of travel, the vessel docked at an island.

The uninhabited island was five square kilometers in size, located

at the easternmost edge of Pannu Islands. The island was covered in dense vegetation and had a hill in the middle. There was a hotel on the island which was now converted into a military camp.

Six fully armed female soldiers opened the cabin door. Directly in their fearful eyes, they pointed their guns at the girls, forcing them to board the boats heading to the island. After ten trips, all 110 people finally reached the island.

When they arrived on the island, Ayesha, in a captain uniform, appeared in front of the recruits. When they saw it was a girl in charge, everyone felt relieved, but their emotions also exploded.

"Where's our luggage?" A blonde European walked up and questioned Ayesha in front of her face.

Judging by her shirt exposing her belly and her pair of sunglasses, she seemed to be here on vacation.

"You'll get it back after 80 days of training," Ayesha said expressionlessly.

"80 days? You dare to confiscate our luggage?! You can't do that! I want to go home. I'm quitting now!" The blonde girl, who was half a head taller than Ayesha, spoke aggressively.

"The terms were clearly stated in your contract - the moment you became an agent, you gave up your previous nationality and joined our group. You'll obey the order of the group, even if it means making personal sacrifices."

The beauty's face instantly turned white; her lips trembled in fear.

No one read the contract word by word, and even if they did, they merely thought those were typical clauses in a normal contract. Just like new soldier recruits, although their contracts stated that they might die, they wouldn't necessarily be sent to their deaths.

"Th-that contract. That's illegal! You don't have the right-"

"This is Xin; it's legal under Xin's law," Ayesha said apathetically.

"You! Let me go!"

The beauty dashed up and wanted to strangle Ayesha's neck.

But Ayesha merely glared at her before she used one hand to clamp on the beauty's hand decorated with nail polish then swept her legs out from under her.

It was a fluid motion.

Before the beauty could react, she felt her world spinning around her then she was slammed to the ground. At the same time, a pistol was pointed at the back of her head.

Witnessing this scene, a deafening scream erupted from the crowd as they moved away in fear. But behind them was the sea; they had nowhere to go. The boat that delivered them had already left, and the entire island was cut off from the rest of the world.

The beauty's teeth shook, unaware that sand had slipped into her mouth.

"No, no, don't kill me, I'm sorry!"

"The captain has the right to execute any deserters. This is a warning." Ayesha pressed the trigger.

Bang-!

The beauty, curled up on the ground, quivered at the bullet hole two inches away from her face.

Pungent smoke was still coming out of the bullet hole.

"Ahh-!"

An even louder scream came from the girls on the beach, but Ayesha watched everything expressionlessly.

The mission Jiang Chen gave her was to train a group of agents capable of completing any mission; she would do anything to accomplish this.

"Tie her to the tree. Let her go after 24 hours." Ayesha used a volume everyone could hear as she ordered the female soldier beside her.

"Yes, Ma'am!"

The female soldier walked up in front of everyone and dragged the beauty, struggling to escape, to the coconut tree on the beach.

Ayesha closed her eyes.

She wasn't a cruel person, but when the occasion called for it, she wouldn't have any excessive mercy either.

Even if Jiang Chen ordered her to kill everyone here, she would do it without any hesitation.

"This deserted island is 200 nautical miles away from Coro Island. If you think you can swim there, I'll remind you that you may encounter sharks along the way. I believe you have all noticed an electronic collar around your neck by now - it will record your location information and heartbeat. To the person who is trying to cut it off with a nail clipper, you can stop now. Any attempt to destroy the collar will trigger the self-destruction mechanism, just like this.

As she spoke, Ayesha tossed a collar on the ground and threw a dagger at it.

The sharp dagger cut through the collar and it blew up in everyone's face.

"Although the amount of explosive is small, it is more than enough to take a person's head off. Any betrayal will trigger the self-destruction mechanism, so please follow the terms of the contract you signed about your commitment to loyalty."

"You will receive 80 days of training on the island. During this period, you have no freedom or rights; your superiors' orders are absolute."

"80 days later, you will obtain your new identity and officially become a member of the National Security Bureau of Xin. You'll transition into different roles based on your performance. Fifteen thousand USD per month will allow you to have endless Martinis just like Bond. To live that life, it is a given that you have to suffer now..."

Zhu Yu listened to Ayesha's orders and let out a sigh. It sounded like she was reading off a script.

Like she expected, these people were serious.

They followed the six female soldiers acting as the assistant trainers to the hotel on the hill then picked up the keys to their rooms. The girls were excited when they saw the luxury hotel – based on the design, it was probably a five-star hotel.

But by the second day, all their excitement vanished.

They crawled in mud and over uneven rocks and reefs with their hands tied behind their backs, did push-ups beside the beach, and did sit-ups on the burning sand. If someone couldn't withstand the training, the punishment was ten laps around the beach. The electronic collar would record their location information, so any shortcuts or slowing down would be faced with severe punishment.

Although the training was torturing, Ayesha knew clearly that without this training to hone their endurance and will, they would kill themselves during their missions. Although she didn't experience this training herself in the real world, the training in the virtual reality training chamber was no less taxing on her mind.

The training chamber could not be revealed to the public, and the virtual reality helmet wouldn't familiarize people with pain accurately enough, so they had to train physically.

At night, when they dragged their weary bodies back to the hotel,

they were forced to put on the helmet and use it to learn all kinds of theories and practice working with weapons.

When they first saw the famed virtual reality helmet, everyone widened their eyes in astonishment. Especially when they realized the helmet's technological superiority to modern-day VR equipment, their amazement was inexplicable.

But Ayesha didn't give them the leisure to appreciate the helmet after they put it on; the virtual reality training started immediately.

Weapon usage, combat simulation, theory training.

The things learned during sleep would save a lot of time and ammunition.

Other than their cruel training, the girls had to endure disgusting food. It wasn't that the chefs' cooking skills were terrible, but rather, there was no chef on the island.

Every meal was something called Grade-A nutrient supply. Different from the nutrient supply sold on the market for weight loss, it was the "imported" stuff brought by Jiang Chen. Although it didn't taste like anything, it was enough to provide the calories and vitamins needed.

But the fun of eating was no longer there.

The only thing that comforted the girls was their one-hour routine bath before they slept.

The bath water had some kind of odd stuff that looked green. Although the color looked suspicious, it was surprisingly relaxing to bathe inside. The tingling sensation produced felt so good that they wanted to moan.

After their bath, everyone discovered in surprise that their sunburned and cut skin was repaired to be smooth again. The black pigment and toxins in their body seemed to have dissolved in the bathwater since the bathwater turned a dark green by the end.

Other than that, their sore bones became refreshed again as if they received a new skeleton entirely. This kind of relaxation was ten times better than sleeping.

As to what was inside the bathtub, it was the nutrient liquid normally used inside the training chamber. It was also the most expensive kind at 40 crystals per kilogram.

These grain-sized particles were commonly used in the training chamber. Not only would they increase body coordination and reflex, but they could also allow the abilities learned in virtual reality to sync with their real bodies. But even if the nutrient liquid was used alone, it was a great product to alleviate soreness, remove toxins, and strengthen the body.

Jiang Chen invested heavily in these agents.

He knew that the investment would absolutely pay off.

Chapter 421: Exchanging Intelligence

Xin's agent training was all being conducted on the deserted island. Other than boats hauling over necessary supplies every week, the island was separated from the rest of the world. Because of this, in the next 80 days, Jiang Chen didn't have the opportunity to see his adorable Ayesha at all.

But while Ayesha was busy training the female agents, Jiang Chen didn't sit around.

A force of agents alone couldn't make up the entire intelligence department.

Logistics, organizational structure, phone monitoring, customs monitoring... All these would require employees. Of course, while Barkary did most of the work in the formation of these functions, Jiang Chen was also involved in the process.

And the formation of these departments would require the cooperation of internet companies, customs, police and other government agencies, in addition to Jiang Chen's abilities to encourage cooperation between these agencies.

Also, Jiang Chen logged into the email provided by Xie Lei. After he downloaded the file, he brought it to Yao Yao in the apocalypse.

Although there was no password book, due to the computational power of the supercomputer as well as the techniques known by artificial intelligence, Yao Yao only spent two days to complete the deciphering of the file, or rather, "archeology."

Based on what Yao Yao said, it would take a long time, but it wasn't tiring.

After he read through the deciphered document, Jiang Chen had a frown on his face.

Willie society was indeed monitoring him and started doing so approximately three months ago. As to the reason, it wasn't

explained in the document. It only vaguely stated that the purpose was to record the sea activity of Celestial Trade as well as the supply consumption of New Moon Island.

Because the leak was only present for a short period of time without even reaching New Moon Island, the information leaked was all non-sensitive information.

On the other hand, Willie society as an organization had a weak presence in East Asia. Since the organization started off as a NATO puppet used to cause trouble for the Soviets, its major area of operation was mostly in Kane nowadays. If they wanted to penetrate Xin, that would be a wild dream.

After they confirmed the identity of the spy, Jiang Chen transferred the information of the spy to Ivan and captured the mole inside Celestial. But Ivan, unfortunately, told him that the person quit a month ago. Based on the information at customs, the person left the country soon after he resigned.

One month ago happened to be when Xie Lei obtained the information. Perhaps realizing his identity was exposed, the spy immediately fled when he received news that the information leak was uncovered. When Xie Lei sent the information about the email, the spy had escaped already.

There was nothing they could do other than urging Ivan to investigate all the employees carefully. Jiang Chen granted the usage of a small amount of truth-telling serum at critical times to prevent the infiltration of spies again.

It would be a lost cause, but necessary nonetheless.

After these incidents were dealt with, it was nearing the end of July already. Based on the information from Xia Shiyu, the virtual reality's internal test spots were nearing the end of the distribution. The first group of internal test players would arrive in Xin by the end of July at the latest. With that completed, Jiang Chen was prepared to go back to the apocalypse.

But before he left, he planned to teach F a lesson.

He had been waiting for the list Natasha promised him.

Now, there was finally some progress.

...

At the door of the mansion.

"Where's your little beauty?"

"She's busy." Jiang Chen welcomed Natasha inside and smiled.

"For example, training agents at a secret base?" The tip of Natasha's lips curled up as she said this dubiously.

"Who knows?" Jiang Chen neither denied nor agreed.

"We suspect that three Russian citizens went abroad for a special position," Natasha said with narrowed eyes.

"Possible. Although Celestial Trade hired a group of agents, all applicants are adults who maintain their civil abilities," Jiang Chen said, without revealing any information.

It was up to him in Xin to say who was legal or not. Based on Xin's laws, other than the law stating 18 was the legal age, the court could use a source of stable income as a criterion for granting legal status or not. When they arrived in Xin, the future agents would automatically become Xin nationals.

"That's fine; I'm not here to look for people," Natasha said as she stuck two fingers out and took out a list in front of her chest then handed it to Jiang Chen with a grin. "The list you wanted."

Jiang Chen reached for it, but Natasha moved her hand.

With eyebrows raised, Jiang Chen looked at her questioningly.

"Are you not going to express something?" Natasha teased.

That look seemed to be hinting at something.

Unless his brain was shut down, Jiang Chen wouldn't choose to

engage in a deep conversation with a KGB woman.

He curved his lips up. Jiang Chen didn't do as Natasha wished. Instead, he took out his phone.

"Give me your email address."

Natasha looked skeptically at him and told him her email. Soon after, an email was sent to her phone.

"This..." When she opened the email, her eyes were instantly astonished.

"A Willie society agent with identity confirmed escaped from Xin to France a month ago. The rank in the organization is currently unknown, but I think the KGB might be interested. Also, this password book is related to some documents from Veit. You mentioned we can cooperate in intelligence." Jiang Chen just sent the picture and information of the Willie agent as well as the password book Yao Yao created by deciphering Natasha's email.

Although Xin didn't have the ability yet to capture the mole that escaped, a cat that could stretch its paws there would be more than enough.

Jiang Chen found the polar bear also interested in Willie society.

"Of course I'm interested, our agent will warmly welcome him for a shot of vodka in the Black Dolphin Prison. Also, thanks for your password book, this is a great help." Natasha smiled and then walked briskly to the door.

Black Dolphin Prison, the infamous prison. Jiang Chen mourned for the poor guy for half a second.

Although he didn't get to read more about KGB's influence in Western Europe, from Natasha's reaction, the KGB seemed to be confident with capturing the agent whose identity was exposed.

Natasha was walking to the door but stopped in her tracks as if she suddenly remembered something. She turned around and

added:

"Also, the ships and submarines you purchased will arrive in December. You can now organize the crew to receive training in Moscow. You have to take care of your own accommodations and food."

"They will be there in seven days."

"Also, to create trouble for your neighbor, do you need Russian weapons?"

"No, we already solved the weapon problem." A smile surfaced on Jiang Chen's face.

Since it would cause a problem for the UA ally, it was more fun to use UA weapons.

Chapter 422: The Reunion with Robert

MLL Island was the fourteenth biggest island in the world and the second largest island in country F. It was also the island with the most frequent terrorism, hence the name "the home of terrorism."

There were two anti-government militant groups in country F currently, one being "Moro Liberation Front" (MLF) and the other being "Moro National Liberation Front" (MNLF).

The latter was previously the strongest anti-government militant group, but because of internal conflicts and a decrease in foreign support, it broke into three separate divisions with two of the divisions supporting the establishment of autonomy in the MLL area while the other division promoted the separation of MLL from country F to form an independent country. The former group, the MLF, was currently the largest anti-government military force in F with ten thousand people, originating from the MNLF division that supported independence.

Due to the pressure from regional conflicts, the F government signed an initial agreement with the MLF in 2012 and promised to form the "Federation of Moro" on MLL island to the south of country F. What was worth noting was that it wouldn't be an independent country but rather an autonomous area under F with more self-governance.

Then the question was: although country F satisfied MLF's political demands, it completely ignored MNLF's demands. At the same time, even in MLF, there was a loud faction demanding the formation of an independent country, refusing to maintain the "sub-country" status quo.

Thus, after the Aquino government prepared to sign the peace agreement, MLF separated from MNLF. The founder of MNLF, Sauli, immediately expressed his opposition to the signing of the

peace agreement and threatened to start another military conflict.

He obviously wasn't lying as a tragedy occurred in 2013 - 300 MNLF militants attacked a city located in the west of MLL island and engaged in heavy fire with the local forces.

Until 2016, the MLL anti-government militants refused to cease fire.

From Google maps, all of country F was like a shredded puzzle - any force could rip it apart. To unite the divided nation, Aquino had to maintain a strong stance internationally and blow national security issues out of proportion.

Promoting patriotic beliefs in the country to strengthen the cohesion of the nation had been a useful tactic since the age of colonization.

However, it was only useful at best.

In the first step to destroy country F, Jiang Chen planned to start with MLL Island. As the second largest island in country F, not only did the island possess rich mining resources, but it had the most violent ethnic and religious conflicts. He didn't even need to add fuel to the fire himself - he just needed to give the people eager to light up a pile of wood the lighter they ever so desired, and they would frantically rush to light up the bonfire known as a coup.

...

Before Jiang Chen headed to country F, he first flew to South Africa and met his old friend Robert.

Compared to when they met in Iraq, this guy was a lot paler; at least people wouldn't mistake him for an Indian anymore.

His life in Hollywood was sensational. The moment he saw Jiang Chen, he gloated to him about having Hollywood girls keeping his bed warm every day. He then put his hand on Jiang Chen's shoulder and invited him to visit Los Santos someday.

It was easy to become a producer in Hollywood. With money, anyone could hang their name on the credits of a movie. After he helped Jiang Chen with Pannu Islands, he received his "film salary" of one hundred million USD. A few parties in Los Santos later, he became the star of the Hollywood "upper class," and his girlfriend count increased from one to multiple.

After they did some catching up, Robert hailed a taxi and took Jiang Chen to the warehouse located in the rural area of Abington.

It contained 12000 assault rifles and 90 tons of ammo, 1700 RPG-7 rockets and 150 launchers, boxes of M2 grenades, bulletproof vests, night-vision goggles and other equipment.

Also in the corner of the warehouse were twenty-something mortars and thousands of mortar rounds.

Firearms totaling 60 million USD were piled into a mountain in the giant warehouse.

Jiang Chen was shocked by the number of firearms.

It was hard to imagine that Robert managed to hoard this quantity of arms in South Africa; the equipment was enough to equip a fu*cking battalion. Did the South African government really have no clue?

Of course, Jiang Chen was inclined to believe that Robert pre-cleared the way to customs.

"This is the last batch of my supplies." Robert closed the warehouse door and handed the key to Jiang Chen then lit a cigarette. "I've stayed away from the firearms business since Iraq. I was planning to sell it at a discount to the dictator in West Africa, but since you need it, it's yours."

"Not much difference – they'll end up in the hands of a dictator either way." Jiang Chen took the key and joked.

Robert grinned. "Let's have a drink?"

"My plan too." Jiang Chen gladly accepted his invitation.

They found a restaurant in the rural area of Abington city then ordered a table full of South African dishes and a few bottles of beer. They began to chat.

Robert had many interesting experiences to share partly because he was humorous, but mostly because of his wealth of experience.

This guy started the firearms business with Mexican gangs when he was 17. One day, by chance, he managed to connect with the national security force. He went from being in the firearms business in Veit to selling crude oil in Iraq, from being the kingpin of the industry to being blacklisted by the FBA. Because he met Jiang Chen in Sanya who was eager to get rid of the gold, he, fortunately, survived the FBA's master plot to kill him through other hands. That was what made him choose to leave the industry and become a producer.

As they chatted, Jiang Chen exclaimed that this guy's experience could be compiled into a book.

"Once I'm 50, I'll film an autobiography. I have the name already: let's call it 'The Merchant of Death,' burp-" Robert said with high spirits.

"With how fast you spend money, you'll have to pick up your old gig by 40."

Robert grinned then he shook the cup in his hand. "Eh? Not at all. If you manage to become a big deal in Hollywood, the future is not less bright than trading in firearms. Have you heard that the <Avatar 2> that will be in theatres by December? Remember to look for my name in the credits."

[Will normal people see that? Without post-credit scenes, most people leave by the start of the credits.]

Jiang Chen didn't want to discourage his old friend's passion for the film industry, so he diverted the topic and asked nonchalantly:

"Where's Nick? Why didn't he come along?"

"He's in the acting industry now." Robert chuckled.

"Acting?" Jiang Chen thought he heard wrong.

"That's right, he's been with me for so many years. Now that I'm not in the business anymore, I couldn't let him starve. His fighting ability is great, a natural for action movies. I recommended him to a director that I know pretty well. After a few years of training, maybe he will become a top Hollywood star one day. Anyway, it's a lot better than being a bodyguard." Robert laughed while he burped.

"Acting in films? Not a bad exit option."

Jiang Chen raised his cup with a smile and toasted Robert.

After the dinner, it was seven in the evening already. Because there was still a party to attend in the afternoon, Robert booked a flight back to Los Santos at ten at night, so the two said goodbye.

Jiang Chen watched the taxi Robert was in to leave then headed to the warehouse.

He confirmed that there were no suspicious figures following him before he shut the door.

With the warehouse full of firearms, he took a deep breath, put on the bracelet Lin Lin gave him, then opened the storage dimension.

He left the warehouse after he transferred everything to the other side.

With the door locked, he broke the key into two pieces and threw it in the trash. Then he left the dark alley without turning his head.

His flight was that night too.

The next stop, country F.

Chapter 423: Dismember Country F

Country F, in a remote town on an island.

In a small restaurant, three F citizens in grey sweaters sat around a table.

"What time is it?" The man with darker skin glanced at the door and asked his companions in a low voice.

The person being asked looked at his watch. "It's already 1."

The chubby man that didn't speak inhaled deeply and anxiously pulled on his collar.

"Santos, do you think that person will come?"

"I don't know, I don't trust the Han," Santos said emotionlessly.

The chubby guy moved his fat lips, didn't comment on Santo's words and just leaned on the chair. As to why they would appear here, it had to do with a phone call they received last night.

The people who sat here were all top officials of MNLF. Although most of the force of MNLF was stationed on MLL Island, their headquarter was on a small island next to MLL Island.

Santos was just about to doze off when an unknown number reached his phone. After careful deliberation, he cautiously picked up the phone. But when it went through, the person on the other side didn't introduce themselves and directly said he wanted to provide weapons for MNLF.

From the accent, the person on the phone should be Han.

To the olive branch extended by the Han, Santos was somewhat cautious. In Country F, 1% of the Han controlled over 60% of the economy. No one liked to be around their wealthy neighbors.

But that person's offer was too hard to reject.

It was enough weapons to equip an army.

What shocked him, even more, was that the person said the weapons were transferred into the country already.

With the weapons, MNLF's shortage of arms would be significantly alleviated. He could quickly build a force of 7000 from his supporters and increase the strength of the guerrillas substantially.

But what made Santos cautious was that it was a Han that made the offer, and the Han knew all the details about him, he even stated the hotel room he stayed in.

Of course, to prevent his phone number from being tracked, Jiang Chen didn't state which hotel in which city.

Cold sweat rolled off his forehead. Due to the heated internal conflict, Santos finally agreed to his request to meet. The police didn't come to his door; it at least explained that the person on the phone didn't have any hostility.

Therefore, this scene happening now occurred.

After he secretly deployed soldiers around the restaurant, Santos and his two close officials sat in the restaurant. They sat in the private room the person arranged, ordered two dishes, and carefully waited for the other person to come.

But it was already the time they had arranged.

"He fooled us," the chubby guy said.

Santos closed his eyes and deliberated for a moment. "Wait ten more minutes. If no one comes, we'll leave."

But just as he finished his sentence, someone knocked on the door.

The person with the watch instinctively moved to his waist, seeing Santos shake his head, he put his hands back on the table again.

"Please come in," Santos spoke to the door.

The door opened, but it was a ten-year-old boy that came in.

Seeing the people in the room all look at him in surprise, the boy timidly brought out the tablet.

"Someone asked me to bring this here."

"Where is that person?" Santos gazed with deadliness into the boy's eyes.

With a frightened expression on the boy's face, the boy shook his head fiercely. His hands holding the tablet trembled uncontrollably with words rapidly spitting out. "I don't know, he had a mask on. He gave me 10 USD and asked me to bring this here."

Then the boy carefully placed the tablet on the sofa beside the door and he quickly ran out.

Without regard to the boy, Santos signaled the chubby guy to bring the tablet over.

And then, the phone rang again.

Seeing the caller, Santos picked up and said with a low but menacing voice, "What tricks are you playing with me?"

Without wasting a word, Jiang Chen directly said.

"There is a map on the tablet, the password is 1234, you can try to open it."

Though frowning, Santos still followed the instruction and opened the map.

"And then?"

"There are eight armories in total. They are hidden in the rural area at the southern area of the country," Jiang Chen said with eyes narrowed.

"Where are the armories?" Santos asked briskly.

"You notice the checkboxes beside the map? For every mission

you complete, I'll provide you with a password, every time you input a password, you can unlock the location of the 'treasure.'"

[What the fu*k does that mean?]

Santos took a moment to process this while he cursed in his mind. "What's the purpose of you doing this?"

"I'm providing you with firearms and cash to support your cause, not as a chip in negotiation with the government force. I want to see you separate MLL island from the country's territory. Do you understand what I mean?"

With his eyes lighting up, Santos attempted to convince him.

"I promise I will bring Moro people to independence, you can absolutely trust me!"

"Haha, the most worthless thing in the world is trust, especially to two strangers." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Then why should we trust you?" Santos said with gloom in his voice.

"So I decided to pay first." Jiang Chen shrugged. "The first password, ad2ge#\$\$@... After you input the password, you will unlock the location of an armory, and also a mission brief. Complete it. After I confirm it on the news, I will tell you the next password."

"That's all I have to say, good luck."

"Wait!" Seeing that the person was about to hang up, Santos who just inputted the password wanted to stop him, but only silence followed.

After stuffing his phone into his pocket, Santos looked on the tablet with gloominess on his face.

"Boss, what do we do?" The chubby guy asked in a low voice.

Santos looked speechlessly at the red dot located in Ludink town. He was silent. Then he said.

"Kard, take people to the location on the map."

"Yes." The man with the watch stood up and memorized the location on the map in his head.

Santos closed his eyes and sunk into the chair.

He didn't like the feeling of being manipulated. But the generous offer was irresistible. If Jiang Chen provided all the arms to him at once, he would indeed choose the safer option. For example, first, form a force, and prepare for a year before he launched an attack.

Not long after, his phone rang.

He picked up with Kard's tense voice.

"Boss, we found it."

"How much stuff is inside," Santos said in an urgent tone.

Kard's throat felt dry, "There are bulletproof vests, night vision goggles, and even C4s. We also found 2000 rifles, 40 boxes of rifle ammo, 10 RPG 7 with 100 rounds... and five mortars, also with 100 rounds. As well as five million USD in cash."

Firearms! Five million USD!

Santos sat up abruptly. The hand holding the phone shook violently. "Immediately arrange people to transport it to our gathering spot."

"Understood!" Kard nodded.

Kard was his confidant, he trusted his loyalty.

He hung up the phone and ignored the question on the chubby guy's face. He scanned the mission brief on the tablet.

Target: city pj. Destroy the police station, power government building and kill at least 80 forces.

Santos licked his dry lips. He felt his heart beat faster.

If he followed it, it would be the biggest attack planned by MNLF since 2013. And with the firearms and cash support, MNLF could

easily conduct this attack.

But then, there would be no backing out.

A trace of hesitation crossed his eyes, but it was quickly replaced by fervent. He made up his mind.

It was time for a major headline.

Chapter 424: Smoke and Dust

"Yesterday, the anti-government militant launched a surprise attack on the city of Gadian, west of MLL Island. The attack destroyed four police stations, two bus terminals, two government buildings and two power stations in the city. This caused a massive outage in the city center."

"The two sides exchanged heavy fires in the north side of the city which caused 311 casualties with 101 dead. Five hours after the attack, the MNLF was declared responsible for the attack and stated their commitment to the liberation of MLL Island.

"Based on our sources, a total of 1000 militants participated in the attack. The anti-government militants were equipped with M4A1 assault rifles, night vision goggles as well as other UA weapons. They also possessed large quantities of RPG-7 anti-armor weapons as well as mortars and other heavy weapons. The attack could be the biggest attack in 30 years. The sophistication of the weapons even surpassed the local government force. While the source of the MNLF's weapons remains a mystery."

"12 hours after the attack, the Aquino government denounced the attack and condemned the organization that provided the anti-government force with the weapons. They'll consider the possibility of sending an armored force to clear out the local guerillas at MLL Island and search for the perpetrator behind the attack at all cost."

"Experts stated that this attack marked the collapse of the peace agreement reached between the F government and MLF in 2012. The Aquino government sending a force to MLL Island may receive the opposition of the MLF under the peace agreement. But without increasing the military presence, the local stability may continue to deteriorate which will put the Aquino government in a tough spot."

"Military analysts suggested that the F armor force could not utilize its full strength in the rough terrains of MLL Island. Even with the armored force, the opposition is equipped with anti-tank weapons which would drastically reduce the effect of the deployment. The Aquino government's primary concern is to understand the source of the anti-government militant's weapon. They must strengthen their border control to prevent the situation from further deteriorating."

"The UA spokesperson stated that UA will continue to follow the development of this attack and is willing to assist in the investigation of the weapon source. When the reporter questioned if UA is willing to send out ground forces to assist country F in its military actions against the MLNF, UA stated that they would not consider intervening with country F's domestic affair. However, they don't rule out the possibility of sending out reconnaissance drones to support country F's military actions."

"From 7 o'clock today, the Ministry of Tourism issued a red alert on traveling to country F and recommend travelers with a plan to travel change or cancel their plans, or avoid tension areas where guerrillas may be active."

"Yang Yong reporting at the scene."

The TV showed the footage of government forces firing behind covers. Although they didn't manage to capture footage of the attackers, from the grenades flying, the debris left by the bullets, as well as the unclear screams in the background, it was more than enough to know the gruesomeness of the attack.

There were constant explosions and smoke rising in the distance. It was nearly impossible to avoid civilian casualties by using a killing tool like mortar in the city center. The government force must be cognizant of the consequences of accidentally wounding civilians, but the anti-government militants didn't need to have the same concern.

A few stretchers moved by the street and ran to the temporary medical clinic set up beside the armored vehicle. The windows to the shops on the road were all shattered, people taking advantage of the situation swarmed into the store and grabbed whatever they could.

A lot of people will die.

But Jiang Chen will not seek forgiveness.

He was not coldblooded, but instead, country F was asking for it. They selected the reckless government and promoted reckless behaviors among the civilians, and then the attack on Coro Island.

Everything was just the price they must pay.

Jiang Chen leaned on the sofa and turned off the TV.

It looks like Santos made the right choice, saving Jiang Chen a lot of trouble. The MNFL's guerrillas have been in a state of conflict with the F government for 44 years, and it was the first time they received military assistance of this scale. They finally left their mark in history.

Of course, Jiang Chen had no positive feelings toward the MNLF or F. He only needed this pawn to separate the annoying neighbor. Once Moro was entirely independent, he will pocket the rich Iron, Copper, and Gold reserves on MLL Islands...

Jiang Chen took out the phone he bought at a random store on the street, texted a message, and sent the next password to Santos.

Since he already fulfilled his promise, he'll not be stingy on the reward. With the second batch of equipment, the MNLF will upgrade to the next level.

Just like Jiang Chen expected, he only needed to throw the lighter into their hands before they lit the zoo on fire.

At the same time, the satellite phone on the table began to ring.

Without thinking, he knew it must be Robert. The satellite phone

was Robert's special line for special services and was absolutely secure in theory.

When he picked up, the old friend's voice came through.

"My friend at FBI asked me for a chat."

"What did you talk about?"

"Just random things, for example, what I did when I went to South Africa? Who did I see?" Robert said with a wry smile.

"Oh? What did you tell him?"

"What could I say? I said I went to take care of the shell company there... Buddy, I'm not joking, but you went pretty far this time." Robert took a deep breath and lowered his voice. "Terrorism has always been the bottom line for the Rainbow House, especially in their allies' territory. Although they haven't agreed on sending in the ground force, the CIB agents are already investigating."

Jiang Chen contemptuously scorned.

The definition of terrorism has always been a double standard. The anti-government militants in UA's allies border are terrorists and separatists, and the anti-government militants in UA's enemy territory are freedom fighters, nationalists.

The CIB agents? Santos doesn't even know who he traded with. Especially since Jiang Chen pointed out his whereabouts were exposed, as long as he is not dumb, he will hide carefully. The CIB won't be able to catch him.

Robert sensed the contemptuousness from Jiang Chen's scorn and sighed.

"Okay, I'm not calling to ask you to stop, I just want to remind you to be careful. I wasn't the only one being asked to have a chat, a few other arms dealers still in the scene were also there. Transporting arms from South Africa to Southeast Asia would have to go through multiple countries' airspace, and thus it is

impossible to do it without leaving a trace. There won't be enough time to do it by freight, so I'm not too suspicious... Although I don't know how you transported it to country F, instinct tells me that it has something to do with you."

"But I will never admit." Jiang Chen laughed.

"Never admit." Robert said sternly, "Never let the Capitol know that it was you that did it, or we are both dead. Dammit, if I knew you were going to do this, I would have sold it to the dictator in West Africa. Now, there are a few more thousand people that would die indirectly because of me."

In the end, Robert's voice was dumbfounded.

"Don't worry, I did this discreetly. Didn't you say you wanted to shoot a biography called "The Merchant of Death"? Now I added another event to it," Jiang Chen comforted him in a casual voice.

After hanging up, Jiang Chen stretched, threw the phone to the side, and got up.

It was already to the end of July. He'll have to return to the apocalypse by early August at the latest. He missed Sun Jiao and them quite dearly after being away for so long.

But before his returns, he still had a few things to do.

He took his private boat to New Moon Island and found Ivan who was training new recruits. He did a brief audit of the soldiers' ability before he told him to recruit 300 sea crews as soon as possible.

Before he left, Jiang Chen gave the phone that he used to communicate with Santos to Ivan and told him to read the news in the morning and then provide the password based on the mission status Santos was able to complete.

Since he would be in the apocalypse for a while, he should give the task of "causing a stir" to someone he trusted.

After all this, Jiang Chen headed to Coro Island and transported the iron and aluminum produced in July to the apocalypse. It was too inefficient to transport the ores, it was much better to transport the processed product.

With this batch of steel, there was no need to worry about the supplies for the factories in the apocalypse. There were plenty of iron and aluminum to forge the C-type steel, and the extra could be sold to the factories in the Sixth Street.

Then, he also made a visit to headquarter of Future Biology to understand the sales of nutrient supply.

All in all, this month's financial result was stellar.

A profit of one hundred million USD for the month!

The 200,000 boxes of nutrient supply produced around the clock were delivered in two batches; the remaining 200,000 would be completed by month end. With Future 1.0 and massive retail chains like Walmart's promotion, nutrient supply easily entered people's sight.

Pure natural green degreasing liquid food, lose 30 pounds in 30 days. With Emma's advertisement, based on the feedback from the retailers, the sales of the nutrient supply were extremely pleasing. All the retailers increased their order and the bigger chains even offer to obtain exclusive sales right to the nutrient supply at a high price, but Tao Ming rejected the offer.

The reason was simple, there was no reason to abandon an entire forest for a single tree. Selling the exclusive sales right meant that they would have to give up on the e-commerce platform and other retailers. It was not a good trade.

After Tao Ming reported the sales number, he urged Jiang Chen to increase capacity on the production line. Orders flew to Future Biology like snowflakes as all the workers in the nutrient supply factory were pushed to their limit, but still unable to meet the

increase in demand.

Based on Zhan Shujie's estimate, to meet the production demand, the production equipment and seaweed farm must at least double.

Jiang Chen nodded. The organic converters were hard for him to obtain.

When he moved the production equipment and ten tons of inducers to the warehouse on Ange Island, Jiang Chen left for Coro Island. The rest of the hiring and other tasks will be taken care of by Zhan Shoujie.

But on his way home, Xia Shiyu called.

When Jiang Chen heard her voice, he was extremely delighted

The internal test plan was finally completed!

Chapter 425: Godly Land Internal Testing

Wei Wendong, known as Shadow King, was an honorary member of the King's Esports Club as part of the League of Legends team runner-up in the S4 series. After the S4 he chose to retire from the scene and became a streamer, but surprisingly had a lackluster performance in the streaming world.

But because he grasped on the historical opportunity of <New Era> coming online, he boldly chose to become a mobile game streamer that didn't seem to have a future. He finally used <New Era>'s influence, stunning game content, and first mover advantage to become the leader in New Era streaming.

Right now, New Era's market penetration had already far surpassed Heartstone, and even edging out the PC platform League of Legends, his influencing in the streaming world obviously increased because of that as his follower on Weibo was comparable to his old captain.

Therefore, half of his achievement today was because of Future Technology. So to the name that changed the lives of many, he had a strong connection to the company.

Just sometimes ago, Future 1.0 suddenly had a pushup notification which perked his interest.

<Dear valued users, Future Technology's current under-development VR MMORPG <Godly Land> is in internal testing phase! To support the users' continuous support, Future Technology decided to draw 2000 internal testing players to the tourist destination Pannu Islands, tour the beautiful Pacific and experience the astonishment of the era-defining MMORPG.>

The internal testing phase will be two months. In this period, the player can obtain 2000 USD in monthly salary with flight and accommodations covered by Future Technology. After the internal test, participants will receive a collector game helmet. The helmet

will be sent to participants on the first day of the official release.

At the same time, the name used in the internal test will be retained in the official release.

Virtual reality MMORPG? Free international travel?

Disregarding the international aspect first.

With the release of this news, it erupted among domestic forums as the netizens all expressed Future Technology's lunatic move.

The 2000 USD monthly salary, no one really cared about. People who were not dumb all knew that by being the first in obtaining information about the game, guilds would kill for you to join them. Even if you didn't join a guild, with the experience through the internal test, it was easy to make a living through the game.

The profit by that time would far exceed 4000 USD! Even the most foolish person would know.

Just take New Era, for example, professional players could make ten thousand easily through taking players to level up and selling gold. If they obtained legendary equipment, rich players would often pay millions just to get their hands on it.

Almost no one questioned the fact that the Godly Land had a future without a ceiling.

On a forum:

"Virtual reality MMORPG? I can't believe I can see this in my lifetime? Let me go calm down first."

"Are the officials of Future Technology stupid? Playing games with this kind of technology? If this is used to train soldiers, our soldiers' combat ability will increase by ten levels! The military budget for training would be reduced by 50%! But you use it to make games, what a disgrace!"

"What a dumba*s!"

"The second comment poster just connected to the Internet?

Virtual reality technology is already mature overseas. Plextek's virtual reality equipment is already used in training by the British forces, but it has yet to replace the whole training process. I don't know where you got the ten levels of 50% data from. Also, Eve's VR equipment could already simulate intergalactic travel, if VR is as insane as you have described, why don't you go up in space?"

"I just want to know where the public beta is! I'm not selected. QQ."

"Asking for internal testing spot for one million RMB, message if interested."

"The internal spot is connected with your ID, you really can't buy IQ with money."

"..."

The posts on the game's official website already exceeded twenty thousand on the first day. It was evident that the players were all eager for the virtual reality MMORPG.

As to the game itself, Future Technology left enough mystery to it and only released a one minute CG as well as a portal for the draw. Before the draw, the players must confirm that they can head to Pannu Islands. If the player cannot attend, they will be banned for ten years once the game is online.

With anxiousness, Wei Wendong pressed the button.

With the number of participants in the draw continuously increasing, he didn't have too much hope. But happiness suddenly came around the corner when he managed to obtain a spot!

When he saw the notification <Please confirm the availability during internal testing period>, he pressed yes without hesitation, then uploaded the screenshot to Weibo which instantly caused an explosive reaction among his fans.

<Damn! The Shadow King is switching games?"

"What about streaming?"

"The Shadow King definitely did butt stuff with the president, Jiang Chen. No way he would be this lucky!"

"Brother Shadow King, could you bring me there, I'm cute, and I can warm the bed..."

Wei Wendong looked at the fans' envious replies as he lips curled up. He ignored the comments filled with jealousy. While his vanity was fulfilled, he thought about how to grasp the opportunity.

The only information provided by the game designer was a one-minute cinematic trailer with an ancient Oriental and Western background. There were warriors, archers, mages, thieves, and a lot more.

In New Era, Wei Wendong chose an archer, but he planned to change his style and play as a mage. Since it was virtual reality MMORPG, the mage would definitely feel more powerful compared to physical damage dealers! Anyone could swing a sword and shoot an arrow in real life, but who could throw a fireball?

But just as he was planning how he would spend the two months, his phone began to ring.

"Who is calling me this late?" Wei Wendong glanced at the darkness outside and picked up his phone.

When he saw the caller, he was stunned. It was his formal boss calling him, the big boss of King, Wang Tao! Wei Wendong was deliberating on what made the boss call him personally as they didn't have any contact for over a year.

"Hello?"

"Haha, Little Dong, do you still remember me?" Wang Tao said with a smile.

"Of course, how is Boss Wang doing?" Wei Wendong chatted with his old boss.

"Doing well, oh, do you have any interest in returning to Kings?" Wang Tao asked.

[Return to Kings? Play League of Legends? Who plays that anymore?]

Wang Tao seemed to have sensed Wei Wendong was about to reject as he immediately dropped a mega bomb.

"Twenty million, yearly salary."

Wei Wendong held his breath.

[Twenty million, damn, two times the premium!]

Even as a streamer with the highest earning potential, Misaya was only worth twenty million. Although Wei Wendong's influence and reputation were not far off, New Era was not a game that could easily pump up the viewership as competitive games do. It is less common for the viewers to give "666 (1)" compared to LoL, therefore his yearly income was only nine million.

"But boss Wang, I don't want to scam you, my LoL skill has already-" Wei Wendong squeezed the words out of his mouth.

The offer was attractive, but he knew his skills well.

"Who is asking you to play LoL." Wang Tao laugh, he paused, before he asked in a quite reserved voice, "Is the screenshot on your Weibo real?"

"Screenshot?" Wei Wendong came to a realization.

Kings made the wrong judgment call when New Era first came online. Wang Tao initially thought the game had a great promotion with great graphics, but it was still lackluster compared to the dominate LoL kingdom.

Therefore, while Kings did form a New Era division in the beginning, it didn't invest in too many resources. But then, once the guilds that invested heavily rose with the rise of New Era, Kings began to regret their decision, but it was too late. A bunch of

esports clubs with a name no less than Kings spawned out. A club named Conquerors was almost edging Kings out as the dominant club in Hua.

Therefore this time, Wang Tao would not miss the <Godly Land> ship!

Everyone knew that the big trend on internet development was virtual reality. PC games were on a downward trend, and Future Technology was the leader in domestic artificial intelligence technology. With the release of this Godly Land, it was combing their competitive edges together. The throne of Tencent's empire might not be so secure after all.

But unfortunately, none of Kings member obtained an internal test spot.

Although Future Technology provided some spots for the major guilds in New Era, the spots were mostly targeted towards guilds with major influence. What made Wang Tao frustrated was that the Kings' Guild had no influence in New Era at all.

He threw in some money a few months ago, but it only managed to bring the guild to above average. Compared to the top five in the server, there was still a noticeable difference.

Fortunately, Wei Wendong's Weibo post made him see hope.

Professional player plus internal test participant! It was easy to foresee that this guy's future in the Godly Land was bright. Therefore, Wang Tao immediately called him and extended an offer to the ex-member.

Wang Tao coughed, used a serious tone, and spoke to Wei Wendong with sincerity.

"The Kings Esports Club sincerely wishes for your return and bring Kings our formal glory. Also, you'll be the guild leader of "Godly Kings", are you interested?"

The guild leader of the Kings guild.

Wei Wendong's eyes widened. He didn't think the always cautious formal boss would bet on such a risky move.

-With Kings' resources as well as his own professional ability, and the experience as an internal player...

He took a deep breath as he felt his heart pumped furiously.

The feeling of one step to heaven was just like this.

"Yes. I'm very interested!"

"Welcome home, my Shadow King." Wang Tao laughed out loud.

Chapter 426: The Open Ceremony on the Cruise

From Wanghai to Melbourne, then boarding a luxury cruise from the port of Melbourne to Xin.

The luxurious cruise contained a self-serving restaurant, bar, pool, gym, net cafe, store, medical center, club, and a luxurious grand hall big enough to serve 2500 guests. With twelve levels and exquisite interior design, the place was not just a six-star hotel, but also a giant amusement park.

Inside the grand hall of the cruise, every single one of the 2000 players attended. Everyone here was a diehard fan of Future Technology.

When selecting players, although it was stated to be equal in opportunity, Future Technology did include some indicators for guidance. For example, players with longer play time in New Era were more likely to be chosen; the same was for players with higher VIP.

Other than the 2000 players, the remaining people were staff members on the cruise and the employees of Future Technology. Because it was not a news conference and only a ceremony for internal testing, Xia Shiyu rejected the media's request and just arranged three Future 1.0 news reporters to record the ceremony and conduct some interviews with the players.

Full tables of champagne, courteous servers.

In the grand hall, the luxurious atmosphere made Wei Wendong gasp for air. Although his income was close to tier one celebrities, people who play games typically stayed at home without spending too much time outside. Before he came, he prepared a rather expensive suit, he felt it didn't match the environment.

But when he saw the players around him completely stunned, he

quickly got used to the feeling.

Compared to the other poor suckers, he was an elite among them. A lot of people wore just a T-shirt in the middle of the grand hall; they were the definition of not understanding the atmosphere.

Among the players, he surprisingly saw a lot of familiar faces.

For example, a pro player from the Conquerors guild, and a streamer on the same platform as him

Since only 1500 spots were open globally, the remaining 500 spots were all gifted by Future Technology to guilds with influence or to streamers with high influence.

Just as he was about to chat with the people he knew, the lights suddenly dimmed.

People began to whisper to each other while waiting for the official start of the ceremony.

Then, on the previously dimmed podium, a spotlight suddenly appeared. Jiang Chen in a suit walked in confident strides from the back of the stage to the podium. The light followed his footsteps and presented him in front of the crowd.

Jiang Chen came emptyhanded to the stage. But behind the podium was a giant 1050 inch screen and in the middle of the screen was Future Technology's logo.

<We lead the future>

When Wei Wendong saw him, he widened his eyes.

Jiang Chen!

Jiang Chen was known as the Bill Gates from the east, the president of Future Technology.

"Wow, look, look, it's Jiang Chen!" A streamer with big boobs gently covered her mouth as she dragged on to the new friend she just met and exclaimed with excitement.

"... So young." A female pro gamer blushed.

"The president of Future Group is personally here," a player said in shock.

".,.."

The players below the stage all took out their phone in excitement and snapped photos of Jiang Chen.

To the excitement of the players, Jiang Chen smiled along and said in a joking voice, "You can take photos, just remember to turn off flash, or else once the internal testing is over, I won't give you a signature."

Because Jiang Chen spoke in Han, a lot of international players were confused, but those who understood laughed.

The female player with flash on turned off the flash with her face completely red.

Seeing the atmosphere was appropriate, Jiang Chen signaled everyone to quiet down.

It was not the first time he came up without a script.

Perhaps he was used to people being in awe, with the 2000 something people in front of him, he didn't feel any emotional fluctuations.

He calmly adjusted the earpiece in his ear and smiled at the players. "To all the players attending this ceremony from all over the world, welcome!"

Just as he finished his sentence, the triangular logo on the screen exploded, the explosion formed into millions of dust particles and turned into words.

Those were translations in English, French, German, Italian, Russian, Korean, and Arabic!

The international players were all complaining in their mind that they didn't understand Han. But when the words were displayed,

they finally felt relived.

Then, their eyes widened.

Real-time voice translation!

It had been a technical challenge to be able to conduct real-time voice translation through a computer. Although Microsoft launched a software called Touch-Talk, the software was weak for long and fast sentences. But the technology displayed by Future Technology was obviously not on the same level as Touch-talk.

It not only could accurately translate in a noisy environment, it could automatically translate to reflect the tone of the message!

"Where is the applause?" Jiang Chen smiled.

The stunned players were dragged back into reality and all gave Jiang Chen a thunderous applause.

When they thought about it, they were no longer shocked. Since it was a tech company that created an artificial intelligence like Little White, it would not be too tough for the artificial intelligence to do this.

Jiang Chen stood on the stage and waited for the applause to stop with a smile. He then continued, "Today, Future Technology will bring everyone an era-defining technology. Let us witness this historical moment together..."

Jiang Chen raised his right hand. Light particles emerged and became concentrated in his opened palm and formed a motorcycle helmet. The people below the stage all had their eyes wide open and shockingly witnessed this moment.

Hologram technology!

...Okay, it was not a fascinating technology. But it was indeed a stunning performance by Future Technology, the helmet hovering in Jiang Chen's hand seemed to really be there.

"Virtual reality. Future Technology has always been striving for

innovation, whether in software or hardware. I know all of you shouldn't be unfamiliar with virtual reality games, even when you are dreaming, you still fantasize about having a pair of wings to take you anywhere, to be able to be part of an exciting adventure on a continent filled with swords and magic."

He stared at the faces with expectation and enthusiasm and smiled pleasingly.

"Now, I am pleased to announce to everyone, this is no longer a fantasy, it is a now a reality!"

Everyone held their breath with excitement and hope emerged from their eyes.

"Now, let us first see a video, and get to know the virtual reality helmet named "Phantom." Jiang Chen walked down from the stage and sat on the open seat reserved for him.

The translation on the giant screen faded, just like waves on a lake returning to peace.

Immediately, a man with a figure similar to Jiang Chen appeared in the middle of the screen, he put on the helmet and lied on the bed.

The scene flashed, in the blink of an eye, it changed from God's view to "Jiang Chen's" first-person perspective and was observing the inside of the helmet.

"Activated."

The pitch black internal helmet screen suddenly lit up. Countless particles flashed forward in a three-dimensional manner. Everything had clarity as if it really existed.

"Iris verification program activated..."

"Registered as a new user."

"Registering..."

"Genetic code registered, please set the name."

"..."

Till this point, the players' emotions were rather stable without anyone being shocked. Right now, Future Technology had yet to demonstrate the difference between this VR equipment and the rest of the VR equipment on the market.

But by the next second, everyone was stunned.

The light on the screen began to turn dark, it was if people closed their eyes and fell asleep.

Suddenly, the scene cleared up. An epic symphony played, butterflies flew and stopped on the finger of an elegant elf. She looked towards the world outside of the forest; it was a human state.

The sharp blade edge was accompanied by a soul-stirring war hammer chant. Soldiers roaring leaped at the Ogres defense line... but then was shattered by the wolf knights' iron hoofs.

In the distant mountain, dragons roared. A dragon knight flew down from the peak. The scorching fire unleashed its fury and tore down the defense of the Ogres.

Everything seemed so real.

What shocked everyone was not the vividness of the pictures, but the feeling of being in the game.

Could it be...

"The virtual reality helmet in novels! It is not the garbage VR equipment on the market. You could fly!"

"God, this is too unbelievable! This astonishing technology is born in the hands of a Han company."

"Nani? Isn't this the NERVGear in Sword Arts Online? And Future Technology created it!"

Jiang Chen patiently waited for the players to unleash their astonishment and exhilaration, waiting until the crowd began to

die down. Then he raised his hand and signaled the crowd to look at him.

"The video included how to use the Phantom virtual reality helmet, as well as the complete version of the cinematic trailer. As to the exact content of the game, please wait until you arrive at Pannu Islands and use your own eyes to experience the beauty of this virtual reality MMORPG."

"Now, I announce the official start of the two-month internal test!"

"Please enjoy your time on the cruise, the food and alcohol are complimentary. This is Future Technology's way of saying thanks to all participants from all over the world."

"Thank you."

As the last syllable finished, an explosive applause abruptly bellowed towards the stage as Jiang Chen left the stage.

The grand hall was lit up again, and elegant music began to play as people were finally dragged back to reality.

"So handsome..." A girl in a long dress holding her phone said while staring at the podium.

The blush on her cheeks could either be from the makeup she used, or the fantasy in her mind.

Wei Wendong not far away mocked in his mind.

"The light is already on, but people are still in their dreams."

Chapter 427: Investment Euthanism

Young, rich, "single," easy going, Jiang Chen naturally became the center of the ceremony.

With a bunch of girls surrounding him, a lot of female streamers with "excellent balls" chatted with him which made the male players all envious of the scene.

It made sense since if they could manage to dig a wealthy man like this, it was not working how many years less, it was working how many lives less.

But at Jiang Chen's level, the typical girls didn't interest him anymore. He nobly accepted the toasts of the beauty, but to the obvious hint, he didn't suggest anything.

Because he only knew one foreign language, he didn't chat much with the international players. Instead, he spoke with some of the renowned domestic players.

A player called Wei Wendong suggested to him important events such as annual or monthly tournaments. Once the MMORPG has a competitive element, player's desire to practice skills and the subsequent user stickiness would drastically increase.

Jiang Chen took the suggestion to heart and indicated he would consider adding it in the public beta.

A lot of times, experienced players may know more than the developers about the pros and cons of a game. Even if they haven't started playing it yet, at least they know what they want to play.

A British player also asked Jiang Chen about the price of the helmet and the pay model of the game. Jiang Chen didn't answer it as he only stated that before the game's official launch, Future Technology would reveal the information during a press conference.

After spending half an hour in the grand hall, seeing that there

were more and more people gathering around him, Jiang Chen had no choice but to leave.

He felt that if he stayed any longer, it would become a press conference instead.

But there was one question he didn't answer.

It was whether the game was made with VR equipment such as sensor vest and gloves, or the immersive virtual reality described in anime, novels, and movies.

Jiang Chen only had one response.

"You will understand everything the moment you put on the helmet."

...

The cruise was not heading straight to Coro Island. The trip was to go slowly from Melbourne toward the coral sea, dock in the Solomon Islands, and then go through New Guinea waters, before heading to Coro Island.

The three days cruise trip cost Jiang Chen seven million USD. It was partially to create news to hype up the game's release, partially to provide advertisements for tourism at Coro Island.

When he returned to his room, he immediately lied down, stretched out on the bed, and began to burp. Then he loosened the tie around his neck.

[What does it feel like to be drunk off of champagne?]

He didn't know whether he was burping because of the alcohol, or because of being too full.

His phone rang. He took out the phone.

It was Xia Shiyu.

"Hello?"

"You're drunk?"

"A bit, what's up?" Jiang Chen unbuttoned two buttons in the front of his chest as he tried to cool himself down by waving his hand.

"Mhmm, I want to ask you how is it going over there," Xia Shiyu said in a considerate tone.

"Absolutely perfect." Jiang Chen cockily chuckled.

"Okay, looks like you're really drunk." Xia Shiyu facepalmed. "I have something serious to talk about, are you free right now?"

"Of course."

Xia Shiyu cleared her throat and began to report.

This is what happened.

InterContinental Hotels Group, Hilton International Hotel Group, Jumeirah, St. Regis, Four Seasons and other five-star hotels operating internationally renowned enterprises have also sent a letter of intent to Future International, hoping to cooperate in this development project.

For example, they wanted to cut a slice of the pie in the tourism hotel infrastructure.

Jiang Chen was more than welcoming because he couldn't make all the money himself. But what confused him was that based on the current situation, Standard, and Poor, Moody and Fitch Ratings all downgraded Xin's Sovereign credit rating, why was there still so many corporations in favor of investing in Pannu Islands?

When Xia Shiyu heard Jiang Chen's question, she gave a professional explanation.

Just like the stock's trade volume is opposite of the company's quarterly report and the credit agencies' rating. The risk is always propositional to reward. Country F is amidst a civil war without any energy to focus on the prisoner situation. The terrorist attack

in Xin had caused the investor's desire to cooldown, but Celestial Trade's emergency announcement of 200 million USD in the establishment of the national security department reignited investors' interest with its decisive and robust policy.

The investment was a bet on expectations. And the liveliness demonstrated by Xin was indeed worth their investment.

On the other hand, based on Xin's strong stance toward country F as well as the tension escalating in the South Sea, the hostility between Hua and country F would continue to escalate. Since the "enemy's enemy is a friend." Hua was most likely to favor Xin. The diplomatic relationship between societies would most likely be reflected economically, it was especially more prominent in patriotic Asia.

Therefore, once the 8.7 billion USD infrastructure and tourism resources development projects were completed, it would trigger an in flood of Han dominated tourists. With consideration to the mild weather, fantastic scenery, wealthy Han tourists, and high-paced economic growth, it was easy to foresee that as long as the new regime remains stable. This place would become the Maldives of the Pacific!

"Also, Xia Shiyu."

"Mhmm?"

"Are you interested in becoming the CEO of Future Group," Jiang Chen said with a smile.

"... Do you really mean it or are you just drunk?"

"I really mean it," He forced the burp down and said earnestly.

With a flushed face, Xia Shiyu put her hand on her elbow and changed the hand she was holding the phone one.

"Could I know the reason?"

She wanted to hear "I want you to stay by my side".

"Because I trust your ability," Jiang Chen said with seriousness.

"..."

The other side of the phone was silent for half a minute. Just as Jiang Chen was confused why she didn't say anything, Xia Shiyu let out a wry sigh.

"... Once the virtual reality project is on the right track. I'm the most familiar with its plan, and I don't trust other people enough to handle it."

"Of course." Jiang Chen smiled.

After he hung up the phone, he flung his phone onto the pillow.

[It feels lonely without Ayesha beside him. Maybe he should go find Sun Jiao... Mhmm, it is not the best idea to attempt interdimensional travel on a cruise ship. There is no guarantee I won't end up in the sea by the time I return.]

[Maybe I should take a shower to sober up...]

As he thought this, he sat up and walked to the bathroom.

But then, the doorbell rang.

Chapter 428: Probe

With his eyebrows raised, Jiang Chen walked to the door and turned on the small TV screen installed into the wall.

The view from the camera outside the door turned on - it was a woman in server's clothes. She had a European face. Under the cap was curly brown hair and outside the purple vest was a silver name tag. She held a tray with cups and champagne and she looked into the camera with a smile.

Jiang Chen noticed that the white shirt underneath the vest had the first two buttons undone. There were also two crystal cups on the tray.

She seemed to be hinting at something.

"I didn't remember ordering champagne. I want to puke at the sight of it," Jiang Chen joked.

"Sir, you'll need it," the female server said with a grin.

Surprisingly, her Han was fluent.

Staring at the deep trench, Jiang Chen felt thirsty.

"Are you not going to welcome me in?" She used a flirtatious tone.

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows. With a slightly intoxicated mind, he opened the door.

The female server walked in with cat-like steps and a trace of what seemed to be pheromones. She walked by Jiang Chen with the tray.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes as he tried to guess what game she was playing.

"I don't think you're a server."

She put the tray on the nightstand. The beauty poured the liquid

into the two crystal glasses as she spoke seductively.

"If I didn't pretend to be a server, your bodyguards wouldn't let me approach this room."

"Then who are you?" Jiang Chen said with doubt as he walked behind her.

"Your female fan."

"I don't fu*k my fans."

The beauty rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen. She turned around and made contact with his chest while elegantly holding onto a glass. She placed her right hand on his shoulder.

"Are Han men always this uncourteous?"

Jiang Chen gently squeezed her left hand.

"Then I should courteously ask you to leave?"

"It's not courteous to reject a lady; you should courteously carry me into the washroom." She leaned closer to Jiang Chen's ear as she let out a warm breath.

With a tingling sensation in his lower body, little Jiang Chen raised his head.

Sensing Jiang Chen's change in demeanor, the tips of the girl's lips raised up.

[Who is this girl?]

"I don't even know your name." Jiang Chen's eyes flashed as he played with and squeezed her small hand as she spoke into his ear.

"Isn't that exciting? You just need to know that I'm one of the 2000 players you invited." The beauty bit Jiang Chen's ear as she whispered.

[One of the 2000 players?]

"I don't remember seeing you at the ceremony?" Jiang Chen carefully recalled the ceremony in his head but he had no memory

of her at all.

"You can't remember all 2000 players. After tonight, you'll only remember me."

The beauty raised the glass and took a small sip of the champagne as she kissed Jiang Chen.

The liquid was exchanged through their long French kiss. Jiang Chen used this opportunity to grab her by the waist.

Their lips parted.

Jiang Chen grinned while breathing heavily.

"I need to check to see if you have any illegal items on your body."

"Sir, I'm glad to assist you." The beauty unbuttoned her shirt.

Her purple vest and white shirt dropped to the ground. With a smirk, Jiang Chen carried her into the bathroom.

...

The sounds of water dripping on the ground accompanied by what seemed like hand-clapping echoed in the room.

It was an intense battle.

The beauty laid on Jiang Chen's body with redness all over her face. She breathed rhythmically while her finger drew circles on his muscular chest.

"Are you thirsty?"

"A little bit." Jiang Chen caught his breath and grinned.

"I told you that you were going to need it." The beauty covered his mouth and grabbed the champagne on the nightstand.

Jiang Chen smiled and reached for it, but she dodged him.

"Let me feed you."

Jiang Chen shrugged and just laid down. The beauty held the liquid in her mouth and approached him.

He didn't know if it was his imagination, but the concentration of alcohol in the champagne seemed a bit high. He had sobered up after their exercise, but after a few gulps of the champagne, Jiang Chen felt a bit drunk again.

"Do you feel sleepy?"

"A bit."

"What's the color of my underwear?" The beauty teasingly said while lying next to Jiang Chen.

"Purple." Jiang Chen yawned wearily.

He still could remember this detail.

"Then, what about the Golden Apple?" The beauty asked with a smile.

[Black... Wait!] Jiang Chen immediately realized that he needed to maintain his intoxicated appearance.

"Of course it's golden." Jiang Chen chuckled and slapped her firm butt.

The Golden Apple was, of course, black, but if he revealed its true color, the situation would've taken a drastic turn.

Just like he suspected, the girl's identity wasn't simple.

KGB? No, Russia and Xin were in a honeymoon phase.

Willie Society? Possibly. Rothschild family? Possible too, but unlikely, since Carmen just loaned him 30 billion, he wouldn't do something that would naturally strain their relationship...

What other organizations? CIB? MI6? Since the KGB knew about the Golden Apple, there was no reason why the NATO intelligence department that controlled Willie Society wouldn't know either.

A distinct disappointment flashed across the beauty's eyes, but it was quickly hidden by a smile on her red lips.

The technology possessed by Future Technology was enough

evidence to suspect that Jiang Chen could have the Golden Apple and consequently the technology from the future. She slipped drugs with a sleeping effect into the champagne, so if Jiang Chen was unsuspecting and under the influence of alcohol, he couldn't possibly lie.

But Jiang Chen didn't give the right response, and his expression didn't change either...

Could it be that the technology he possessed really was the work of his team?

The beauty was a bit lost.

Just then, she received her superior's command from the earpiece hidden inside her ear ordering her to end the mission and prepare to retreat.

Her superior also believed that the Golden Apple wasn't in Jiang Chen's possession.

"Are you a Christian?" Jiang Chen asked with a smile.

[Fu*k, if my body wasn't injected with a genetic vaccine, I definitely would've said something I shouldn't have.]

"Perhaps you should relearn your world history - the name Golden Apple came from Greek Mythology and signaled the holy and pristine, such as love," the beautiful spy said gently as she caressed Jiang Chen's face.

[Is that an actual explanation? I'm a bit illiterate, don't trick me...] Jiang Chen mocked her in his mind.

"Let me guess - you're an Italian?" Jiang Chen used this opportunity to change the topic as he continued to play dumb.

"I'm from Poland." She didn't look like she was lying.

"Could I know your name?" Jiang Chen wrapped his hand around her waist more forcefully while he whispered in her ear seductively.

"Of course not," the beautiful spy said while putting her arms around Jiang Chen's neck. "But considering how good you are, we can do it one more time before we say goodbye."

She didn't want to leave like this; she was still relishing the sensation from the two hours of battle they had. But since he was no longer a suspect, the objective behind her seduction no longer existed.

Jiang Chen pushed her onto the bed with a smirk...

Chapter 429: Pretending not to know

Jiang Chen had two choices.

One - capture her then use truth-telling serum to obtain some intel from the beautiful spy's mouth and discover her identity. But then the opponent would know that he did, in fact, know about the Golden Apple. Jiang Chen believed that she definitely had some technology hidden somewhere; it didn't take advanced technology to hide a telecom device in her ear canal.

Two - pretend to know nothing and just let her go. Even if he didn't find out her identity, he would no longer be a suspect.

Reveal his card and declare war or keep his card hidden?

Jiang Chen only wavered for two seconds before he chose the latter option.

Because if he chose the former, he couldn't do anything to them without a proper intelligence group, even if he knew the opponent's identity.

The battle lasted for two more hours as Jiang Chen almost made the beautiful spy's bones collapse before he finally spared her from her pleading and agony.

After taking a shower, she didn't stay in Jiang Chen's room overnight but said goodbye instead.

Jiang Chen half-heartedly tried to convince her to stay before he saw her to the door.

After closing the door, Jiang Chen noticed that it was already deep into the night, so he headed to bed.

The next morning, Jiang Chen pretended to want to see the spy again. He ordered the bodyguards to bring the staff list to him. When he didn't see her name on the list, Jiang Chen went to see the captain of the cruise ship and asked about the spy, going by the

name on her name tag.

Jiang Chen couldn't believe she had no accomplices on the ship, so he had to play dumb throughout the whole process.

After confirming that a woman of this name wasn't on the ship, Jiang Chen ordered the bodyguards and servers to search the cruise ship.

Although they didn't find the woman, they managed to find a server uniform folded neatly at the back of the cruise ship. The name tag was exactly the same as the one Jiang Chen saw the night before.

After the bodyguard brought the clothes to Jiang Chen's room, Jiang Chen managed to find some tangled underwear along with a neatly written note.

"Hello, I already left. Now that you know I'm already gone, are you surprised?"

"Before coming, I poisoned my bodily fluids, so any person who slept with me would be poisoned. I originally planned to use the antidote to force you to come to Poland with me as my hostage. But after carefully thinking it through, it would be too unromantic if I just kept you with me."

"If you find these clothes, it means you looked hard for me. The antidote is in the underwear. However, if you forgot about me after you slept with me, why don't you go die?"

"So bye bye~ See you, handsome Asian man."

The note didn't reveal her identity as a spy, but instead, she made up an excuse to cover her actions.

Jiang Chen laid on his bed, sighed and muttered to himself, "Don't you know that for someone with immunity above 20, even AIDS would be ineffective?"

Jiang Chen put on his EP and saw the line <Immunity: 27> in his

stats and scoffed.

Just like he expected, there was no irregularity in his status.

However, he hadn't expected the beautiful spy to poison her pu*sy. He also hadn't expected her to leave the antidote behind and even create a story to cover her intentions.

[Was it because of my face? Or because of my di*k?]

Jiang Chen stroked his chin as he thought to himself narcissistically.

...

The three-day cruise trip was tranquil; the ship avoided all the dense clouds and the journey was absolutely gorgeous.

Wei Wendong spent the day wandering the ship's artificial beach to enjoy the sunshine and the bikinis of all the beauties. At night, he returned to his room and streamed New Era.

After some careful deliberation, he decided he would put aside New Era after Godly Land was officially released and he would concentrate all his effort on the virtual reality MMORPG. He had a feeling that once the mature virtual reality MMORPG was introduced, it would completely change the gaming landscape.

Once people became used to immersive gaming, would they be interested in games on the screen anymore? Maybe, since mobile games could fill people's spare time. A lot of people were also passionate about these games, but people had limited energy and Wei Wendong knew how much energy it consumed to play two MMORPGs at the same time.

With virtual reality games becoming more common, people's selection of mobile games would shift toward fast-paced, simple, and casual games. Not to mention other mobile game MMORPGs, but even the New Era game by Future Technology would most likely be impacted by Godly Land.

Although Future Technology hadn't admitted that "Phantom" was immersive virtual reality equipment, Wei Wendong, accustomed to the surprises crafted by Future Technology, believed that they would shock the players around the world once they revealed the truth.

Otherwise, what was the point of their extensive marketing?

Regardless, it was a massive gamble for him since he was at the top in New Era.

But he didn't feel like this gamble was overly risky since the Kings already signed him for five years. He also had the confidence in his strong skills, game sense, and internal test experience to make his mark in the game.

Three days later, 2000 players got off the cruise ship at Coro Island. With the beckoning of Future Technology employees, the players arrived at a business hotel. The hotel had been booked out by Future Technology for two months to serve as the test location. The ballroom, big enough to host 2000 people, was renovated to form the official testing grounds.

There were 2000 custom-made recliner chairs and 2000 "Phantom" helmets.

Based on the description, everyone's identity was tied to their helmet number. The helmets could not leave the testing grounds.

Also, no photos or videos were allowed on the testing grounds. If violated, participation would be revoked and the player would be sent off the island at their own expense.

The test would run between eight in the morning to six at night. During this time, the players had to play the game for at least six hours. The testing grounds would be open on weekends and the players could choose to continue to play the game or wander the island freely.

After reading the terms and conditions, Wei Wendong picked up

helmet number 0008 which belonged to him.

When he discovered there was no sensor vest and gloves, an inexplicable joy erupted in his mind.

[Indeed!]

[Immersive virtual reality!]

He immediately laid down on the chair that belonged to him and he quickly put on the helmet. He followed the system commands and registered his ID as Shadow King. With an exhilarated heartbeat, he entered the game.

His pounding heart was stripped away from his body.

When he opened his eyes again, he faced a grey and white cubical dimension.

He stood in the middle of a cube. He was tempted to kneel down and kiss the cold ground.

A menu popped out, just as the host described. He chose the game "Godly Land" and registered the user "Shadow King" then chose "mage" as his class. His figure was randomized based on 80% similarity.

He couldn't wait to make a fireball and experience the feeling of controlling magic.

Light illuminated the room when he opened his eyes again; now he was at an ancient-looking street, the starting village of humans.

Chattering voices filled the street as pedestrians in adventure-type clothes strolled by. A musician hummed songs along the street while the surrounding crowds offered up a coin or two. Everything seemed surreal; all the NPCs seemed alive.

[Right! Artificial intelligence! Future Technology must've used artificial intelligence similar to Little White!] Although he knew how massive a project it must've been to install artificial intelligence on all the NPCs, he didn't have time to ponder this

further as he was completely immersed in the astonishment of living a "second life."

With a long, wooden rod in his hand, he took in the one-hundred-something new players standing dumbfounded on the square in the beginner village.

In order to fully appreciate the virtual world he was in, he didn't move a single step while he scanned his surroundings enthusiastically.

Suddenly, his expression froze.

[What the fu*k! 90-something mages?]

The 90-something mages didn't do anything else as they waved their fingers in the air in excitement; they were probably all trying to figure out how to form fireballs.

Wei Wendong blanked out.

[What a big class disparity just in internal testing.]

He had an ominous feeling - this class would definitely be nerfed...

Chapter 430: Decisions

Inside the office building of Tencent was a busy scene. The occasional employee walking in the hallway didn't have the most optimistic expression. With company performance continuing to slide, employees sensed the risk of upcoming layoffs.

Yes, the lifespan of QQ wasn't the longest these days.

Once Future 1.0's messenger function came online, the number of active users on QQ trended negatively. The QQ project lead was so stressed that his hair almost turned completely white, but he was still unable to come up with a solution to reclaim the messaging throne.

What? User stickiness? That's right - when your friends, family, and friends on the internet all use QQ, it might be difficult to change users' messenger tool of choice. But when all your friends, family and friends on the internet already installed Future 1.0 and Future 1.0 happened to come out with a messenger function, was QQ really irreplaceable?

Especially since Future Technology used a "shady" technique - friend synchronization technology!

WeChat and QQ could synchronize a phone's contact list, and Future 1.0's overpowering function could synchronize WeChat and QQ friend lists. So any user with Future 1.0, QQ, and WeChat installed, Future 1.0 would be able to sync all a user's friends with the click of a button and separate the friends based on the filter.

This move made the project lead of QQ curse Future 1.0's mother, but he couldn't do anything about it. Future Technology hadn't violated any laws - it synced friend lists with the user's permission and didn't pose any threat to QQ's functionality, nor did it trigger any laws regarding vicious competition.

At least for messaging software on mobile platforms, Future

Technology already snatched more than half of all users. It was fortunate that QQ was still competitive because of its PC platform, but WeChat, which normally always had a stunning performance, suffered greatly.

The foundation that formed the skyscraper of Penguin Empire was QQ - all other products were based on this foundation.

And now, Future 1.0 was attacking the foundation itself.

"Boss, Future Technology has made a new move." An assistant with square glasses walked in and slid a document gently in front of Ma Huateng.

He sat in front of his table with gloom all over his face. His eyes didn't leave the laptop screen at all.

It was an article reposted by News Net.

<Virtual Reality Masterpiece, Godly Land, has officially begun its internal testing. Future Technology welcomed 2000 players around the world to board a luxury cruise.> Future Technology had been promoting virtual reality technology lately. Ma Huateng was skeptical if they could make their money back with the massive campaign they launched.

He had some understanding of virtual reality technology. While the country had made some technology in the field domestically, compared to Google and Microsoft, there was still a sizeable disparity.

[Virtual reality MMORPG overseas is still in its infancy, yet you wanted to get ahead of the game - what's the point? Once they eat the meat, they will just take the leftovers and fry it, and it will still be delicious. What's the need for innovation? In a 1.3 billion market, copyright is nonexistent.]

[Foolish, how foolish.]

Ma Huateng shook his head.

If virtual reality MMORPG in internal testing was really as magical as they made it sound, it would be an unprecedented shockwave to the traditional MMORPGs on PC and mobile platforms.

What made it difficult was that the testing location of Godly Land was in Pannu Islands; there was no media coverage and no leaked photos. Penguin possessed only minimal information.

Was it the traditional sensory VR equipment or the rumored immersive virtual reality technology? There was great debate about this on the internet. Some people claiming to be internal testers said it was, in fact, the traditional equipment. But other internal testers stated that Future Technology had developed the legendary immersive technology.

Because there were no leaked photos, the Godly Land seemed mysterious.

"Boss?" the assistant spoke out.

"Is there any renowned virtual reality company domestically?" Ma Huateng let out a sigh.

"Wanghai Lexiang Technology Company. They just introduced the Deepoon virtual reality equipment which uses Samsung AMOLED 1080 high definition screen with 75Hz rate and 120-degree wide angle screen. It performed superbly during the CES exhibition."

"Send people to discuss the acquisition," Ma Huateng ordered.

"Yes." The assistant nodded and left with quick steps.

It shouldn't be difficult to acquire the company - the virtual reality industry was never hot domestically, and the mild state meant there was a lack of capital in pursuit. If someone was willing to pay for their creativity, they were probably more willing to exchange their technology for cash.

Ma Huateng stood up and walked to the giant window.

He glanced down at Shen's streets as well as his reflection in the window. His eyes narrowed.

[Okay, since Future Technology has entered the virtual reality era, let me play with you then!]

...

The so-called Icarus paradox referred to an enterprise with a monopoly in the market and a fear of change; the company would be reluctant to conduct management, technology, and business model updates. This would make it difficult to adapt to the ever-changing environment and the company would lose its advantage with the arrival of new competition.

What was the Icarus effect? It referred to an enterprise already with a monopoly in the market using all its resources to prevent change from occurring. Examples could be seen by energy giants divesting from new energy resources or hostile takeovers of new energy companies.

But because of Future Technology's unbreakable share structure and excellent operating conditions, it gave the tech giants no vulnerabilities to target.

At the Microsoft headquarters in Seattle:

The chief executive officer, Satia Nadra, sat in front of his desk while staring at his coffee. He zoned out while listening to his assistant's report.

"... HoloLens' sales in July increased by 27%."

When he heard this, he recollected his thoughts.

HoloLens was virtual reality equipment based on the Windows 10 design by Microsoft. It received a positive market reaction since it was introduced to the market in 2016, but the significant fluctuation in sales was a rare sight.

"... Till the market closed, Nasdaq's virtual reality sector all

ended in the green. Due to virtual reality division, our company's stock also rose by 3%."

A 3% rise for a mega-corporation like Microsoft was substantial.

Satia closed his eyes.

"Establish a subsidiary to operate the HoleLens project and immediately release the announcement for HoloLens2."

The assistant's eyes widened and he stared at Satia in disbelief.

"But HoloLens was just introduced... Could it be-"

Satia glanced at his assistant without saying a word.

He knew what the assistant wanted to say. Establish a shell, make an announcement, create a subsidiary first then an IPO and find the next buyer.

But virtual reality had a bright future, so why would he do that?

"The board won't agree," the assistant carefully cautioned him.

"Don't overthink. I'm preparing just in case." Satia stood up. "I'll go explain to the board. I have to also ask Gate's opinion."

Then Satia left the office and the shocked assistant.

With the document in his hand, the assistant stood still for a long time.

He didn't understand - with Microsoft's power, why would they need to prepare just in case?

In the office building of 361 Corporation:

"Godly Land? Virtual reality MMORPG? Interesting."

Zhou Hongwei scanned the webpage on the screen, feeling intrigued.

"Boss you don't seem to be worried?" Zhang Jiefeng, beside his desk, said with a wry smile.

"What's there to worry about?" Zhou Hongwei glared at him and

sank into his chair. "Is this something to be worried about? Future's about to update to Future 2.0, yet there's nothing from the team assigned to crack the software. What a bunch of useless tools."

Zhou Hongwei felt angry when he thought about it.

Although 361 and Future Technology had project partnerships, Zhou Hongwei never stopped the process to crack Future 1.0.

But just some time ago, he ultimately gave up on the cracking of Future 1.0 and dissolved the project team. He knew he wasn't the only company that made that choice. Future 1.0 encryption was as hard as a turtle's shell and left him nowhere to take a bite.

He remembered that at the beginning of the year, he went to his friend at the Bureau of Patents, wishing to obtain some information from Future Technology's patent. But his old friend helplessly stated that the people from the Bureau of Patents spent countless time to convince Future Technology to submit specific technicalities and the benefits of patents, but Future Technology's CEO was firm.

No need.

It certainly looked down on the countless programmers who spent their time cracking Future 1.0.

But then, Future Technology threw out a smokescreen on virtual reality. Zhou Hongwei couldn't help but a curse: [can't you fu*king slow down on releasing the technology? We haven't even cracked the first one and now you throw out another one. With steps so big, aren't you afraid of pulling your balls?]

"Boss?" Zhang Jianfeng looked at the color changing on the boss's face as he questioned.

Zhou Hongwei took a deep breath and snapped back to the present.

"I want to hear your thoughts."

Zhang Jianfeng nodded. He was clearly prepared as he immediately began to explain.

"There are two routes in front of us - one is to purchase virtual reality technology companies and see if we can cut a slice of the pie from the virtual reality hype created by Future Technology. Two is to give up on this opportunity since there's still plenty of room for growth in the PC and mobile market. If everyone decides to pursue virtual reality, that's the perfect opportunity for us to expand our market share in PC and mobile devices."

Zhou Hongwei closed his eyes and thought for a long time.

After a while, he sighed.

"I prefer the second choice."

Zhang Jiefeng felt relieved too.

"I also think so too."

Future Technology's massive advertisement campaign was meant to hype up the virtual reality MMORPG and see if they could stretch their balls, but if 361 followed the same massive steps, they would definitely stretch their balls.

It was better to play it safe.

Even if virtual reality was as magical as it was advertised to be, it could not replace the phone. Compared to the BAT giants (Baidu, Alibaba, Tencent), 361 had quite a discrepancy in terms of resources. Even if Zhou Hongwei wanted to compete with them, their chance of winning was not high. Cash was one thing, technology was another, and 361 had no advantage in either.

What they should do now was to not follow blindly but instead, use this opportunity and consolidate the mobile market while all the capital flooded to virtual reality. 361 search was already shaking the market penetration of Baidu search. If they spent more effort on it and let the big thugs battle with Future Technology, they would definitely win on this battlefield.

Due to Lingyu Technology's incident, 361 and Future Technology were still in a honeymoon phase.

Zhou Hongwei let out a sigh.

To be honest, he wasn't willing to make this choice, but he had no other options.

What he didn't know was, just after a few months, he would feel glad about the decision he made.

Chapter 431: The Mutants Flood

Xia Shiyu gave Jiang Chen an update of the industry.

For example, Tencent acquired 51% of Wanghai Lexiang shares at a premium from the hands of Xunlei and Kaiying Web for 60 million USD to become the majority shareholder. They also indicated on the day when the deal closed that QQ would officially enter the virtual reality field, then they displayed a mysterious looking CG animation, indicating that virtual reality MMORPG development was in progress.

Baidu instead went international and established a strategic partnership with Sony which signaled their battle horn to the virtual reality market.

Microsoft, Google...

When Jiang Chen heard this information, he wasn't worried at all.

His situation now was like a tank charging forward while his opponents were still busy shining the tips of their arrows.

A battle between the indigenous and civilized - although it was in the same ring, it was not on the same level.

After two months, internal testing would end and the world's media would finally receive some information. The helmets would go on sale a month later and the official launch of the game was set for the upcoming month. The world would be shocked by Future Technology's virtual reality technology.

Future Technology would lead the first intimate contact between consciousness and circuit boards.

"Also, I received several emails from Hua's Arms Industrial Company, Britain's Plextek Company, UA's Thunder God Company and other three arms industrial companies interested in our technology. They said if we provided a technical description of our

technology, they were willing to cooperate with us in the military training field," Xia Shiyu continued her report.

Military arms companies interested in a partnership with a tech company? It was a rare occurrence.

But from the way the emails were worded, they seemed to be cautious of the partnership since it would involve a lot of technical parameters of confident military tech. In principle, military tech companies should not cooperate with foreign companies. Even if a partnership were to exist, it would mostly be under the table.

At least for now, the server parameters of virtual reality, computation ability, and maximum user threshold were all unknown to the external world. But with the introduction of virtual reality to the world next year, his nuclear silo would be built already.

He would use nuclear weapons to deter the five thugs and connect the world with the "virtual web." When the world could no longer leave the second world built by Future Technology, no one would be foolish enough to go against Future Technology.

The game was only the tip of the iceberg for virtual reality.

By that time, it would be time to reach space.

Jiang Chen's thoughts drifted far away as he fantasized about the blueprint he had in his mind.

"Jiang Chen?" Seeing as he didn't respond, Xia Shiyu tried to rouse him from his dazed state.

He recollected his thoughts and only deliberated for two seconds before he made a decision.

"Reject the offers."

"Okay... Also, the Bureau of Patents is making frequent visits." Xia Shiyu scoffed.

"Let them come. When we have the absolute technological

advantage, we don't need any patents to protect us. If we made our technology public for other people's reference, we would be kicked out of the competition."

Any country would be reluctant for new technology to leave their borders. As long as Future Technology was irreplaceable, even if the Wang family wanted to eat him, they couldn't do anything to him. When they forced Jiang Chen to become an "international company," the Wang family received a lot of criticism and pressure from the higher-ups.

At the same time, he wouldn't register for any patents in any country because it was unnecessary for him; he didn't plan to permit other people to use his technology. To crack his Future 1.0, people needed a textbook on D++ first.

After he hung up the phone, Jiang Chen stretched sluggishly and sat up on the sofa.

He finally had the time for leisure activities lately, but with his mansion completely empty, it did feel boring. He occasionally visited his family, accompanied his father on fishing trips, and chatted with his mother. Being with his family was always a great and relaxing time.

He just missed Ayesha and wondered about her training progress on the island.

He didn't need to focus on the virtual reality internal testing anymore - Barkary sent out 20 security personnel and 30 employees to oversee the internal testing process. All the game data would be sent to the fourth-dimensional messenger chip Lin Lin created on her computer before she sent the information off to the game development department at Fishbone base.

It was August 7th already. Jiang Chen was planning to delay his return to the 15th, but a message from Lin Lin changed his mind.

<Pervert, Sun Jiao is asking you to come back.>

...

When Sun Jiao saw Jiang Chen, her eyes lit up as she stood to greet him. Han Junhua only glared at him emotionlessly before she focused on the hologram command map on the table.

Jiang Chen kissed Sun Jiao before he walked up to the command map.

"What happened?"

"We confirmed that a flood of mutants erupted in Wanghai," Sun Jiao said sternly, a rare occasion when she wasn't acting naughty.

"A flood of mutants?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

"Based on the information from the drones, the activity level of zombies in the city center greatly increased, and the packed zombies in the city center began to disperse towards the rural areas. At the same time, all mutants in the Wanghai area entered into a frenzied state. Even the mutant cockroaches without much hostility turned aggressive," Han Junhua explained with her arms crossed, her eyes never leaving the map.

Cockroaches were scavengers; the mutations didn't change their food habits. Typically, cockroaches were considered safe - they wouldn't attack you unless you provoked them.

The same went for flies and rats - they were often not aggressive. But when the mutant flood erupted, the "mild" mutants entered a frenzied state too.

There were only two solutions to solve the mutant flood.

One was to migrate, the other was to kill.

Only when the zombie and mutant concentration decreased to a certain level would their expansion to secure land stop.

The mutant flood was a battle between mutants and humans for survival space!

"That's right." Sun Jiao nodded at Han Junhua's explanation.

"Even with a wall, these creatures could still get inside?" Jiang Chen asked in shock.

"Hypothetically, if thousands of zombies all leaped at the wall at the same time, the zombies in the front would fall, and the zombies at the back would stomp on top of the fallen zombies. In a massive zombie flood, a wall is not reliable. Also, not only are the zombies a threat, but the mutants will be a great danger. The mutants that previously only lived in wet, high radiation areas will enter the rural areas," Han Junhua said sternly.

"For example?"

"Mutant mosquitos. Their high flying speed along with their slim bodies means they are hard to target. A total of seven soldiers died at the hands of mutant mosquitoes already, along with thirteen injured at camp 27." All the stats were ingrained in Han Junhua's head.

"Looks like we'll have to cancel the expedition," Jiang Chen said with a frown.

"We can't," Han Junhua said.

Jiang Chen and Sun Jiao both looked at her.

"Even if we terminate the plan, the mutated humans would not give up their military action this winter. Not only can we not terminate the plan, but we have to take care of the mutated humans before the mutant flood escalates."

Jiang Chen thought for a bit then asked, "But there are already signs of a mutant flood. What do you think we should do?"

"Immediately send out a force and fight on two fronts," Han Junhua said in an undertone.

"That's too risky. You haven't experienced a mutant flood before, and you don't know how terrifying it is," Sun Jiao interrupted.

"For that exact reason, we have to do what I said. Even if we

lasted through the mutant flood, we might not be able to defend against the backlash of the mutated humans. The best strategy would be for the east line to focus on defense while the west line gathers the entire armored force to attack. We need to use the shortest time to wipe out the mutated humans then return to defend the Wanghai rural area."

As the Colonel of the PAC land force, it wasn't the first time she had to make a definitive decision like this.

"What if the west line enters a stalemate?" Jiang Chen asked sternly.

"Then prepare to give up the east line and retreat from Wanghai."

[Give up Wanghai? How is that possible?!]

Han Junhua seemed to have read the hesitation on Jiang Chen's face as she continued.

"A leader should consider the consequences of failure but should not be fearful towards the consequences of the failure."

Jiang Chen closed his eyes.

After a long silence, he abruptly said:

"If we choose to fight on both lines, how will the force be distributed?"

"Gather the power armor to equip the First Division with the support of the Hunter Division to launch a lightning attack to Jia city and Seventh Area. The Third Division will remain stationed in the Sixth Street with local mercenaries hired to reinforce the defense. The Second Division stationed at camp 27 will partially retreat to the Fishbone base and the defensive line will completely shrink to the outskirts of the rural areas." Han Junhua pointed on the hologram map and quickly completed the force deployment plan.

The power armor didn't have an advantage against a massive

amount of zombies, so it was better to be bold and send it all to the east line to be used against the mutated humans. Although the mutants couldn't rip through the armor of the Wanderer tank, a total weight of 112 tons wasn't impenetrable to the powerful mutants. If they couldn't bite through the tank, surely they could flip it at least?

They couldn't forget about the vomiter vomiting acid - it would also be a threat to the armored units.

"Let's follow your plan."

Han Junhua nodded and walked out the door.

Chapter 432: Tightening the Defensive Line

After five days of resistance, the command center ordered camp 027 to retreat strategically.

It was a prudent decision.

The core of camp 27 was the scientists. Even if the buildings on the surface were abandoned, there wasn't much lost since the mutants didn't tend to destroy buildings. They simply could recapture the base later.

But if they remained stationed there, once the mutant flood escalated, the supply line between camp 27 and Fishbone would be cut off. Without an ammo supply, camp 27, which was closer to the city center, would be the first to collide with the mutants. Even with the protection of the wall, it wasn't the most reliable during a mutant flood.

The zombies packed together could create a zombie ladder. The throwers' infant zombies could pass over the wall, and the Roshan, which had a bad habit of throwing things, could even push down the wall.

The most horrifying thing was the mutant mosquitos. They were the knights soaring in the sky, their mouths as sharp as spears. One charge could quickly take a person's life away.

To deal with the annoying creatures, the fallout shelter designed a simplified flamethrower. Soldiers in power armor could wield one and fire at these mosquitos on the front line, which had surprisingly effective results.

But regarding the intensifying mutant flood, the situation was less and less optimistic.

The mutant flood was going on its fifth day and the soldiers stationed at the camp already lost 15 people. If they continued to be stationed here, it was difficult to determine the outcome of the

situation.

With Wang Zhaowu's organization, Xu Lu led the non-combat personnel and some security forces down into the fallout shelter with the doors shut tight. They would return to the surface once the situation stabilized. The fuel rods and supplies stored in the fallout shelter were more than enough to sustain them for two years of consumption, and the mutant flood would only last a few months...

If nothing unexpected happened.

A total of 500 combat units loaded the firearms and stationary weapons onto the trucks then welded the top of the trucks with machine guns.

With the Tiger II leading the way, trucks began to trickle out of camp 27 and smash into the zombies wandering on the street.

The machine guns unleashed their fury onto the street, leaving a trail of copper shells behind.

The flood of zombies swarmed to the fleet, but most were shredded to pieces by the bullets. The occasional zombies that managed to survive would die from the bullets of the Reaper Assault Rifle.

In the distance, Roshan tossed the lamppost in its hands and moved toward the fleet with heavy footsteps. Tiger II, which spotted the target, slowly moved its cannon as the Type-50 electromagnetic cannon unloaded its bomb and pierced through the lard.

Blood and bullet shells paved the way.

...

Fishbone base.

The engineering soldiers were installing four anti-air machine guns onto the wall in addition to the Type-50 electromagnetic

cannon used against large-sized mutants. Soldiers patrolled the walls and fired continuously at the areas with a high concentration of zombies.

Under the waving NAC flag, zombies with dangling heads wandered below the wall. Their crimson pupils displayed a thirst for blood.

Typically speaking, zombies weren't hostile during the daytime. But because of the mutant flood, the situation changed a little. The zombies seemed to be influenced by some form of power and naturally gathered around areas with humans.

The situation was similar to the x2 bacteria incident; the only difference was that air indicators remained normal during the mutant flood.

The Fishbone base was quite some distance away from the city center, so they hadn't encountered any powerful mutants, but Jiang Chen had a feeling that the good days were coming to an end.

On the patrol tower on the wall, Jiang Chen observed the streets in the distance with a pair of binoculars.

Suddenly, a Tiger II appeared in his field of vision. Meat chunks solidified on its armor, and the belt was colored black by the fat and blood of the zombies. Immediately following it were the outlines of trucks which became more and more clear. The machine guns fired continuously, piercing any zombies approaching the trucks.

Jiang Chen put down the binoculars and spoke concisely into the radio:

"Clear an area in front of the gate."

"Roger!"

The soldiers stationed underneath the wall all headed up with their rifles. Some rushed to the machine guns while some set up the rifles in the firing spots. Following the commands of a knight

in a kinetic skeleton, everyone entered their battle positions quickly.

"Fire!" The soldiers on the wall pressed their triggers simultaneously.

A glorious scene unfolded.

The orange bullet trails were unleashed onto the zombies like pouring rain and instantly tore down the zombies approaching the wall. Grenade soldiers threw grenades and Molotov cocktails at the swarms of zombies.

Explosions were everywhere. Broken limbs flew across the battlefield. The zombies made of flesh were no threat at the hands of the survivors' firearms.

"The success against normal zombies would make people blow up in confidence," Sun Jiao exclaimed while she worked beside Jiang Chen and stared at the zombies being shredded.

Sun Jiao was wearing a bulletproof vest with the SK10. She hadn't used it in a long time.

Jiang Chen smiled but didn't respond. He took out a cigarette and lit it up.

During the amount of time it took to finish a cigarette, the zombies outside the wall were mostly wiped out.

At the same time, the fleet arrived in front of the main door before the zombies could regroup. The soldiers at the door immediately pressed the button to open the gate as the metal gate slowly opened and allowed the red-stained fleet to enter.

A few medics ran up and carried the wounded on stretchers to the hospital. Then a few soldiers in protective gear with circular bottles sprayed the entire fleet to disinfect it.

The weary soldiers jumped down from the trucks and hugged each other with their families waiting by the side. As for the people

stained with blood, they all chose to take a shower first.

When they arrived at the base, their tense nerves could finally be relieved.

"Let me go make a visit."

Jiang Chen extinguished the cigarette on the wall as he headed downstairs.

Right now, it was a busy scene in front of the base.

"Quick! Quick! Vomiter's acid hit him."

"Poor guy, treat it first before sending him to the medical chamber. Help me out here..."

Stretchers continuously passed by him. Due to the limited number of medical chambers, soldiers with less severe injuries had to be transferred to the ward first. Soldiers with serious injuries were treated by doctors on the spot before being sent to the medical chambers for recovery.

Jiang Chen examined the soldier with the bones on his face exposed by the acid. His stomach started doing flips.

[To be able to live like this is definitely his luck...]

He paused for a few seconds before he continued to walk forward.

In the front of the fleet, aside from the Tiger II, he saw Wang Zhaowu.

Because he sat in the tank, Wang Zhaowu's condition was somewhat positive; at least he hadn't sustained any injuries. But from his dark circles, it was clear he hadn't closed his eyes for a long time.

He passed the rifle in his hand to the soldier beside him and saluted Jiang Chen sharply.

Without engaging in small talk, Jiang Chen passed a cigarette to

him. Finely made cigarettes had always been the luxury good in short supply on the wasteland. Although he could purchase them with his salary, not everyone could have the honor of their leader passing them a cigarette.

Wang Zhaowu took the cigarette in astonishment. Jiang Chen smiled and used a casual tone to ask him.

"What's the situation at camp 27?"

"Extremely terrible." With gloom on his face, Wang Zhaowu slowly blew out a smoke ring. "Throwers already appeared there, as well as mutant mosquitos. Along the way, we also saw vomiters moving in this direction. Fortunately, a Tiger II was in front of the fleet..."

Throwers were most active in the outskirts of the city, and they rarely entered the rural areas. If Throwers already appeared at camp 27, the mutant flood was beginning to intensify.

After a momentary pause, Jiang Chen asked:

"Did you bring the thing?"

"I did. Do you want me to take you there now?"

"Now," Jiang Chen said.

Wang Zhaowu nodded and took Jiang Chen to the center of the fleet.

When they arrived at the location, a few workers were already operating a crane to unload the equipment.

"This is it. The construction robots and deepwater mining equipment. They won't be useful now by the looks of it." Wang Zhaowu stared at the eight massive containers with a wry smile.

With the current situation, it would be hard to reach the sea in the first place.

Wang Zhaowu might be wrong. Jiang Chen smiled mysteriously without answering.

It wasn't an easy task to transport the deepwater mining equipment from camp 27. All of the equipment weighed 400 tons with each container weighing 50 tons. To transport these containers, Wang Zhaowu arranged four heavy-duty trucks to be positioned in the middle of the fleet. With the risk of slowing down the retreat, he managed to drag the equipment back,

Jiang Chen looked at the eight containers and nodded, pleased.

Deepwater mining could finally be initiated. The production of virtual reality helmets would require a massive amount of molybdenum, and with the current price of molybdenum, importing would significantly increase the cost of the helmet. If Jiang Chen mined the molybdenum himself, he calculated cost savings of at least 50%.

"Thank you." Jiang Chen patted him on the shoulder.

"No problem. Compared to defending camp 27, this is much easier." Wang Zhaowu smiled.

"Go rest for a bit. Remember to come to my office for a meeting in two hours."

"Yes!"

Wang Zhaowu saluted and headed to the living area.

After a long journey, he was indeed tired. He just wanted to take a shower and take a nap before the meeting.

After Wang Zhaowu left, Jiang Chen looked at the soldiers by the side and ordered them to transport the containers to the backyard of the mansion. Then he headed to the community center.

Chapter 433: A Risky Choice

The Sixth Street.

The recent expansions caused the defense line of the Sixth Street to be extremely stretched out. The military government utilized almost all the construction companies and reinforced the walls surrounding the Sixth Street and machine guns and cannons were also installed.

Contracts totaling one million crystals.

But not a lot of people were cheerful of the news. The mutants flood about to arrive made everyone feel a deep fear. Some people chose to flee, but most chose to stay.

It was because of a policy enacted by Chu Nan.

"Anyone who leaves the Sixth Street during wartime, properties registered under its name will be confiscated and used to pay for the defense budget. The extra amount will be used as a reward for individuals or organizations who provide outstanding contribution during wartime. If the person must leave and is reluctant to give up its property here, then a war tax between 20-40 crystals per square meter must be paid for any properties here. This amount will be used to pay for the mercenaries' salary, reinforce defense, and ammunition."

The policy sounded unreasonable on paper, but it was fair.

Why would the Sixth Street soldiers bleed for you to protect your property here and the people with stakes here would escape during this critical time? Either contribute your force, or provide money, or the NAC government would recognize you as surrendering your property by default!

Although a lot of soldiers attempted to use the council to protest, they clearly didn't understand the situation. Out of the ten council members, five were injected with the "honorary chip".

The policy was enacted without any opposition and gained the support from the majority of civilians.

The civilians finally managed to own their home in the Sixth Street, who would want to return to the homeless life? As to the people that escaped with the slightest obstacle and wanted people who stayed behind to protect their property, they didn't gain any sympathy.

Therefore, other than the merchants based elsewhere, no one chose to leave at this time.

What's the purpose of tying down the irrelevant people in the base?

There were a lot of purposes.

The Sixth Street military stationed comprised mostly by three forces, the first being the NAC's Third Division, the second would be the mercenaries, hunters, and some equipped scavengers, the third being the private force of the merchants!

Although after the nuclear non-proliferation at the Sixth Street was enacted, all of their nuclear material was confiscated. Though the Sixth Street never limited their arms. As to do business on the wasteland, a weak force meant that the merchant would be sheep to the bad wolves out there. Even if they managed to escape the claws of the mutants, they could not avoid the robbery by their same kind.

Most of the merchants stayed, meaning they would retain their private force here. The merchants were usually much richer than the mercenaries demonstrated by the quality of their equipment. Although the merchants didn't have the restricted Type-50 electromagnetic pulse cannon, they still possessed a few armored vehicles.

The civilians joined the force. The merchants in pain send their private force to the frontline. Once the mutants flood erupts, the

gate to the city would be closed shut. Since they chose to stay, then the option of leaving was no longer there. There was no purpose of hiding any force now as it was better to send them to the front line for some commission.

The military factor was operating at full capacity as it produced the iron and aluminum transported from the Fishbone base into firearms.

At this time, the production of the Sixth Street finally came in handy.

When Jiang Chen released part of the technology of the T-3 power armor to the small workshops and contracted parts out to be produced. The military factory he purchased for Zhao Chenwu produced 20 T-3 power armors in one month.

It was ten times their previous production capacity.

Not only the power armors, the Type-99 anti-tank cannon, the Roar mortar... Followed by the optimization of the industry, the heavy weaponry with low production before now became streamlined and exited the factory quickly.

With so many heavy weaponry dragged from the factory to the frontline and the boxes of ammo and bombs being transported to the supply station, almost everyone was confident towards this war.

Only if it was just the zombies that came.

...

Currently, 300 meters to the north gate of the Sixth Street, the soldiers from the First Division built a simplified defense line with a moving barrier and sandbags. They shot the zombies approaching with machineguns. The wall behind them was being reinforced, and their mission was to defend here until the reinforcement is complete.

Constant screams came from behind them. It was the sound of

the mortars launching electromagnetic shells.

Three shells raised into the air and then smashed into the zombies. The scattered shrapnel instantly shredded the zombies nearby as their intestines, and meat chunks rolled all over the ground.

Then, from the dust of the explosion, a massive creature appeared. It swung a billboard in its hand while marching toward the defense line in giant strides.

"Roshan located."

A soldier at the machinegun continued to fire while screaming into his mic.

"Roger."

A calm response followed by the explosive sound of the bomb unloading.

The bomb dragged an orange trail of flame and blew the skull of the Roshan into pieces.

"Nice shot!" The soldier roared out while he reloaded the machinegun. Seeing the attack slowed down, the scavenger waiting on the side rushed to the body of Roshan with a knife to retreat the crystals at the back of its neck. When they obtain the crystals, they could retain 40% as their commission.

On top of the patrol tower, Zhao Gang observed everything with his binoculars.

Different from the optimistic feeling of the crowd, as the leader of the Third Corp, the expression on his face didn't suggest optimism at all.

After days of continuous recruitment, the Third Corp already expanded to 4000 people. However, even including the First and Second Corp, it still didn't manage to bring him optimism at all.

As a previous survivor of Qingpu, he had witnessed the

horrifying mutants flood.

The mutants flood back then even broke the line of defense established by the World Alliance Organization soldiers which made the organization surrender to Wanghai. And the survivors at the Sixth Street used a significant amount of PAC weapons left by the organization and barely managed to defend the base.

But after the next civil war, the only equipment left was the Wanderer tank. Right now, the tank was sent to the First Corp, the Sixth Street could only depend on self-produced heavy weaponry.

"Report, Director Chu Nan send me to notify you to attend the meeting."

"I see." Zhao Gang nodded.

The soldier saluted and stood aside.

He took a last look at the front line before he stuffed the binoculars into his pocket and left.

...

In the hologram conference room, Zhao Gang nodded to Chu Nan and sat in his spot.

The conference started. General Jiang Chen, advisor Han Junhua, the three corp leaders, the Sixth Street executive Chu Nan, logistics lead Wang Qin, administration lead Lu Huasheng, and all the NAC executives were present.

Around the conference table hovered a hologram map of Wanghai with the force's distribution on the map. From the map, Zhao Gang could guess the purpose of this meeting.

Wang Qin first explained the status of supplies at the base, and then Lu Huasheng reported on the status of the reserve force.

Last, the advisor explained their entire plan. Because the plan was first discussed with the general, Jiang Chen only needed to nod during the conference.

But when Chu Nan heard the plan, he had a slight frown as he stood up and objected.

"I object. Wanderer tank, eight Tiger IIs, and 15 armored vehicles are all assigned to the First Division? Even if the Sixth Street's objective is to defend, it doesn't mean this place doesn't need armored force protection."

Jiang Chen looked at Zhao Gang.

After a moment of deliberation, Zhao Gang nodded sternly.

"I agree with Chu Nan's perspective. Without any armored force to cover fire, that means that once we lost the control of the gate, we no longer possess the ability to recapture the gate. We could only completely abandon the lost defense line. To be safe, we need at least four Tiger IIs stationed here."

"Just don't lose control." Han Junhua said emotionlessly.

"Of course, I know it is best to have no mistakes, but-"

"Tanks protecting a city are the least efficient choice. All the armored forces equipping the First Corp will allow Jia City to be captured in the shortest period, and then return for defense after." Han Junhua used an indubitable voice.

A risky decision.

If there were any mishaps in the Sixth Street defense line... If the First Corp battle with the mutated humans entered a stalemate...

The First Corp leader Cheng Weiguo didn't say anything. He only looked at Zhao Gang apologetically. Zhao Gang also didn't speak as he looked at his colleague to signal his understanding.

Chu Nan took a deep breath and stared at Han Junhua before he slowly sat down.

"I hope your decision is correct. It has to do with the lives of eighty thousand people."

Han Junhua nodded.

After the end of the conference, the hologram faded.

Wang Qin, Lu Huasheng, and Wang Zhaowu left. When there were only two people in the conference room, Jiang Chen let out a sigh.

"You have to learn the art of rejection."

"There is only execution to an order, the art of rejection doesn't exist."

"I'm only concerned about the relationship between my subordinates," Jiang Chen said wryly.

But Han Junhua didn't seem to mind as she said emotionlessly, "It's okay, let me be the bad guy."

"... Are you an M?" With the expressionless face in front of him, Jiang Chen had to ask out of curiosity.

"What is an M?" Han Junhua raised her eyebrows, "I'm only making the best choice. Especially as you have told me, once everything ends, I will be heading into the future."

"What if we can solve your problem without going to the future?" Jiang Chen asked intriguingly.

"Then we'll speak once the time comes."

Han Junhua didn't seem to want to discuss this problem further. She took the documents on the table that belonged to her and left the conference room.

Chapter 434: Lightning Attack against Seventh Area

Clouds of dust accompanied the roaring noise of the engine.

The metal belt rolled over the barren land; only the crushing sound of the wheels could be heard.

Like a piercing arrow, the tank formulation comprised of all the NAC's armored forces, led by the Wanderer tank, was heading from Shenxiang to the Seventh Area between Jia and Wanghai.

It was the mutated humans' production facility. Once the place was captured, the mutated humans would lose all of their ammunition supplies. Once they freed the slaves prisoned in the Seventh Area, the First Corp would continue to head west and crush the mutated humans stationed in Jia.

The Wanderer tank led the way, eight Tiger IIs, 15 armored vehicles, 30 supply trucks, 2300 soldiers, and two helicopters. It was half of NAC's net worth.

Right now, in the armored vehicle modified into a command center, Cheng Weiguo and Ma Zhongcheng sat across from each other. In front of them was a hologram map with a red marker on the map indicating the mutated humans' zone of control. The arrow formation created by blue dots were soldiers from the First and Hunter Corp.

"Based on the reconnaissance soldiers' observation, the mutated humans stationed 9000 soldiers in Jia with 80 anti-tank cannons, 60 anti-air machine guns, and 220 machine guns," Ma Zhongcheng reported to Cheng Weiguo.

"A tough opponent," Cheng Weiguo cursed.

Because the mutated humans managed to capture Jia city, their number increased substantially. They could foresee that it will be a fierce battle.

Suddenly, there was a loud explosion from the front.

A shell landed beside a Tiger II in high gear mode. The shrapnel created screeching sounds on the Type-A steel armor, but it didn't manage to do any damage. Then a few more rounds landed but didn't manage to hit its target.

"Enemy anti-tank units spotted!"

"Initiate combat." Cheng Weiguo clicked on his earpiece and ordered.

"Roger!"

The supply truck that carried the soldiers all slowed down to allow the soldiers in the back to jump down and charge toward the Seventh Area in a scattered formation. The soldiers that sat outside of the armored vehicles also got off as they spread out to advance towards the mutated humans' zone of control.

An armor piercing round smashed right onto the front armor of the Wanderer's tank and was deflected without a doubt. The electromagnetic reaction armor that used Meissner effect would render most of the kinetic weapon with metal shells useless! And even if there was no electromagnetic reaction armor, 140 mm Type-A steel armor was not something typical shells could penetrate.

The type-52 main particle cannon emitted an eerie blue light before it exploded like fireworks once it hit the target. Then it instantly vaporized the anti-tank cannon hidden behind the defense line. The secondary 2 kg rapid electromagnetic cannon continued to emit electric arcs as the shells eight times the speed of sound easily shredded the building into pieces. The mutated humans hiding in the building couldn't even scream before they were crushed by the building.

It was a moving fortress.

Compared to the Wanderer tank's outstanding performance, the

"locally produced" Tiger II had lackluster performance. However, with the mutated humans without any armored force, it was more than enough to take care of the enemies with its thick front armor and powerful electromagnetic cannon.

The Type-50 constantly unleashed 5 kg bombs on the mutated humans' position and instantly destroyed their first line of defense.

Once the line was broken, the armored vehicles, in front, instantly accelerated and dashed out from the force, into the Seventh Area Industrial Zone. The machine guns installed on the tops of the tanks spat out its fury as the high caliber bullets reaped the life of the mutated humans hidden behind the walls. The armored vehicles also occasionally threw out heat trap grenades and electromagnetic trap grenades.

The guided rockets being misguided by the trap grenade immediately lost its target and redirected to the location of the heat trap grenade. The none-guided rockets were unable to hit the armored vehicles due to their high speed.

Rockets flew aimlessly inside the industrial zone and didn't manage to hit a single armored vehicle. Instead, they wounded a lot of mutated humans.

The armored vehicles rushed into the industrial zone and in the shortest time, cleared the hidden anti-tank and anti-air weapons. Then, they paved the way for the tank formation. At the same time, the Hunter Division in power armors and kinetic skeletons broke the first line of defense and began to clear the mutated soldiers that hid among the shambles with the help of the infantry.

Only two armored vehicles were damaged. One because of the anti-tank mine, the other one was unfortunately hit on the side by a non-guided missile.

However, compared to the success they were able to achieve, the sacrifice was indeed worth it. They destroyed or confiscated 17

anti-tank armors, 31 anti-air machine guns, and killed more than 2000 mutated humans; the remaining enemy all retreated to the second line of defense.

"The first line of defense captured!"

The captain in the frontlines reported the status to the command center, seeing the blue and red dots tangle together on the hologram map, Cheng Weiguó looked at Ma Zhongcheng.

"Deploy the drones."

"Okay." Ma Zhongcheng took out the tablet and pressed a few buttons.

The second line of defense was built around the complex building layout in the industrial zone where even the armored vehicles could not rapidly advance through. The mutated humans defending the streets were all equipped with a significant amount of non-guided missiles as well as sticky explosives. Although those could not damage the Wanderer, they posed a substantial threat to the Tiger IIs and the armored vehicles.

The Tiger II's side armor and back were all its weaknesses. An anti-tank rocket in close range would more than likely stall the tank.

Therefore, the task to protect the infantry force advancing would fall to the drones.

After receiving the order, the two helicopters hovered in the far air immediately moved toward the already broken first line of defense. Then it parachuted two containers to the ground.

Blue flames sparked out the descending device fired to reduce its velocity. The five-meter-long container smashed onto the second line of defense. The first container landed on the street while the other one landed on the top of the building.

The memory metal on the container instantly deployed with the intense force of the landing, it exploded the bee nest like structure

and released the drones inside.

The buzzing noise even covered the sound of gunshots. The mutated humans could only use their rifles and machine guns to furiously unleash their bullets against the drone attack formed by the plate-sized "hummingbirds". However, their effort was negligible.

With the hive used as a terminal and center for the drones, hundreds of agile Hummingbirds roamed the streets to remove the lives of the mutated humans. Even with the thick C-type front armor, they could not defend against the sneak attacks from the back. In a street battle with drones, without any EMP weapon, it was pure slaughter.

But obviously, the mutated humans in the Seventh Area didn't prepare much EMP!

When the hive landed, the location scanning device inside recorded its detailed coordinates into the server, so the Hummingbirds were even more familiar with the area than the mutated humans themselves.

At the same time, 20 T-3 power armors followed into the second line of defense, with the support of the light infantry, an intense battle along the streets broke out.

The orange bullet trails lit up the entire zone. The mutated humans defending there had to retreat due to First Corp's intensive attack.

The infantry force completely cleared out the anti-air positions at the second line of defense. The helicopter then moved up and unleashed the nightmare known as death to the mutated humans with its Type-50 electromagnetic cannon. Any defense could not withstand the powerful smash of the 10 kg bomb. Although the lead mutated humans with power warhammers, and the suicide mutated humans with miniature nuclear grenades managed to cause some casualties to the infantries on the streets, the mutated

humans could not change the outcome of the battle.

The second line of defense was broken, the tank continued to push forward. The soldiers that confiscated the anti-tank cannons turned the cannon around to the mutated human's third line of defense. The last line of defense.

The electronics factory at the Seventh Area!

A high tech factory with a size of 1500 acres stood distinctively in the Seventh Area industrial zone. Because of its distinctiveness, the mutated humans chose the place as its base. The outskirts were built with high walls, and the plant inside was reinforced into a fortress.

In front of mutants and most survivors, the fortress was unbreakable, but that was not the case in front of the NAC.

The castle in the mutated human's eyes will become their own grave!

After capturing the second line of defense, the First Division unleashed a total of 1000 shells into the factory which turned the walls around the factory and its primary structure into shambles.

After the rain of destruction, the armored vehicles equipped with drone terminals moved along with the power armors and the soldiers followed right behind them. They engaged in heavy fire with the mutated humans inside the factory.

A gruesome battle.

To both sides, there was no concept of surrendering.

Humans and mutated humans were not the same species.

With six hours of a full-scale battle coming to an end, the First Corp soldiers finally killed the last mutated human. They put up the NAC flag on the roof of the half-destroyed plant and signaled their victory in the Seventh Area!

Chapter 435: Peacekeeper

Only nine thousand something hostages were being rescued. When the NAC soldiers saved the pitiful people from the ruins and shambles, they were so emotional that they began to burst out in tears.

Rescuing the Defenders was only a side mission they did but not the obligation of the First Division. So during the rain of destruction, Cheng Weiguo was not concerned about them at all.

It was reasonable because Cheng Weiguo would never risk the soldiers' lives for strangers. It was a great deed to be able to save them in the first place.

After they captured the Seventh Area, Cheng Weiguo ordered the soldiers to fortify while the supplying trucks returned to Shenxiang for ammo, each squadron reported their casualty numbers. The confiscated the weapons and ammo recorded on the books. The useful ones were brought along, the not useful ones were placed together as junk with the recovered Type C, B, and A steels while these supplies waited for the trucks to be dragged to Shenxiang Colony.

As to the prisoners rescued, Cheng Weiguo ordered the soldiers to settle them into the temporarily constructed camps and provided them nutrient supply. He also recruited soldiers and engineers willing to join the force.

A lot of them were soldiers from the Jia City Defenders. They only needed a rifle without any training to become a capable soldier. When they heard that Cheng Weiguo planned to attack Jia to seek revenge from the mutated humans and free their home, they joined under the banner of NAC without any hesitation.

The First Corp obtained arsenals of weapons from the mutated humans. Cheng Weiguo then scattered a part of the 1400 soldiers among each of the infantry battalions while the other part formed

their own infantry battalion. They also brought the 1000 engineering soldiers along which could help with repairs and help build the defense fortifications.

After regrouping, the First Corp force instantly expanded to more than four thousand people.

The next morning, the regrouped First Corp continued to head to Jia City.

As to the remaining prisoners rescued, after Cheng Weiguo sought Jiang Chen's opinion, he temporarily settled them in the Seventh Area and promised that once he captured the city, he would come back for them.

The actual battlefield was in Jia.

And the mutated humans stationed in the Seventh Area were only an appetizer.

...

"Five power armors, 31 kinetic skeletons, destroyed. 110 fatalities, 132 seriously wounded. 210 thousand rounds of ammo and 2200 shells consumed." Inside the office, Han Junhua reported the battle stats of the First Division to Jiang Chen.

The proverb of as soon as the first shot is fired, million would be spent was indeed true. The first battle cost over 350,000 crystals. Even Jiang Chen who made millions in the food business exclaimed at the amount of money a war burned through.

Of course, he didn't need to pocket the bill, but rather the war fund from the Sixth Street paid for it.

"What's the situation at the Sixth Street?" Jiang Chen stared at the hologram map and asked.

"The wall reinforcements are almost complete. At the same time, throwers activity is observed outside of the Sixth Street," Han Junhua said.

With throwers arriving at the Sixth Street, it meant the zombies and mutants on the outskirts of the city center had spread to the rural areas already.

"Lightning before the thunderstorm?"

Jiang Chen stared at the red dot on the hologram map before he fell into silence.

At the same time, the only thing he could do as a general was to sit in the office and wait for the news from the frontline. Followed by the expansion of the NAC, the number of things he needed to personally do decreased substantially. All the casualties and results were only presented to him as numbers.

He heard someone knock.

"Come in." Jiang Chen looked at the door.

The door was pushed open, and the director of the Aerospace Technology Research Institute walked in. He had a delighted expression on his face which was unseen on everybody else in the base.

"The thing you needed is now prepared."

Jiang Chen then looked at the clock on the wall and got up.

"Could you take me to have a look?"

"Okay." Jiang Lin nodded and headed for the door.

Jiang Chen looked at Han Junhua.

"I'll have to leave this place to you."

"Mhmm."

Her response was always concise.

...

Jiang Chen arrived at the Aerospace Technology Research Institute's launching field along with Jiang Lin. A few workers were surrounding four-stories-high rockets while busy working on

them. The meters high mechanical arm was connected by wires to the tablet as a technician was busy tapping on the screen while controlling the mechanical arm to extend the welding gun to weld the steel boards together.

Other than the useless tools being sent for land reclamation, all the scientists in Fallout Shelter No.27, excluding the people from the Research Institute, entered into the fallout shelter. When Jiang Chen ordered Jiang Lin to start the Aerospace Technology Institute, these scientists moved to the Fishbone base with their families.

They were first unwilling but did Jiang Chen really care about their unwillingness? The benefit was great, excluding the possibility of returning to the fallout shelter. Seeing the objection failed, they had to honestly contribute their knowledge and design rockets for Jiang Chen.

"Dolphin-10 intercontinental ballistic missile, developed in the late 21st century and used till now, it was the most deployed missile type in PAC territory." Staring at the rocket, Jiang Lin certainly looked proud.

To create this missile, he spent a lot of efforts learning. Although he didn't know why Jiang Chen needed a weapon that could hit the western hemisphere, he still followed Jiang Chen's order.

This one missile spent more than one million crystals in supplies. Jiang Lin had repeatedly received rolled eyes from Wang Qin.

Out of all the projects at the base, the Research Institute spent the most crystals because a lot of parts could not be produced, so they must pay expensive commission to explorer teams that headed out of the province.

For example, the propulsion engine of the missile was transported from the shambles of the Taipei launch base six hundred kilometers away from Wanghai. To transport this propulsion engine, the mercenary groups had to take the risk of

being shredded to pieces by mutated sharks, so the commission was indeed not low.

But regardless of her rolling her eyes or not, she still had to grant the budget since it was the project personally approved by the general.

"Why is it called the dolphin? That's a strange name." Jiang Chen was intrigued.

"Deployed under the ocean, peace ambassador, you know." Jiang Lin used a welding gun to knock on the base on of the missile as he chuckled.

Jiang Chen first took a moment to process his words before understanding the meaning behind it as he laughed along.

Peace ambassador. (A play on words. Peace is pronounced the same way as nuclear destruction.)

[People from the future were quite humorous.]

"The entire missile is 11 meters long with a diameter of 1.55 meters; the launch weight is 35.1 tons. It could be deployed in nuclear silo 1200 meters deep into the sea with a maximum range of 21,000 kilometers."

"The launch mechanism is a non-separate three-stage propulsion model, that is, the underwater propulsion ring will advance the missile 100 meters underwater after the missile separation. Then the missile engine ignites and pushes the missile to the near-Earth orbit after the engine flame stalls. After the missile approaches the target, the engine is reignited and strikes the target area vertically."

"The missile shell is coated with an anti-radar material that reduces the radar 's reflected signal to the extent of a seagull, and theoretically only the' passive coherent positioning system can detect signs of the missile launch."

In terms of its size, the 11 meters long ballistic missile seemed like

a miniature toy compared to the twenty to thirty meters long ballistic missiles of the modern world. But without a doubt, anyone who dared to question its strength must pay for their mistake.

Chapter 436: The Construction Robot

Based on a length of 11 meters and radius of 1.55 meters, the size of the missile was approximately 20.7 cubic meters, with a storage dimension the size of 30 cubic meters, it was not a big problem to haul it to the modern world.

"Is the warhead placed inside?"

"A five hundred ton hydrogen warhead is being welded in right now." Jiang Lin pointed at the mechanical arm.

What's the meaning behind a five hundred ton hydrogen warhead? Four numbers could be used for reference.

Personnel exposed: 4.1

Personnel in a tank: 1.9

Personnel in a bomb shelter: 0.7

Personnel in a fallout shelter: 0.46

The four numbers refer to the lethal striking radius to personnel by a five hundred ton hydrogen bomb in kilometers, it doesn't include the radiation damage. Of course, it was estimated based on the modern world's standard.

The power armor and tank in the apocalypse were often designed with a lead fiber insulation layer which was highly effective against radiation damage. Because of this, the purpose of a nuclear missile was often to cripple the enemy's basic infrastructure and prevent the light infantry from entering the battlefield.

Only two or three deployed under the sea were necessary for the almost impossible to intercept five hundred thousand ton nuclear warhead to create nuclear deterrence. Once Xin announced itself as a nuclear nation with possession of global strike capability, even if the UA wanted to plot against Xin, they would have to weigh in the total worth of New York and Washington.

Deterrence was enough.

If possible, Jiang Chen hoped he would never use it.

Because once the button is pressed, the thing could not be stopped. Even with the technology in the 22nd century, it could not stop the brutal yet straightforward weapon.

"How many warheads can be produced with the remaining nuclear material?' Jiang Chen asked.

"Including the Uranium as well as the nuclear material confiscated from the Sixth Street, probably two more." Jiang Lin estimated and gave a conservative number.

The material required for the production of the dirty-type thermonuclear weapon is mainly tritium and tritium lithium, while uranium 235 is only the initiation device. There is only one way to get tritium on the wasteland and that is to extract one or two grams of tritium from the nuclear materials that have not been used up.

Of course, it was much easier to produce the non-dirty type thermonuclear weapon. Helium-3 would be extracted from a commercial-type nuclear fusion battery as raw material. However, because helium-3 and deuterium thermonuclear reaction will only produce non-radioactive protons, the use of helium-3 as nuclear warhead raw materials will not produce radiation so that the deterrence would be much smaller.

Such technology has yet to be developed in the modern world, even if the technical capacity were there, it would be hard to achieve.

Because the total helium three reserve was estimated to be 500 kilograms, the closest helium three mine was located on the moon...

Jiang Chen nodded as he was pleased with the result. "Great, your next mission is to create two more peace ambassadors."

"Are you planning to use these to clear out mutants? Allow me to be frank, nuclear weapon's damage to mutants are not ideal, those things crawled out of the nuclear crater in the first place. And the nuclear crater produced from the explosion may be used as a nest for mutants like Death Claw." Jiang Lin hesitated for a moment and reminded him.

"Of course it will not be used against mutants. If I wanted to blow mutants up, wouldn't it be better for me to get artilleries to launch the warheads? What's the point of creating an intercontinental ballistic missile? As to the purpose, you don't have to worry about it, just help me move this missile to the backyard of the mansion.

As soon as Jiang Chen finished, he left.

As the general, he didn't need to explain his actions to anyone. And because of that, Jiang Lin only let out a sigh wryly before he began ordering people to transport the Dolphin-10.

...

Returning to the backyard of the mansion, Jiang Chen began to disassemble the eight containers brought back by Wang Zhaowu from camp 27. The 400 tons of equipment included two construction robots, an underwater floatation device with a maximum capacity of four people, and a construction module; mining module that could be installed on the underwater floatation device.

The construction robot was a great invention. It could use the construction information downloaded on its chip to auto-complete construction. Although the automatic construction process was slower than manual operations, it was more precise and convenient.

If Jiang Chen wanted to modify the vessels Russia sold him, he only needed to scan the model of the vessel with a scanner back. Then bring it to the experts' familiar with the area in Fallout Shelter No. 27, use the quantum computer to create a modification

plan, and then download the construction information onto the construction robot's chip. He only needed to provide the material, the specific steps would be auto-completed by the construction robot.

After that, he returned to the modern world.

Jiang Chen drove by himself to a deserted island east of Ange Land.

One advantage of Pannu Islands was the number of islands in the territory, Due to the ten billion construction projects, most of the deserted ideas in Xin were under his name. It included this island called "Coconut". Although when Jiang Chen landed on the island, he didn't see a lot of coconut trees; there were mainly short woods typical to rainforests and the barren gravel.

After a trip to the apocalypse, Jiang Chen first brought back the two construction robots and a drone terminal.

The robot was one and a half meters in height with a fluid looking shell. Although it looked a bit dumb, it was meticulous in its work. The crab-like claws were equipped with welding equipment, multiuse wrenches, and other tools. The half belt half walking base could move rapidly on flat ground while being able to traverse in complex terrains.

Jiang Chen installed a drone terminal in the dense forest in the middle of the island and released 20 Hummingbird drones to scan the less than one square kilometers wide island, and then he registered the hologram map onto the control of the construction robot.

After the data finished uploading, Jiang Chen made several runs and brought the components of the underwater floatation device, the solar generator, as well as some reinforce steels and concrete over.

Jiang Chen first marked the area where the supplies were stored

on the island and then chose a relatively high point on the 3D map for the location of the solar panels.

The two construction robots immediately turned its' belts and moved to the components of the solar generator. After they transported the parts to the targeted location, the two construction robots skillfully began to assemble to solar generator together.

Jiang Chen only waited 15 minutes before the two robots completed the work.

"This is amazing."

Jiang Chen examined the masterpiece of the two robots as he exclaimed out loud.

The technology from the 22nd century, the ability to complete constructions automatically, it made building things as simple as RTS games, just build wherever you click. If this technology were introduced to the market, a lot of construction companies would kill to get their hands on it.

Of course, Jiang Chen would not introduce it to the world in the next little while.

The really good things must be kept in his own hands. He'll introduce it once he gets bored of it.

With the tablet in his hand, Jiang Chen sent the two robots to be charged on the drone terminal. Then he set a project to construct a two dock harbor and then added the assembly of the underwater floatation device onto the construction list.

With the symbol of <Construction time: 20 days> on the screen, he verified to ensure he didn't miss anything before closing the tablet.

He only needed to wait for construction to finish.

To ensure the safety and privacy of the island, Jiang Chen

deliberated for a moment before he decided to not station any soldiers of Celestial Trade. It was not that he didn't trust his own soldiers, but he was afraid people who kept an eye on Celestial would notice this place.

Once the island is stationed with people, it meant constant supply to the island which would reduce the hiddenness of the "Coconut Island". At least before the construction robots finish construction, it was better to keep it as hidden as possible.

For now, the best security would be the drones.

Returning to the drone terminal, Jiang Chen changed the drones' mission from reconnaissance to alert. Once the drones notice any boats approaching, the fourth-dimensional messenger device located inside would alert his EP.

After all this, Jiang Chen stretched his body and returned to the apocalypse.

But what he didn't expect was that just as he returned, he encountered a severe situation.

Chapter 437: A Sea of Zombies

Standing on top of the patrol tower, the pack of zombies swarmed together to form a sea of zombies. This scene could only be seen in the city center before, but now they were here in the quiet rural areas. No one knew why the mutant flood erupted; maybe it was because of a lack of living space in the city center or possibly because of the desire to hunt in groups. Regardless, they were here.

This despairing scene made any bystanders uncomfortable.

The twenty-meter-high wall couldn't bring a sense of security to the people, because...

Amidst the howling noises, a thrower, with tumbling steps, ran to the Fishbone base wall and tossed the infant zombie in its hands at the soldiers on the wall. The infant-sized zombie screamed with its dry lips and leaped at the soldiers firing on the wall.

Then it suddenly exploded.

"Ahh! My eyes!" A soldier with acid splattered in his eyes covered his face while he howled and rolled on the ground. He was better off than the others because the two soldiers at the center of explosion instantly lost their ability to breathe.

"Fu*k! It's the thrower - get it!" Wang Zhaowu roared at the top of his lungs into his earpiece.

Just as his voice faded, a sniper rifle exploded the head of the thrower.

Sun Jiao, with one foot on the wall, reloaded the Ghost sniper rifle with a crisp "Clang" before she continued to target the zombies. She pressed the trigger another time and executed another thrower with its hand just starting to come into view.

Watching this scene, Wang Zhaowu couldn't feel more tense. It wasn't because of Sun Jiao's shooting skills but rather her identity

as the missus of the general.

If anything happened to her, Jiang Chen would shred him to pieces. But even though he used up all the excuses he could think of to convince her, Sun Jiao disregarded all his comments and still stood fearlessly on the wall.

Objectively speaking, Sun Jiao was the person with the strongest combat abilities in the entire base. The soldiers standing there had barely gotten training for more than a year while Sun Jiao started roaming the wasteland from a very young age - more than ten years in total.

Seeing that he couldn't persuade her, Wang Zhaowu gave up.

There were only five T-3 power armors stationed at the Fishbone base - the rest had been transported to the Sixth Street to provide it with an extended line of defense. The situation was even more critical there as the swarms of mutant mosquitos had almost broken their line of defense. Fortunately, there were a lot of experienced soldiers at the Sixth Street who were all masters who had wandered the wasteland from the beginning. They took out their flaming robots and Molotov cocktails since director Chu Nan announced that the military government would compensate any damaged equipment. To save their own lives, no one dared to hide their treasure horde of weapons any longer.

On the Fishbone side, aside from the five T-3s, only two newly developed T-4s had been produced. And now they were stationed on the wall, unleashing their firepower upon the zombies.

The drone attack force roamed outside the base and sniped the zombies' heads with their small caliber machine guns.

Then there were the soldiers in heavy bulletproof vests kneeled behind the cover of the wall, their backs carrying a cylinder full of organic fuel. With their flamethrowers ready, they were cautious of any flying mutants that could appear.

Whether it was the light infantry with Reaper Assault Rifles or gunners firing machine guns, all the combat units on the wall had the same mission:

It was to keep the zombies as far away from the base as possible.

Just as Wang Zhaowu looked at the swarm of zombies with a perplexed look, Jiang Chen stepped into the patrol tower.

"General." Wang Zhaowu saluted.

"How's the situation?"

He had only been gone for a few hours as the situation deteriorated to this point. As he stared at the endless sea of zombies, he suddenly felt like the base was a small boat in a massive ocean.

"Terrible. There are too many zombies," Wang Zhaowu said with a bitter smile.

The zombies wouldn't die unless they were hit in the head. After fighting for so long, even though the wall was packed with fully equipped soldiers and sentry guns firing, the zombies still managed to reach the bottom of the wall.

Below the wall, the zombies raised their heads and screamed ferociously. They extended their arms, attempting to reach the 20-meter-high wall, pass over it, and rip apart the humans on the other side. The zombies in the back swarmed in and used the zombies in front to boost themselves up, creating a slope made of corpses.

This was what Wang Zhaowu was most afraid of.

Twenty meters was only six stories high. It would only take thousands of zombies to create a slope. And how many zombies were radiating out from the city center? It would be an underestimation to say a million.

To prevent the corpse ladder strategy, the soldiers on the wall

tossed grenades at the tightly-packed zombies. But this was only a band-aid solution as even though grenades could do significant damage to the zombies, their corpses would still remain behind the wall.

Through the bulletproof glass, Jiang Chen gazed at the countless broken faces. Occasionally, a few infant zombies would smash into the glass of the patrol tower, creating dark green stains.

"General." Wang Zhaowu took a deep breath and carefully opened his mouth.

"Hmm?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Your missus is there." Wang Zhaowu pointed at the wall.

Jiang Chen watched Sun Jiao firing her sniper rifle as he spoke helplessly.

"Just let her be."

He could understand her intentions of wanting to help. Right now, they were only in the initial stage of the mutant flood, so it wasn't too dangerous for her to be on the frontlines; he might as well just let her be. Especially considering her combat abilities, she would be okay even if everyone else on the wall died.

"What's the status of the Roar mortars at the base?" Jiang Chen picked up the binoculars and observed the distribution of zombies in the distance. Inside the sea of zombies, Jiang Chen spotted a few vomiters with their bellies raised.

"Prepared and ready to launch," Wang Zhaowu answered.

Since mortar shells weren't unlimited, Fishbone base only had a reserve of 2000 rounds. Only when the zombies were in large enough numbers would bombardment by the mortars be most effective. So up til now, Wang Zhaowu hadn't used the mortars yet.

"Then use it now - I see vomiters appearing 6.6 kilometers away,"

Jiang Chen lowered his binoculars in front of his chest as he spoke gravely.

Wang Zhaowu was shocked as he immediately picked up the binoculars and looked into the distance.

He was too busy having a headache about what was happening that he forgot to check the horizon.

Wang Zhaowu put out the order:

"Attention mortars, angle 72 degrees, distance 6.5 kilometers, fire!"

"Roger."

The sound of shells being unloaded transmitted from the square at the center of the base. The ten mortars formed a formulation with ten soldiers operating them. The shells were launched into the sky with an electromagnetic propulsion with a maximum range of 12 kilometers.

The mortars could launch 20 shells per minute on average. In just a minute, 200 shells were fired.

In their field of vision, the twenty-something vomiters were instantly covered by the shells raining down from the sky.

Thick smoke engulfed the sky. A minute later, new zombies made their way through the thick smoke. And the vomiters were blown to pieces.

"How many shells can the military plant produce?" Jiang Chen asked Wang Zhaowu as he gazed at the black smoke in the distance.

"If there are enough supplies, the maximum production is 200 shells."

[200 shells? A day's production isn't enough for one minute.]

Jiang Chen was thinking hard.

He was contemplating if he should bring something over from the modern world.

Chapter 438: Incinerating Zombies

The zombies behind the wall were piled two to three meters high already. Seeing as the opportunity was right, the survivors brought the fuel cylinders up to the wall and began to pour it onto the zombies. Then the survivors tossed down torches.

The fuel wasn't gasoline but an organic fuel similar to an alcohol mixture. It is worth mentioning that most of the vehicles in the 22nd century used high-capacity batteries, not fossil fuels. Because of this, all of Wanghai City barely had any fuel stations; what replaced them were charging stations.

Controllable fusion made electricity extremely cheap in the 22nd century. Power was produced from the fusion power stations located on the moon then transported through wireless technology to relaying satellites before reaching the earth's surface. Fossil fuels naturally, were replaced.

And because of this, ten minutes after the war erupted, the world was vulnerable to a massive blackout. The small number of nuclear power and geothermal stations could only sustain military production rates. A lot of the nuclear fusion batteries used in civilian facilities were all confiscated and sent to the frontlines as fuel for power armor and tanks.

What was worse was that in the next few nuclear winters after the war, the survivors couldn't find any fuel at all. Without power, electric heaters became scrap metal. The one saving grace was that the World Alliance Organization was at least somewhat useful - they left the survivors technology related to crystals, a large number of unused weapons and functional production equipment. This allowed the survivors, who had to face mutants and harsh winters, to have a chance at survival.

Although these weapons consequentially caused the birth of raiders, they did help the survivors pass through the most

challenging period of time. Even if most survivors felt angry and disappointment towards the space colonization ship project, they still recognized that the World Alliance Organization did something good for them.

Flames were blazing and burning sky-high.

Thick smoke from four different directions engulfed Fishbone base. The soldiers all wore protective masks and the survivors all fled from the wall, covering their noses and mouths.

The fuel itself produced only a small amount of smoke; the burning zombies were the major source of the smoke. The thick smoke surrounding the base was almost comparable to a chemical weapon which substantially impaired the vision of the soldiers on the wall.

It wasn't easy to produce the fuel - aside from requiring Carm tree sap as the raw ingredient, the fuel consumed 1.3 times the electricity compared to the heat generated through burning. With twenty cylinders dumped down, it used a total of 15 tons of Carm tree sap and five thousand crystals.

War is the same as burning money; Jiang Chen just witnessed a fine example to this point.

Because of the obstruction due to the smoke, the zombies couldn't rush up the wall for the time being. Aside from retaining the instinct to hunt for people, zombies also retained a fear of flames. Although they wouldn't necessarily flee, zombies wouldn't come any closer either.

After the drones confirmed the zombies halted their attack, the soldiers on the wall finally got some breathing room. Soldiers with sore shoulders and necks all sat along the wall while volunteer workers and women headed onto the wall, bringing nutrient supply, water, and towels to the people protecting them.

The flames lasted two hours.

Once the flames stopped, the carcasses piled one-story high turned to dust and left with the wind.

"The most difficult period is the night." Wang Zhaowu, with eyebrows furrowed, stared at the outside.

"Can the soldiers handle it?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Rotating five shifts. Every two hours, 400 people go to sleep. The production line for the machine guns and ammo can't stop; they have to handle it. There isn't much fuel at the base, so we have to do this."

The patrol tower, acting as the command tower, had been fitted with an air filtration device. Although there was thick smoke outside, the air in the room was somewhat normal.

"Can you use gasoline?" Jiang Chen asked abruptly.

"Gasoline?" Wang Zhaowu processed this for a second before he said with a wry smile, "It would work, but where are we going to find that? Wanghai City before the war was an economic center, not an industrial base. Even if there were factories that used fuel before, they're most likely cleaned out by survivors searching for fuel."

Although fossil-based fuels were abandoned, there were still industrial applications for oil. Aside from burning, oil could be used as an excellent organic solvent as well as the raw material for rubber and plastic products.

Wang Zhaowu naturally assumed Jiang Chen was talking about industrial fuel since he didn't know Jiang Chen's secret.

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen said, while scratching his chin: "You don't have to worry about it. I'll think of some ways to bring some here."

"That would be the best." Wang Zhaowu was out of solutions himself.

Just then, there was a weak knocking sound at the door.

"Come in."

The door opened and a figure that surprised Jiang Chen appeared at the door.

The girl wore a giant protective mask and timidly walked into the room. Her white cotton dress was stained with dirty smoke. Jiang Chen noticed there was a delicate lunchbox tightly clenched between her arms.

"Yao Yao? Why are you here?" Jiang Chen walked over, surprised by her presence.

"I-I was afraid you might be hungry," she said timidly. Then she took out a giant mask, smiled at Jiang Chen and handed him the lunchbox between her arms. "So I cooked some food for you and brought it over."

Wang Zhaowu knew too well what to do in this situation and turned around to face the wall.

But he muttered in his mind: [Good thing my daughter is only a one-year-old.]

Jiang Chen would have a spectacular expression if he could read his mind.

"Did you eat?" Jiang Chen knelt down and tousled Yao Yao's head.

"I haven't." Yao Yao scratched her face and said in a small voice.

"Then let's go eat together." Jiang Chen smiled.

"But, is this place going to be okay?" Yao Yao looked warily at the thick smoke outside.

"General, don't worry, I'm here." Wang Zhaowu turned around just at the right time, speaking at just the right moment.

[Nice, I like you.]

Jiang Chen smiled at him and nodded before he picked up Yao Yao's hand.

"Let's go. Let's ask Sun Jiao to come along."

"Mhmm!" Yao Yao nodded as she held onto his familiar, big hand with a joyful smile.

After he put on his protective mask, Jiang Chen managed to find Sun Jiao with a sniper rifle at the corner of the stairs. With her face pitch-black, Jiang Chen couldn't hold in his laughter and passed her a protective mask.

"This place is going to choke me to death." Sun Jiao rolled her eyes exaggeratedly as she snatched the protective mask and put it on.

"I told you to stay home, but you just had to come out," Jiang Chen chirped.

"I wanted to. And I took out 51 throwers today - shouldn't you compliment me?" Sun Jiao swished her luscious hair filled with dust as she spoke with her chest raised proudly.

"If you dare to get hurt, I'll make sure you learn a lesson or two."

Jiang Chen gave her a hard stare, although no one could see his expression behind his giant mask.

Chapter 439: The Heartwarming Bubble Bath

When they returned home, Sun Jiao didn't even take off her mask before she ran into the shower. Although she didn't care about her appearance on the frontline, the civilized side of her loved being clean in her everyday life.

She definitely didn't want to expose her ugly side to the people she liked. Although Jiang Chen thought Sun Jiao with a face covered with dust and soot was still cute.

There were two bathtubs in the mansion. Jiang Chen also wanted to take a shower after sneaking out from the smoke of the burning zombies, but when he realized there were only two bathtubs, he met a pair of big, timid eyes filled with hope.

"If we bathed together, Yao Yao wouldn't mind."

With a completely red face, Yao Yao buried her head, her fingers twisted together.

After wavering for a moment, she worked up the courage to continue: "And-and Yao Yao has great back rubbing skills. If you don't believe me, you can ask Xiaorou."

Without any impure thoughts, and purely because he didn't want to reject the eyes filled with hope, Jiang Chen gulped and led her soft hand into the washroom.

He felt like he was a thief.

Jiang Chen sat in the bathtub filled with bubbles as the girl hummed cheerful tones while she rubbed Jiang Chen's back.

Her wet strands of hair, mixed with a refreshing fragrance, constantly stroked Jiang Chen's back because of her movements.

The on-and-off coolness somehow made him lose control, especially since the soft hands seemed like they had some magical

effects as he felt all his weariness being washed away.

Needless to say, it was a delightful experience having a Loli rubbing his back.

[Yao Yao, grow up sooner...]

Jiang Chen muttered in his mind.

When would the inducer effect be alleviated?

"Turn around; the front needs to be washed too." Yao Yao didn't notice the change in Jiang Chen as she spoke to him in a cheerful tone.

Jiang Chen felt a warm itching beside his ear and he inhaled deeply. He used some bubbles to cover up his waist while forcing a smile.

"Uh, I can do it myself."

Yao Yao turned her head and her cute mouth moved.

"Okay."

Just as Jiang Chen felt relieved and thought it was over, the sound of water came from behind him.

Yao Yao stood up, held the side of the bathtub, swiveled her smooth legs, and carefully turned around before she sat back in the water.

After she gained her balance, Yao Yao nervously shook her legs in the water and said what she had been hoping with a blushed face.

"Could you help Yao Yao rub her back?"

Jiang Chen's instincts told him it was better to say no.

But the cute voice made it impossible to refuse.

...

When the blushing Yao Yao and Jiang Chen came out of the bathroom, it was already dark outside.

In the dining room, the three girls had already been waiting for a while. The hungry Lin Lin pouted and sat in front of the table with her chopsticks. When the two latecomers finally appeared in the hallway, she secretly peeked at them before moving her gaze away. Sun Jiao and Sun Xiaorou gazed at Jiang Chen slyly.

One was slightly jealous; the other had other nefarious intentions.

Jiang Chen felt awkward under their gazes. He sat down while scratching his nose while Yao Yao, with her face still red, ran into the kitchen.

When he sat down, he felt three pairs of eyes focused on him.

"Did you eat her?" Sun Jiao grinned.

"No." Jiang Chen shook his head as he had a wry smile. "Am I that big of a pervert?"

The three girls all nodded simultaneously.

Jiang Chen's expression changed as he wanted to rebut, but he didn't know what to say so he stared at Lin Lin instead.

"Why are you involved in this? Aren't you afraid I'll turn into a pervert?"

For some reason, Lin Lin didn't use her loud mouth and only made a funny face at Jiang Chen before she looked away.

[Eh? Something feels odd.]

[Is she sick?]

Jiang Chen wondered.

When he recalled the last time Lin Lin coughed, he felt concerned. Although Lin Lin always argued with Sun Jiao and himself, she was a kind person (digitalized human) inside. But just as he was about to ask about her health, Yao Yao brought some steaming food over.

"Time to eat. We're eating hotpot today." Yao Yao happily removed the cover of the pot.

"Smells so good! Finally, we can eat. I'm starving." Lin Lin stood up excitedly and reached out with her chopsticks first.

"No one's trying to fight you for it." Sun Jiao rolled her eyes.

"If you're slow, the delicious lamb rolls will be gone." Lin Lin chewed while she smirked.

"..."

The question hanging in Jiang Chen's mind was quickly taken over by the happy atmosphere.

Considering how energetic Lin Lin looked now, he didn't ask more.

[Perhaps it was just an illusion; maybe she's okay now...] Jiang Chen thought in his mind.

After dinner, Sun Jiao left with the sniper rifle again. Jiang Chen rested on the sofa for a while before he headed to the backyard. Since the apocalypse lacked fuel, he planned to bring back some gasoline.

Speaking of gasoline, when he saw the swarms of zombies, he suddenly had an idea: what if he brought back weapons from the modern world?

He always had the perception that the weapons from the modern world were all subpar in penetration and stability compared to the arms of the apocalypse. And since the apocalypse had never lacked weapons before, he never considered this option.

But when he carefully thought it over, weapons from the modern world weren't necessarily useless. At least when used against flesh, there wasn't much difference between the Reaper Assault Rifle and AK47. A headshot yielded the same result with the only problems being recoil and accuracy. If they weren't being used against

zombies with higher mutation levels or mutants with stronger defenses, modern weapons could still be useful in the apocalypse.

A lot of the pistols and rifles created by survivors weren't necessarily stronger than their modern world counterparts.

Of course, this wasn't to say Jiang Chen planned to bring light weapons back; Fishbone base had a high reserve of ammo and rifles, and the ammo production line was also in steady production. As to what exactly to bring, he needed to think carefully. The most crucial task was to solve the fuel problem.

"Do you need my help?" Just as Jiang Chen reached the door, Sun Xiaorou stopped him and said with seriousness, "With my abilities, I can be helpful in combat."

The ability to explode crystals?

[It will be helpful, but it'll burn too much money...] Jiang Chen muttered in his head.

"It's okay. Your sister is giving me enough of a headache."

Sun Xiaorou gave up the idea.

"Be careful when you're out there."

"Mhmm." He nodded with a smile.

He put on the protective mask and left again.

Chapter 440: Purchasing Gasoline

The scenery changed and the repressive atmosphere instantly vanished.

Interdimensional travel took him to Coconut Island.

As part of his routine, he confirmed that there were no calls before he headed to the beach.

The two construction robots were still working meticulously on the construction site. After he checked their progress on the tablet, Jiang Chen let them be and boarded his boat. He took out the backup oil canister and filled up the boat before he soared to Coro Island.

It was deep into the night; only a few scattered lights were visible in the city center.

Jiang Chen didn't immediately return to his mansion when he got off the boat. Instead, he drove to a gas station at the southern end of the island.

When Jiang Chen parked beside a self-serving pump, he honked a few times.

Immediately after, the employee working the night shift walked out.

The man in uniform rubbed his eyes while walking out sluggishly. He had been taking a nap.

Most of the citizens in Xin were bilingual. Kebal glanced at Jiang Chen in the car, yawned, put his hand on the roof, and spoke in annoyance.

"How much do you want to add?"

"As much as possible."

Kebal took a moment to process what he just heard and tugged on his mustache.

"How much?"

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste words on him as he took out a stack of cash and slapped it onto his car hood. "2000 USD. Please prepare a few barrels for me."

Just in case, he usually kept some cash in the storage dimension.

2000 USD?!

Kebal was instantly awake. He didn't move, but he looked suspiciously at Jiang Chen.

"2000 USD? Why do you need so much gasoline?"

He had to ask because Xin wasn't completely at peace, which made everyone uneasy. If he sold this much gasoline and someone used it for terrorism, he would be the one to blame.

Even if selling this much gasoline would get him more commission at the month's end, he was afraid to sell this much right now!

Jiang Chen let out a sigh, took out the Presidential Palace document and waved it in front of him.

"It's not good for you to ask too many questions, buddy."

Kebal took a look at the document and all his suspicions disappeared. To be able to freely enter the Xin Presidential Palace, this guy was definitely not a terrorist and likely working for the president.

"The barrels are in the warehouse, wait a moment." Kebal handed the document back to Jiang Chen before he jogged to the warehouse.

"Wait, do you have a truck here?" Jiang Chen stuck his head out the window and stopped him.

Kebal shook his head. "No, but my pickup truck that I use is there."

"Okay, what's your name?"

Kebal paused.

"Kebal. Why?"

"Mr. Kebal, do you want to make 1000 USD?" Jiang Chen put his hand in his pocket and pulled out another stack of cash with a smile.

...

Because the Development and Reform Commission (1) didn't exist, the oil prices in Xin reflected the international market. After the global crude market plunged to below 30 USD per barrel, the 91-grade gasoline dropped down to 1.3 USD per gallon, equivalent to 0.34 USD per liter.

By conversion, how much gasoline could 2000 USD buy?

A total of 5882.4 liters!

With a barrel capable of storing 159 liters, 2000 USD could purchase 37 barrels in total! Kebal flipped through the entire warehouse and finally managed to find enough barrels.

With this large batch of gasoline, it was enough for the zombies outside Fishbone base to have a great time.

Kebal worked diligently with the thousand dollar tip motivating him. He hauled empty barrels onto his pickup truck before he started to pump in gasoline.

[1000 USD to move the barrels to Celestial Trade's warehouse. Where can I find more of this work?]

After a few trips, he finally managed to transport all the barrels.

Jiang Chen handed him the tip and told him to "keep everything that happened today deep inside your heart." Kebal promised to all the greater beings he could think of, then Jiang Chen patted him on the shoulder, told him to prepare a few more barrels for next time before signaling him to leave.

Watching Kebal drive away, Jiang Chen closed the door of the warehouse.

He moved the gasoline into the storage dimension before he traveled back to the apocalypse.

The moment he arrived, he heard gunshots in the distance.

He placed the gasoline into the warehouse in the backyard. He called Wang Qin, ordering her to move the barrels into the storage.

Wang Qin was used to the general's mysterious ability to make supplies appear in the backyard, so she didn't ask more and immediately commanded the workers from the logistics department to carefully transport the highly explosive substance to a standalone warehouse.

Jiang Chen stepped onto the command tower again as he met Wang Zhaowu with a stern expression.

"What's the situation like now?"

"We already consumed 40% of the fuel reserve at the base, the production of fuel is far slower than the consumption, and the remaining Carm tree sap will only allow us to produce 30 more barrels. The Sixth Street's fuel is barely enough for them and they can't spare any additional fuel to help us. With our current state, we won't be able to clear the zombie bodies even after three days." Wang Zhaowu provided the bad news.

Looking at Wang Zhaowu's expression, Jiang Chen smiled.

"I already solved the fuel problem."

Considering that only six hours had passed, there was no way Jiang Chen could've acquired so much fuel. Therefore, Wang Zhaowu smiled wryly. "A few barrels aren't enough to solve the problem. There isn't a lot of fat in the zombies' bodies; it would take around 300 L of fuel to burn the bodies just surrounding one wall, and the base has four walls."

"Is 37 barrels enough?"

[37 barrels?]

[37 barrels!]

After he finally finished processing, Wang Zhaowu's eyes widened and he stared at Jiang Chen. "37 barrels?! How many liters per barrel?"

"159 liters. It's in the warehouse now."

"159 liters, that's... 5883 liters! Hahaha! That's amazing!" While he was thrilled at the news, Wang Zhaowu banged his hand on the table and pressed his earpiece. "Attention incinerating team, prepare to transport fuel from the warehouse. Let's burn these motherfu*kers!"

"Roger."

After finishing his command, Wang Zhaowu realized his blunder, so he started to laugh awkwardly.

But Jiang Chen didn't mind. "Don't worry about the fuel, I'll bring a few more batches over. You must keep the walls secure - don't skimp on the fuel, understand?"

"Understand!" Wang Zhaowu saluted with confidence.

Jiang Chen's 37 barrels of fuel solved the urgent crisis at the base. As to how he obtained it, who cares? As a subordinate, Wang Zhaowu only needed to complete the mission assigned to him!

Chapter 441: It had just began

A battle in the night was extremely disadvantageous to the survivors - not only would the soldiers' view be obstructed, but their weariness would also increase. They had some night vision goggles, but nowhere near enough to supply all 2000 soldiers, so the strategy Wang Zhao decided upon was using a physical light source.

After a period of time, the mortars would launch a few lightning bombs that would linger in the air and illuminate the battlefield with a bright red luminance. Although they couldn't make the battlefield as bright as day, there would be ample light for shooting.

On the zombie's side, the night brought them several advantages.

When the zombies were free from the sunlight, they were suddenly more fierce as if they were all on drugs. The typical zombies weren't only faster, but the arm strength of the throwers was also stronger as they tossed their "sons" into the base. The exploding infant zombies indeed created a lot of problems for the soldiers on the wall as they were taken down, one by one. This scene alone depressed everyone's mood.

Pouring down gasoline every six hours was the only opportunity for the soldiers defending the wall to rest. Only massive fire would make the zombies feel fear and stop their march toward the survivor base.

But when the flames vanished, the flood of zombies would continue their attack.

As the leader of the Second Corps, Wang Zhaowu didn't get much shuteye during the night. He only took naps on the sofa when the zombies were being burned.

Jiang Chen took Sun Jiao back to the mansion at 12. Although

Sun Jiao wanted to do everything she could to protect the base, Jiang Chen wouldn't allow her to fight in a fatigued state.

But speaking of Sun Jiao, Jiang Chen originally thought that a single person couldn't have a large impact on the battlefield until he discovered that she made a huge difference. Her precise shooting meant that a lot of throwers were unable to attack before their heads were popped off by the sniper rifles.

After six hours, over 200 throwers died by her gun! While the kills boosted the soldiers' morale, the pressure the east wall faced was also significantly alleviated because the east side was facing the city center.

For now, the greatest threat posed to the soldiers on the wall was the throwers.

The next morning, the zombie attack slowed down.

Even during the mutant flood, the concentration of zombies wasn't uniform. After the conclusion of one wave, there would be a short or long dormant period. Until the next wave arrived, the base was safe.

Standing on top of the wall, the scene on the outside was glorious.

The wall was burnt to a crisp black. The coal and bone dust mixed together to form patches of black and white while a repulsive burned smell drifted through the air. The burning of gasoline created a 7-meter vacuum outside the wall, but further outside the wall was still a pile of corpses.

The remains of zombies began to let out a disgusting smell. The previously unrotten skin tissue maintained by the x1 bacteria began to deteriorate. Mosquitos and flies began to circle the air; the plate-sized flies and human leg-long mosquitos sent a chill down everyone's spines just by their appearance.

The occasional zombie that blankly wandered around the wall

was quickly shot.

"Is this it?" On top of the wall, Jiang Chen asked Sun Jiao beside him.

"It's only the beginning." Sun Jiao, with an SK10 in front of her chest, sighed.

[Just the beginning?] Jiang Chen gazed at the mosquitos and flies that were beginning to accumulate.

Typically speaking, the more mutants in the area, the fewer the zombies; the distribution of the two was inversely proportional. Now that the concentration of zombies decreased...

It wasn't a good sign.

"How long will this mutant flood last?" Jiang Chen asked wryly.

"Until Wanghai City can return to a state of balance." Sun Jiao shrugged.

Any creatures, including the zombies, would have an instinct to create their own space for survival. Once the population exceeded the threshold, the city center could no longer contain all of them, so they had to expand outward and increase the radius of the city center.

Waiting alone would not end the mutant flood - only killing all the zombies and mutants migrating outward would end this war.

If not, they would have to give up their own territory and migrate further.

On the wasteland, where anyone could become mutated, natural selection remained the law.

A zombie in the distance moved in their direction, so Sun Jiao grabbed the laser rifle hanging in front of her chest, extended the barrel, narrowed her eyes, and pressed the trigger.

A needle-thin blue ray flashed as a fist-sized hole was instantly burned onto the zombie's forehead. Black content began to flow

out. It took a few more steps before collapsing to the ground.

A few rays flashed, and a few zombies dropped dead.

It didn't have the sound effect typically found in science fiction movies; real laser rifles were silent killers. Although they had troublesome maintenance, expensive parts, limited range, and weak defense against EMP, making them far less popular than durable explosive rifles, Sun Jiao seemed to be particularly fond of them.

Straight trajectory, no recoil, high power in close range.

"It's a pretty high-tech weapon," Jiang Chen said enviously while looking at the weapon in Sun Jiao's hands.

He wanted to purchase a few of the laser weapons as part of his collection, but the Sixth Street weapon shop only sold the C-type battery used for laser rifles, not the laser rifles themselves. Because he never saw one while he was at the Sixth Street, he shoved the memory of it to the back of his head.

The laser rifle was mostly used in space since no one dared to fire a standard rifle in gravity-free environments - firing just one shot might not hit anyone before the person who fired it would drift away.

"This is considered high-tech?" Sun Jiao rolled her eyes and retracted the rifle. "Let's go down, it won't be safe on the wall in a bit."

"The mutant mosquitos and the mutant flies?"

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes at the black cloud that began to form in the distance before turning around.

Because of the appearance of flying mutants, Lu Huasheng immediately evacuated the survivors at the base and transferred them to the temporary emergency facility in the underground tunnel.

Jiang Chen didn't want to brag about his foresight, but the temporary emergency facility he ordered to be built was useful. The flying mutants could easily fly over the wall of the base which would be a disaster to the normal survivors at the base.

Hiding in the underground tunnel would protect them.

After half a year of continual reinforcement, the primary transportation route between the Sixth Street and Fishbone base was fortified like an iron barrel. As long as both exits were secured, no mutants could attack them here.

When Jiang Chen and Sun Jiao headed to the community center, they didn't encounter a lot of people along the way.

After arriving at the command center, they saw the only remaining person in the community center – Han Junhua.

She had her arms crossed and was looking emotionlessly at the hologram map on the table.

The red and blue dots intermingled together, marking the enemy and friendly forces. Just by the force distribution, the First Corps had gained the upper hand, but the expression on her face didn't indicate that at all.

"What's the situation on the west line?" Jiang Chen immediately asked.

"A bit problematic."

Despite her an unchanging face, Han Junhua's voice betrayed a tone full of cautiousness.

Chapter 442: The Struggle on the West Line

West line.

The rural area of Jia, six kilometers away from Jia Sports Center, Cheng Weiguo established a temporary command post there.

He was standing in front of the hologram map with a finger pointed fiercely at the major roadways on the map. Then he dragged out an attack red arrow and ordered his teams to push forward.

"Attention Team 8, the mutated humans deployed a large amount of anti-air machine guns in the Sanshui Park. Your mission is to follow this line and penetrate the mutated humans' line of defense, and then take out the machine guns. Do you understand!"

"Yes, Sir!"

"Attention Team 5, attack... Dammit." Cheng Weiguo looked up at the orange cloud that exploded in the air.

Wide range electromagnetic interference bomb. It could disrupt any wireless signal in the area for up to an hour.

Cheng Weiguo cursed out as he smashed the radio filled with static noises onto the table and sat down on the chair. The electromagnetic interference was useful to both parties, without command, the troops in the front line would have to fight following their previous order.

The boring trick could only waste time since both parties would be unable to strategize its force. But the mutated humans didn't need to strategize, as the defender, they only needed to defend.

The mortar sounds in the distance never stopped. It made Cheng Weiguo feel flustered. The delaying tactic made him feel unsettled.

The mutated humans surprisingly had some great tools, The Dusk Church was not an easy opponent.

Soon after, a communication soldier ran in front of him.

Cheng Weiguo took a deep breath and spoke to him.

"Notify Team 4 to push towards the intersection from Nanxi Road."

Different from the terrain in Wanghai, Jia's complex river environment made it easy to defend and hard to attack. The command center of the mutated humans located in Jia Sports Center was between multiple rivers.

In order to defend the attack of NAC's First Corps, the mutated humans were smarter this time. They destroyed all the bridges and held within the defense line. And these rivers caused a great deal of trouble to the NAC armor units.

On the first day, the armored force of NAC was blocked at the highway entrance to the west of Jia. The bridge that stretched across the river were exploded into several segments. To allow the armored force to pass through, it took Wang Zhaowu some serious efforts.

At first, they launched a round of artillery attacks at the mutated humans across the river, then the engineering soldiers built a floating bridge. Only after they conquered the bank across the river did the armored force finally pass through.

Once the tanks crossed the river, the situation became a lot more positive. The armored force led the way with the infantries immediately following.

They advanced rapidly for four kilometers as the mutated humans suffered constant defeat.

But the situation quickly became grave again.

After they entered the city center, the number of rivers increased which hindered the armored force's advancement.

The catastrophic defeat in the Seventh Area made the mutated

humans realize the power of NAC's armored units. Therefore they set up the defense line along the river and persisted on fighting the battle in the streets. The mutated humans stationed in Jia were a much tougher enemy.

Other than the annoying anti-tank cannons and mortars, the mutated humans acquired a tactical nuke somehow. Two hundred infantries without armor protection instantly dropped down, and even a Tiger II stalled.

Fortunately, most of the people who died were new recruits from the Seventh Area, Cheng Weiguo's eyebrows only twitched as he didn't feel too pained by the loss.

But regardless, the battle turned into a stalemate. To defend against the possibility of another tactical nuke being dropped, Cheng Weiguo had to extend the battle line and gave up on the strategy of a group attack.

These mutated humans were definitely commanded by humans!

...

There were around twenty thousand mutated humans stationed in Jia which was five times the First Corps' force. Although the First Corps was equipped with a significant amount of heavy weapons and armored units. Due to the complex river system, they were forced into a siege attack.

"The lightning war strategy is being obstructed. The First Corps may not be able to conquer Jia in a short period of time." Han Junhua crossed her arms in front of her chest and said while studying the hologram map.

"I already said, it's too crazy to fight two battles at the same time."

Sun Jiao scoffed and sat on the sofa.

"Did you not consider the possibility of the mutated humans blowing up the bridges?" Jiang Chen asked Han Junhua.

"A total of 217 bridges were destroyed. Based on PAC's road quality standard, destroying the supporting structure of a bridge would require at least 600 kilograms of explosives," Han Junhua said emotionlessly.

130.2 tons of explosives. The mutated humans had way too many supplies.

"Fu*k, how did these monsters acquire so many explosives," Sun Jiao cursed out in frustration.

130 tons. Even if the entire Sixth Street were turned upside down, there wouldn't be that many explosives. Even if the Dusk Church had strong financial backing, they were a force migrated from the Northern Alliance Area. There was no reason they would possess so many supplies.

"Maybe it is not explosives," Jiang Chen abruptly commented.

Han Junhua and Sun Jiao both turned their attention to Jiang Chen. Suddenly, Sun Jiao seemed to have caught onto something.

"Crystals!"

"That's right. Sun Xairou said that her ability was induced through genetic engineering and not simply evolved from the genetic vaccines. Therefore, her ability is not unique within the Dusk," Jiang Chen said gravely.

The ability to explode crystals.

Mutated humans and humans were archenemies, only slavery and raid existed between the two with no possibility of trading. They acquired food through hunting the mutants, in the past ten something years, they must have accumulated a significant amount of unused crystals.

Other people might not be able to afford it, but the mutated humans didn't care.

"What are you saying?" Han Junhua looked at the two, puzzled.

Jiang Chen and Sun Jiao exchanged eye contact before they told the story of Sun Xiaorou to her.

Han Junhua lowered her head and deliberated for a moment.

"I have a question I don't understand. Why is the Dusk Church able to establish a partnership with the mutated humans? Did you ask Sun Xiaorou this before?"

Sun Jiao shook her head. She wouldn't make her sister recall the memory of her terrible past.

Han Junhua then looked at Jiang Chen.

"The mutated humans would require an improved FEV virus to obtain reproduction ability, and the Dusk needs the Garden of Eden technology in Fallout Shelter 005. The two parties have the same goal. The Dusk would leave the earth without leaving a trace behind, so it was not possible for them to have future conflicts," Jiang Chen organized the information he knew and explained.

"The Project Garden of Eden? When I was the commander in the 71st Mechanical Division, I heard some people mention that a state research institute was responsible for this area of research. It was rumored that once the technology matured, the challenges in space colonization would be solved," Han Junhua put her finger on her chin and muttered to herself.

"What if we provide the FEV virus to the mutated humans and let them fight amongst themselves?" Sun Jiao suggested.

"That's impossible. If we did that, we wouldn't have a problem in the short term, but it will be extremely problematic in the long term," Jiang Chen said wryly.

Needless to say, the ugly mutated humans were better suited for this piece of land. The ability to devour the Death Claw's meat, more poisonous than rat poison, raw and munch on unprocessed mutated fruits would mean that once these things acquired the ability to reproduce, humans wouldn't have a place on this planet

anymore.

Suddenly, Han Junhua raised her head and fixed her sight on Jiang Chen.

"What if we change to a different perspective? We first find Fallout Shelter 005, then provide the project Garden of Eden to the Dusk Church which eliminates their motive to control Wanghai. The mutated humans that lost their external support along with their military production in the Seventy Area will lose inevitably."

Chapter 443: Destruction does not require Technology

Release the Garden of Eden Technology to Dusk?

From humanity's point of view, it was a choice with only pros.

But unfortunately, Jiang Chen was a selfish person. He didn't mind that while he lived a great life, he could make other people live a good life. But there was a condition. The "generosity" must be given by him.

Perhaps one day he would agree to build the Garden of Eden, but it must be a NAC controlled Garden of Eden. As to releasing the project to other people, he would not consider the possibility at all.

"If their ultimate plan is to leave earth by building a space colonization ship, then they don't have a conflict of interest with us." Han Junhua looked at Jiang Chen.

"That's unfortunate then, they won't be able to leave." Jiang Chen smiled.

Han Junhua sighed and then looked at the hologram map with her arms crossed.

"Then war is the only option left. But from the ammo reserve left in Shenxiang, if we are unable to capture Jia in ten days, we will have to give up Seventh Area."

Shenxiang was where the raw materials originated, and the majority of firearm productions were located in the Fishbone base and the Sixth Street. Although they obtained a large number of mutated humans' weapons and steel, they didn't manage to discover any firearm production lines.

If they gave up on the Seventh Street and ordered the First Corp to retreat, that would mean that the crusade would be only half-completed. The mutated humans could recapture the Seventh Area

and use the long, harsh winter to regain their strength.

If NAC suffered heavy casualties in the mutants flood, then without a doubt the mutated humans would take advantage of this situation and declare war. If the mutants flood persisted till next year this time...

When the first mutants flood erupted, the entire Earth was in a nuclear winter, and it was significantly colder than the past years. Jiang Chen didn't think that the mutants would obediently go back underground during winter so he could not bet on the fact that the mutants flood would end by this year.

"Is it because of our ammo reserve?" Jiang Chen's eyebrows twisted together.

"It's mostly the mortar shells and the 5 kg and 10 kg bombs. we have ample in light weapon ammunition, but we can't conquer in exchange for lives." Han Junhua said without any emotional fluctuation.

[So, we are missing heavy weapons.]

Suddenly a smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face.

"I have a solution, we just need more shells and bombs right?"

Han Junhua looked toward Jiang Chen,

"Are we going to transport it from the Fishbone base with helicopters? Based on the reserve and production in the base, we don't have the capacity to support the First Division."

The Fishbone unleashed 200 rounds of mortar shells, 300 rounds of 5 kg bombs per day, to sustain its consumption speed, ammunition production was already operating at full capacity.

"No need to transport from the base, I can take care of it from elsewhere." Jiang Chen shook his head as an evil smirk appeared on his face.

Han Junhua looked speechlessly at Jiang Chen. Somehow, the

smirk reminded her of some unpleasant memories she never wants to recall again.

...

Due to the limitation of technology, the weapons from the 21st century were inferior compared to the 22nd-century weapons. A simple example, who would win between the Wanderer tank from NAC's First Corp and UA's mechanical division?

The question was more of how many units would be left in the mechanical division before the Wanderer tank ran out of fuel. How many units could the particle cannon and coaxial electromagnetic pulse cannon take out.

Unless it was directly struck by a nuclear warhead, the modern day weapon could not pose any threat to the Wanderer's armor.

But when the efficiency of killing the zombies are brought into the conversation, the UA mechanical division would be much more effective compared to the entire NAC First Division. Why? The reason was simple.

Because when technology is not necessary, any technology would be excessive!

For example, killing zombies. For example, launching an artillery rain of destruction.

Accuracy was irrelevant. Other than the dangerous mutants with insane mobility and defense, how many mutants would survive in the explosion, let alone zombies.

It was the same idea against the mutated humans. Their anti-tank cannon and rocket indeed posed a serious threat to the First Corp armor force. If an M2A1 tank were brought to the frontline, an anti-tank round would easily destroy it without any doubt.

But what if there were thirty-something heavy artilleries or even rockets?

Even if they possessed the rifles from the 22nd century, they were still made out of tissues!

Walking out from the community center, Jiang Chen held Sun Jiao's hand and headed to the mansion. Bullets unleashed on the wall far away, soldiers in a heavy bulletproof suit with a fuel tank on the back ignited the nozzle they held.

It was nothing technologically advanced, but if the mutant mosquitos dove down, they would become toasted mosquitos.

"You are planning to transport weapons from that side?" Sun Jiao acutely captured Jiang Chen's thought.

"That's right." Jiang Chen squeezed her hand and smiled proudly.

"Is stuff from your side reliable?" Sun Jiao asked with skepticism.

The skepticism was similar to a guerrilla hearing an ancient person had time traveled from the Ming Dynasty and said he would support the war with the weapons from his era.

Jiang Chen started to laugh and didn't explain. He promised, "You'll know once you actually see it."

...

After returning to the mansion, Jiang Chen immediately returned to the modern world.

Due to the influence of UA weapons that appeared in the hands of Country F's anti-government militants, Robert was in a tight spot. It would be too inconsiderate to ask him for more weapons, especially given that he already retired.

There was only one person Jiang Chen could ask.

It was near dusk already, but still sometime before people got off work.

He drove the Lamborghini out from the garage and headed straight to the newly opened Russian Embassy.

Natasha was patrolling at the gate of the embassy feeling extremely bored. Although she was the head of security, there was only three security personnel in total, so she had to fill in the patrolling slot.

Jiang Chen stopped the car in front of the embassy, rolled down the window, and teased her.

"Beautiful miss, could I invite you to dinner?"

Natasha looked at Jiang Chen in surprise as a grin appeared. "Of course."

She walked to the other side of the car, yelled toward the embassy, "Karachev, come out and watch the door." Before she received a response, she sat in the car.

After putting on the seatbelt, Natasha swayed her luscious hair and sunk into the comfortable seat.

"I heard that a gentleman is supposed to open the door for a lady."

"Are you not going to change out of your uniform?" Jiang Chen ignored her scoff and laughed.

"No need," Natasha's lips curled up while crossing her legs, "Uniform roleplay is pretty fun isn't it?"

[Face palm, what happened to her?]

Jiang Chen still remembered in Eastern Europe, when he tied her onto the chair, she suspected that he took her first time and stared at him with a look of death as if he had killed her father.

Jiang Chen coughed and started the car, "I won't be able to do business with you like this."

"Business?" Natasha's eyes flashed as she put her leg down and sat up straight, "For example?"

"My company needs some firearms used for self-defense. What do you want to eat?"

"Barbeque and beer. I remember there is beach bar not far away from here and their Barbeque is great." Natasha smiled.

She was familiar with the surrounding area already.

"Okay, let's talk about the firearms then, I need-"

"Don't you want to chat while eating?" Natasha interrupted Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen gave an "as you wish" look before turning on the GPS.

"Sit tight."

Jiang Chen stepped on the gas.

The vehicle transformed into a shadow and raced toward the beach.

Chapter 444: The Trade in the Distance

The apocalypse, the rural area east of Su City.

The one hundred story skyscraper stood desolately among the ruins.

Not far away, a sign engraved with <East Asia Electronics>, dangling on the side of the road, was replaced with the <Dark Red Chamber of Commerce> written in red paint. It hung in the middle of the building. The original owner of the building had the "foresight" to use a large amount of expensive and durable material in the construction of the building. And the building did, in fact, manage to withstand the nuclear explosion five kilometers away twenty years ago.

Unfortunately, the radiation still burned him into dust. When the nuclear blast arrived, he was on the elevator, coming down from the top floor office, escaping to the basement. However, regrettably, he died on the 27th floor.

The building exchanged hands multiple times before being occupied by the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce as their base. The hundred story height was a natural observation tower easily capable of scouting tens of kilometers away.

On the roof of the building, Lin Chaoen sat on the edge with his feet hanging in the air without any fear of heights. His eyes narrowed as he looked to Wanghai's direction.

He was unafraid of heights because it was an emotion that belonged only to creatures.

Suddenly, he smiled.

"Wanghai's sky has changed."

"Is this something predictable?" Two meters behind him, a man in a suit with a distant expression stood up straight with his hands behind his back. He was gazing in Wanghai's direction, but in the

distance, only the skyline of Wanghai was barely visible. Other than a few faint columns of smoke rising, he didn't see anything out of the ordinary.

Cao Guangkai, the current president of Dark Red.

During the past winter, his father Cao Jinsong launched a coup in the Sixth Street and died after the failed attempt. After receiving the information, he decisively took the soldiers loyal to him and executed his cousin who planned to split Dark Red with him; it was his father's nephew, Cao Wei. Finally, he controlled all of the assets of Dark Red and prevented the massive empire from falling apart.

It was after that he met Lin Chaoen and initiated a partnership with him.

A few months ago, he listened to Lin Chaoen's advice and withdrew Dark Red's merchant fleet from doing business in Wanghai and sold the assets under an anonymous name. He was skeptical of what Lin Chaoen said in the beginning, but the robot's words became true.

A mutants flood indeed erupted in Wanghai.

"Of course, everything in this world has causations." Lin Chaoen sighed as he said leisurely, "For example, the economic crisis in 2150 meant the war would be inevitable. And that economic crisis was because of..."

Cao Guangkai burst out laughing. "I'm not interested in listening to you talk about our history, I'm a businessman, I only care about now and-"

"Shhhhh!" Lin Chaoen suddenly interrupted him and put his finger in front of his lips.

Then, he put his hand beside his ear and closed his eyes; it looked like he was listening to something.

"Listen, they are talking again." Lin Chaoen leaned forward with

a smile, "The poor bugs."

Cao Guangkai, standing on the side, twitched.

He suddenly had the urge to kick the fool down.

But thinking that there was no point in being angry at a robot, he restrained himself from this dangerous thought.

"Pretending to be supernatural."

Cao Guangkai cursed out in a low voice and headed for the elevator.

"Are you not curious about what I heard?" Lin Chaoen turned his head and said sluggishly.

"I'm only curious what kind of mental state your designer had to bring you into this world." Cao Guangkai scoffed while taking a hidden shot at him.

"Perhaps... Mhmm, similar to father's mental state?" He didn't seem to understand the mockery in his words and shrugged. "Speaking of which, I have one thing I'm curious about. Can you answer it for me?"

"Oh? Is there something you don't know?"

"Don't you want to seek revenge on that person? He killed your father." Lin Chaoen smiled.

He was referring to Jiang Chen.

Because of Fishbone's sudden intervention, the balance in favor of them smashed to the ground, and all the stakes were collected by that person. The mantis preying on the cicada while the bird waited to strike at the final moment.

"There is no family in business. He failed his investment in Wanghai and lost all his stakes, that's all," Cao Guangkai said emotionlessly.

"You have an open mind." Lin Chaoen laughed mischievously,

turned his head, and continued to gaze into the sky in the distance.

"Although the Dark Red originated from the Sixth Street, the base is in Su City with business in Hang City and the even further Luzhou. I never agreed with father's strategy of intervening with the local situation. Only when we abide by the identity of a merchant can we generate more profit."

"Is that so?" Lin Chaoen said slowly.

Just like Cao Guangkai was disinterested in what he said, he was not interested in the business he was talking about. In his eyes, the human's stance toward crystals was like monkeys playing with stones.

They didn't understand what kind of powerful weapons he possessed.

"Yes." Cao Guangkai nodded.

Without responding, Lin Chaoen silently watched Wanghai in the distance. He seemed to want to say something interesting as a smile emerged from his lips.

Cao Guangkai stood silently behind him.

Just then, his communication device started to buzz.

He pressed the button on his collar and picked up the phone.

"Hello? ... Mhmm, I see."

He quickly hung up the phone and looked at Lin Chaoen on the edge of the building.

"The thing you need is ready."

"Oh? That's great." The smile on Lin Chaoen's face grew bigger. He pressed his hands on the floor and propelled himself up.

The move was nothing by itself, but to do it at the edge of a hundred story building...

Cao Guangkai thought he had a calm state of mind, but just by

watching his action, he felt tense.

"The recipe to the drug." Just as Lin Chaoen passed by him, he opened his mouth.

"Oh, that." Lin Chaoen seemed to have remembered something as he took out a USB from his pocket with sluggishness. "Here you go, it's all inside."

It was the recipe of Happy Times.

It was the recipe of the hallucinating drug.

Cao Guangkai held his breath while he took over the USB.

He felt his fingers were trembling.

He was not holding a USB, but a key to a crystal treasure.

Only one tablet was enough to live in the happy times before the war.

Lin Chaoen enjoyed the expression on his face for two seconds before he curled his lips into a smile that held deep meaning.

The camera zoomed out.

In the empty ground north of the Dark Red building stood a six-story-tall rocket.

Chapter 445: Arms Sale Agreement with Russians

Katyusha multiple rocket launcher, nicknamed "Hail", also known as "Stalin's Organ" in its early days was equipped by the Soviet as early as 1964 and had been in use ever since. Its presence was seen in Afghanistan war, Iran, and Iraq. Even in the modernized military today, this simple yet powerful weapon didn't leave history's spotlight.

40 122mm caliber rocket launchers mounted on a small military truck, it possessed a relatively simple configuration compared to the different types of rocket.

While the "small guy" didn't look fierce, its maximum firing capacity can reach an astounding 720 rockets with a total weight of 48 tons; it was more than the sum of all the UA Land Force conventional rockets being fired simultaneously!

It was the nightmare shared by the enemy's infantries and the friendly logistics personnel.

Its only weakness was accuracy.

The two sat in the beach bar in a remote corner. They enjoyed the Brazilian Barbeque while they discussed the dangerous topic.

When Jiang Chen brought up that he needed a type of weapon with strong "deterrence" and maximum coverage, the Russian girl with a couple of beers down immediately began to pitch him the "Stalin's Organ."

"If you are only searching for simple yet destructive firepower, no other weapon can fit you better than the BM-21."

With her face completely red, Jiang Chen mocked her, "Why do I think you are not using your talent effectively by being an agent? Why don't you become a salesperson for an arms company?"

"Burp." She indecently let out a burp as she rolled her eyes and she authoritatively swung her blonde hair to her back. "Be a man, are you going to buy or not?"

"Of course I will buy!"

"How many?" Natasha's red lips changed to a pleased curvature.

"Eight." Jiang Chen put down the skewer and said nonchalantly.

"Eight? Are you going to equip two companies?" Natasha with one hand holding onto her chin she tilted her head. "Should be okay, I remember the Eighty Division in the Ural Military Theatre is planning to equip new rockets. They are troubled by the fact that the junks have no buyer."

[Face palm! Is it really good to describe your arms like this in front of the buyer?]

[She is definitely drunk.]

"What's the price?" Jiang Chen finished a skewer and asked.

"I'm not sure, but by crude estimation, it shouldn't be too expensive, the most expensive part is the ammunition. Mhmm... How many rockets do you need?"

Jiang Chen put up four fingers.

"Four thousand?" Natasha yawned.

Jiang Chen mysteriously smiled and chuckled.

"Forty thousand!"

The beer cup dropped onto the table, and the beer splashed all over the counter.

But Natasha completely ignored her soaked shirt. Pressing on to the table, she stood up. She fixed her eyes on Jiang Chen with her half-sober pupils and spoke in a trembling voice.

"For... Forty thousand?"

"That's right, can you sell it?" Jiang Chen aggressively raised his

chin and smirked.

"Are you sure? It is not the mortar shell that costs a thousand Rubles." Natasha lost her voice.

"Are you sure it is a good idea to be this loud in here?" Jiang Chen coughed and reminded her in a small voice.

Natasha's face turned red, and she quickly glanced her surroundings.

The people in the bar all peeked in their direction. A lot of people in conversation stopped talking and held their cup just in the air. There were plenty of big news on Coro Island recently. Everyone's gossip desire was at its peak. Her words today would become something like "there was an arms merchant that sold rockets to a gang at the beach bar last night" by tomorrow.

It was better to keep the conversation about weapons low key.

Natasha realizing her indecency pretended to be intoxicated and put her finger under Jiang Chen's chin.

"Then what are you waiting for, let me see if you're a mortar shell or a large rocket."

She enunciated the word "large" with extra emphasis.

All the male creatures at the bar raised their head out of natural instinct when they heard the dirty words come out of a hot beauty like her.

Natasha covered her chest and walked out of the bar before disappearing from the eyes of the thirsty males.

"Those legs." Leaning against the bar counter, a drunk holding onto a beer said while feeling heated.

The other drunk beside him glanced at him contemptuously, "That's an amateur observation. After checking out girls for so many years, that curve is top notch. Burp-"

His words turned into an undistinguishable burp.

The drunk was embarrassed by his friend's comment as he argued back, "Stop just saying it! Don't you always brag about your toothpick? Why don't you go then?!"

The old friend forced a laugh and immediately lost his confidence, "I can't afford it."

Then, he pointed at the Lamborghini outside the window.

It had nothing to do with "mortar shell" or "rocket," the key was the green Franklin.

Regardless, the conversations in the bar were successfully changed by Natasha. The shell and rocket were referring to that! The thirsty males all looked at Jiang Chen with eyes filled with jealousy, jealousy, and jealousy.

"Uniform roleplay?"

Jiang Chen ignored the unfriendly sights and recollected what she said when she first got on the car. He then shook his head.

The breast that was more massive than Liu Yao's; the perfect curvature of her butt; it made him feel an uncontrollable desire too.

But those men were jealous for nothing, even Jiang Chen "didn't dare to do it".

Having an engaged conversation with KGB was no different than diving into the web of a female spider. There would need to be some serious mental preparation required if they have an extra friendly relationship.

Jiang Chen slapped a one hundred USD bill on the table and rushed straight out.

He nobly opened the door for Natasha before getting into the car himself.

"Is it okay to drink and drive?"

Natasha's bright red lips filled the car with the smell of alcohol.

"Didn't you realize you were the only person drinking?" Jiang Chen mocked and started the car, "Where do you live?"

Natasha grinned at Jiang Chen without saying a word.

Her eyes seemed to be saying "Isn't the most gentlemen thing to do now is invite me to your home to take a shower?"

"Okay, I will send you to the embassy."

"No!" Natasha immediately stopped him and gave Jiang Chen an angry stare.

If she appeared in the embassy like this, how would she maintain her authority in front of her subordinates?

"Your apartment?" Jiang Chen said concisely.

She bit her lips and gave the GPS a hard poke as if she was throwing a tantrum.

"Put your seatbelt on." Jiang Chen smiled at her clearly displeased look, opened the window, and stepped the gas.

The sea wind blew away the intoxicating smell in the car.

"You are scared?"

"What am I scared about." Jiang Chen laughed.

It was true; he was never scared of anything.

The wet shirt made the wind feel especially chilly. She drunkenly closed the window.

"The KGB identity, or crossing the line with an agent?"

Jiang Chen didn't say anything and turned on the radio.

Natasha rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen and pouted without making any more sound. Jiang Chen peeked at her through the mirror but only saw her drunken state. He didn't know what she was thinking through the half-closed eyes.

They quickly arrived at her place.

In a heavy breath, Natasha dragged off the seatbelt that made her chest lose its beautiful shape.

"Time to get a new car, the glass is bulletproof, but the engine cover and fuel tank are only covered by aluminum alloy."

Jiang Chen paused and then laughed.

"You mean, someone wants to kill me?"

"Do you really have to wait for someone to want to kill you before you are cautious of your own safety? Can't you just be a little more fearful of death?" Natasha rolled her eyes at him, then swayed her blonde hair while stepping out of the car.

It made sense.

[Once the mutants flood is over, I'll get a few experts in the Sixth Street to create a sick ride?]

Natasha was already at the door to the house. Jiang Chen suddenly remembered that there were still important matters to be discussed as he shouted out.

"I have a headache right now. Just send it to my phone. I'll contact them once I sleep for a few hours." She waved her hand out of annoyance and walked to her door holding her head.

[Is she okay?]

With her tumbling to her door, Jiang Chen was a bit concerned.

Finally, when she made it through the door, Jiang Chen let out a sigh and drove home.

Chapter 446: Adapt Ancient Forms to serve the Present

Around nine o'clock, Jiang Chen returned to the apocalypse.

The lighting shells had laminated the entire base to as bright as daylight, but the apartments in the base were pitch black.

The appearances of mutants like mutant mosquitos and mutant flies meant that the base wall could not protect the safety of the survivors. Only combat personnel remained on the surface while the rest of the survivors all evacuated into the emergency facility in the underground tunnel.

Jiang Chen's mansion also looked dark from the outside, but the glimmer of light shining out from the edges of the curtain signified the people inside haven't left.

There was no need.

The mansion was the most secure place in the entire base. With Sun Jiao and Sun Xiaorou inside, there was no need to worry about mutants posing a threat.

Sun Jiao didn't need to be mentioned as no one in the base had combat abilities that could match her's. Her sister, Sun Xiaorou, was not weak either. While she usually looked timid, she was very agile. Before she recovered her memory, she sneaked into the base and fought head-to-head with her "brother-in-law."

Jiang Chen pushed open the mansion door and discovered that Han Junhua was in the living room.

"It is better for me to remain on the surface to better command the force. Don't worry about my safety. Weapon training is a necessary course for PAC military commanders."

Sun Jiao, sitting across from Han Junhua, eagerly asked when she saw Jiang Chen.

"Did you solve it?"

"I did, I only need to head to the west line after." Jiang Chen nodded.

Sun Jiao wanted to say something, but she didn't say anything in the end. She knew why Jiang Chen had to make a personal trip; she was just concerned with his safety.

Han Junhua frowned and stated what Sun Jiao wanted to say.

"Allow me to be honest, I don't think your presence on the west line would bring much change to the situation, but rather it would increase the variables of the battle. Cheng Weiguo is more than enough to control the force."

Jiang Chen shook his head with a smile.

"I'm not there to lead the frontline. I'm there... to request help."

Jiang Chen thought about it for a long time before he managed to found the correct word.

"Requesting for help?" Han Junhua frown only grew deeper.

She didn't know Jiang Chen's ability, and before he was sure of her reaction, Jiang Chen didn't plan on telling her.

Even if a "special" chip was in the back of her head.

"That's right. I solved the lack of heavy ammunition on the west line. The only problem is that I must be there personally."

Jiang Chen's ambiguous response didn't satisfy Han Junhua.

But seeing Jiang Chen's eyes shine with sincerity, she stared into his eyes for half a minute in silence.

"If you insist."

Then she stood up and headed for the door.

"Are we going to leave now? I still want to sleep," seeing that she was putting on her shoes, Jiang Chen asked.

"Of course not now, but all the military movements must be planned." She loaded the laser pistol used for self-defense, "You'll leave tomorrow at eight with the helicopter. It is best you notify the people at the frontline now in case it interrupts their plan. I'll be back after going to the community center. You don't have to follow me."

NAC only had two helicopters now, and both were deployed to Hunter Corps.

The limited resources meant that even the general must make reservations before making a trip.

...

The arms sale quickly received a response.

The BM-21 was extremely cheap. The truck along with the rocket launchers only cost 200 thousand USD. Eight of them resulted in 1.6 million.

The real expensive item was the rockets!

The launchers were old, but the rockets just rolled off the production line. Since ammunition stored for too long may malfunction, it would ruin the brand. To the arms buyer with potential for a deeper relationship, the Russians were naturally unwilling to supply low-quality stuff. It would be the same as saying no to cash.

The 122mm explosive rocket with twenty kilometers in range cost 2000 USD per round. Jiang Chen threw out 40 million USD and purchased 20 thousand rounds right away.

The rocket with the same range was slightly more expensive with one round costing 2500 USD. Jiang Chen also purchased 20 thousand round of those without blinking an eye.

The rockets were extremely effective against the zombies.

[The mutants flood? I will burn half of the city!]

Although Natasha felt troubled by Jiang Chen's request to purchase a sensitive weapon like napalm rockets, she still reported Jiang Chen's demand to her superior.

After five minutes of silence on the other side of the phone, they agreed.

It was a lucrative sale totaling close to 100 million USD, and the buyer purchased the easy to produce, non-guided rockets without the need to worry about a technology leak. To Russia that lacked in foreign currency, the arms business was like picking up money from the ground.

Although selling petrol bombs were in the grey area of international law, to the five permanent members of the security council, who really cared? The Syrian anti-government force had plenty of UA weapons with some of the "restricted" items being sold by private military merchants.

Since they agreed already, Russia didn't disappoint Jiang Chen. Meeting this request, they transported the batch of firearms by air.

The next night, an AN-225 transport plane landed at New Moon Island's runway. The first batch of firearms that arrived was made up of the 8 BM-21 and 2000 rounds of rockets. The remaining 32000 rounds arrived in the following shipments.

Barkary and Ivan all expressed their helpless stance to Jiang Chen purchasing so many rockets. But Jiang Chen didn't plan to explain to them as he ordered them to store the equipment in containers and haul them onto the sea platform along the dam into the vessel used to transport supplies for New Moon Island.

When the vessel headed into the ocean, Jiang Chen ordered the captain to drop the anchor.

The old captain was certainly smart. With his experience, he knew that Jiang Chen was planning to use a small boat to smuggle something prohibited through custom. Although he didn't know

why Celestial Trade needed to be so discreet, he didn't ask more as he gathered all the crews inside the cabin for a meeting.

Since they didn't want you to know, it was better to close your eyes yourself.

Quickly, in just half an hour, Jiang Chen knocked on the conference room door to signal the captain that they could continue their journey.

Once the frustrated looking crew left, Jiang Chen dragged the captain to the side and passed him a cigarette.

The captain was astounded by the gesture as he smiled with his white teeth fully exposed.

"I understand. I don't know anything."

Jiang Chen nodded pleasingly, took out an envelope, and stuffed it into his pocket.

"Other than controlling the boat, don't ask about anything else."

Feeling the hefty weight in his pocket, the old captain revealed a bigger smile.

Jiang Chen patted him on the shoulder before he left.

With this, the people responsible for loading the vessel only knew that the arms went on the vessel, but were unaware of its destination. The crews responsible for transportation only knew that the containers went on board, but they didn't know what was inside.

After docking in the harbor, customs followed their procedure and inspected the containers, but discovered they were all empty. When they saw Celestial Trade's logo, they didn't persist further on the issue.

The reason why he was so careful was to prevent people with other intentions from keeping an eye on the batch of firearms.

Country F was in a completely chaotic state as the MNLF

equipped with a large amount of UA weapons left the government force in complete shamble with its intensive full-scale attack. The MLF that previously gave up on the movement to independence immediately sought an alliance with its old partner in crime after the situation took a drastic turn.

With the current state, it was hard to ensure no other eyes were watching Coro Island.

Since there were only two countries that had a negative relationship with Country F, Hua and Xin, if it were not caused by a religious force, the most suspicious perpetrator would be Hua. Following it would be Xin, the one behind the deterioration of F's current political stability.

There must be other agents on the island, but Jiang Chen was confident that they would not know where the firearms went no matter how much they investigated.

Even the Russians that sold the firearms themselves wouldn't know.

Chapter 447: Fire!

Black smoke saturated the air.

It was hard to determine if it was the cloud, radiation dust, or smoke from the rockets.

In a remote area east of Jia City, houses were scattered all around.

Under the shadow of the smoke, a few mutant cockroaches swayed their one-meter long antennae while they searched for rotten food.

To the ten-something people who walked by them, they didn't show any interest; only sour aromas could draw their interest. The starving cockroaches occasionally attacked the zombies, but they would often be scratched to death.

If a zombie and a mutant cockroach moved together, without a doubt, it must be because of a mutant flood, because only in a mutant flood would the mutants forget their hunger and attack the survivors along with the zombies.

Were there any other cities where a mutant flood was happening? No one knew. People mainly stuck to the places they knew best. Even merchant fleets that traveled far distances only managed to reach the Northern Alliance Area.

The current mutant flood was limited to Wanghai City, so Jiang Chen, currently in the rural area of Jia City, thought the air there was extra fresh.

"The battle is currently at a stalemate; we advanced 500 meters to the Jia Sports Center yesterday, but we were quickly fended off by their attack. The mutated humans obtained a large number of electromagnetic interference grenades and EMP grenades out of nowhere."

"The snipers in the Hunter Corps provided great help, but

following the battle pushing toward the city, there were more obstructions. The mutated humans' mortars and grenades also led to a high number of casualties to the Hunter Corps."

Cheng Weiguo looked as the cockroach on the road dashed into the shadows before he lowered the rifle.

"That's terrible."

Jiang Chen smiled as he led Cheng Weiguo and a group of soldiers in the direction opposite Jia City in a delighted mood.

The general didn't feel frustrated by the stalemate of the battle which made Cheng Weiguo somewhat at ease.

But with the frontline getting further and further away from them, he had a troubled look.

"General, can I ask where we're going?"

They walked ten kilometers already and they would almost be in the next town at this rate, but they still weren't at the place Jiang Chen mentioned.

"We're here."

Jiang Chen stopped and smiled at the abandoned factory in front of him.

Two days ago when the helicopter took him here, he randomly chose a spacious warehouse as a storage space for his arms. Because of the mutated humans, there were no survivors in the area. Thus there was no need to worry about their arms being stolen by scavengers; he only needed to place them further away from the frontlines to avoid being hit by stray shells.

After he chose the location, he returned to the modern world to patiently wait for the Russians to deliver the arms.

The perplexed Cheng Weiguo followed Jiang Chen into the warehouse.

But when he saw the contents, his bewildered expression visibly

transformed into shock. His widened eyes looked as if they were about to pop out.

"This is-"

Jiang Chen began to laugh as he savored Cheng Weiguo's shocked expression. He then returned to the door and shouted at the soldiers behind them.

"Soldiers, prepare to get on the truck. We'll take the mutated humans to see Jesus!"

...

Since fossil fuels had almost completely been replaced before the war, only the wealthy could afford to have a few internal combustion engine vehicles in their homes. Hence, cars that burned fuel were almost considered artifacts.

When Jiang Chen ordered the soldiers onto the car, he was dumbfounded to realize that the soldiers didn't know how to drive. With no other choice, he had to step up and personally demonstrate how to maneuver the vehicles.

With the general as the instructor, the soldiers focused all their attention on learning. While the principles behind internal combustion vehicles were drastically different from the electric vehicles common in the apocalypse, the driving style was similar. They spent an hour familiarizing themselves with the clutch before the soldiers finally figured out how to drive.

As to the conversion between the firing distance and angle, it was written on a sheet. The soldier responsible for firing would only need to punch it into the calculator.

The eight BM-21s rolled out of the warehouse one by one and dispersed under Jiang Chen's command. The stents on the side of the truck were released to stabilize the truck to finish the deployment. One hundred survivors from the Seventh Area transported rockets that filled the entire warehouse. Two people

worked together to lift a 67 kilogram, 3-meter-long rocket and push it onto the launcher.

Before loading the rockets, Jiang Chen instructed them to only load the white rockets - the red rockets were solid fuel rockets used against the zombies and mutants.

The rockets were loaded in an orderly fashion.

Jiang Chen took Cheng Weiguo to the roof of a building two hundred meters out.

Jiang Chen looked into the binoculars with eyes narrowed at Jia City 13 kilometers away. He grinned.

"Take a few more looks; it'll be a different place in a moment."

Cheng Weiguo didn't pick up his binoculars. Instead, he looked at the hive-shaped rockets lined up with concern.

"Do we really not need to move out the soldiers in the city?"

Regarding the weapon that existed two centuries ago, he was afraid the rockets would drop on his men's heads.

"Don't worry, a one-kilometer distance is enough."

Although Russian weapons weren't particularly precise, they wouldn't be off by more than one kilometer. Jiang Chen glared at Cheng Weiguo.

[You don't understand the intelligence of the "ancient."]

"General... Where did you get those artifacts?" Cheng Weiguo picked up the tablet used to control the rockets, asking the question troubling him.

"The vehicles are from a military museum. The rockets are manufactured following blueprints." Jiang Chen didn't mind his blatant question as he answered nonchalantly.

Seeing that Jiang Chen didn't plan on elaborating further, Cheng Weiguo knew better than to probe. He was indeed loyal, but he had

curiosity too.

The helicopter arrived above Jia City and hovered just out of the mutated humans' air defense range.

With the help of the radiation dust and cloud, it managed to disguise its presence and provided the aerial map for the battlefield. The wide range life signal detector opened and marked the locations of mutated humans on the control tablet.

With the red dots reaching only ten thousand, the mutated humans probably had shielding devices to block their locations, but they must have a limited range and were only capable of disguising important targets.

Based on human observation, they marked the unidentified areas. Cheng Weiguo nodded to Jiang Chen and handed over the tablet.

The general would order the annihilation of the mutated humans!

Jiang Chen looked at the launcher vehicles locked and loaded two hundred meters out. He then took the tablet.

The distance and target were clearly identified on the screen.

"Listen to my order! Angle 220, distance 14.1 kilometers. Prepare to fire!"

The hive-shaped rocket launchers gradually tilted up and all stopped at the same angle. When the blue flags rose up, one by one, signaling was ready. He took a deep breath and passed the tablet back to Cheng Weiguo.

He pressed his earpiece. Jiang Chen looked in Jia City's direction and shouted ferociously.

"Fire!"

Chapter 448: 166 BMWs Flying in the Air

Jiang Chen swore it was the most magnificent fireworks he'd ever seen.

If the ones he saw in virtual reality didn't count.

Rolling smoke instantly engulfed the vehicles.

Missiles screeched out of the launchers one by one, firing into the distance like arrows. Within 20 short seconds, 320 rockets were launched. Jiang Chen gazed at the smoke trails fading into the distance and he exclaimed:

"Too bad I couldn't see the explosion."

Cheng Weiguo handed the tablet back to Jiang Chen. He already executed the orders.

"Oh, also, and this thing." Jiang Chen smiled, took over the tablet again, and looked at the screen.

...

Beside the broken bridge.

The mutated humans taking cover held onto their machine guns; they were on full alert against any possible NAC attacks. NAC attempted to build a floating bridge three times yesterday, but they were thwarted by grenades, machine guns, and recoilless cannons.

The mortars and electromagnetic cannons caused trouble for the mutated humans, but in the end, those weapons were nothing. The mutated humans didn't suspect a thing; as long as they held their ground, the foolish humans would be the first ones to fall!

"They can't last any longer! We have ammo. We're stronger! Once winter is here, it'll spell their deaths!"

Standing in the back of their area of control, a mutated human captain wore a cape made out of the fur of a Death Claw. He waved the machine gun in his hand, shouting at his hiding comrades and

boosting their morale.

In the mutated human society, the clothing one wore represented power and status. Only a warrior who single-handedly defeated a Death Claw could wear its fur as a trophy.

"What is that!?"

Just then, a mutated human kneeling behind an anti-tank cannon roared out, pointing at the black dots in the sky.

"Those are probably their small toys. Don't worry - we have anti-air machine guns and EMP."

The captain mumbled as he pulled up the binoculars dangling in front of his chest.

The toys he referred to were NAC's Hummingbird drones. Whenever an EMP grenade was launched, the drones fell to the ground like flies struck by electricity, hence no one was afraid of those small things anymore. Whenever they encountered drones, they would just detonate an EMP grenade. Although the EMP would render the red sight scope on their weapons useless, no one cared.

The mutated humans didn't need to aim; the mutated humans only needed to unleash their firepower!

His ugly`eyebrows were knotted together. The captain readjusted the zoom and set his eyes on the black dots in the distance.

Clank.

He dropped the binoculars onto the ground. Just as the mutated humans looked at him perplexedly, his ugly face began to twist.

"Take cover!"

He roared. Facing the mutated humans' puzzled looks, he dove into the pit nearby.

But it was futile...

Boom boom boom!

The pouring rockets unleashed a deathly storm. The mutated humans taking cover and those inside the defense structure witnessed a scene only comparable to a living hell in horror. They looked at the dismembered limbs of their comrades and themselves.

The explosion covered every inch of the soil as it bulldozed the mutated humans' zone of control. It left shattered weapons and burnt limbs all over the ground. The rockets exploded the ammo stored in the trenches and triggered a second round of explosions. The trenches soon turned red and gruesome.

The first round of destruction was over!

But the nightmare for the mutated humans had only started.

With turbine engines igniting, the men in power armor crossed the river first. The engineering soldiers soon followed and placed a floating bridge that allowed the tank to pass. Immediately behind them were soldiers in kinetic skeletons and the destructive tanks.

With steel armor hanging in front of their chests, a thousand mutated humans with machine guns stood up from the zone of control further away. They furiously raced to the river and fired while pushing forward in an attempt to regain control of the riverbank. Some mutated humans even lifted the mortars and shot like an RPG, and some raced forward with nuclear grenades strapped onto their bodies.

The lead mutated humans with power warhammers were also there. Unless they were faced with the Type-50 electromagnetic pulse cannon, their armor was invincible. They ignored the bullets and bombs and ran to NAC's zone of control in a thunderous roar.

But they discovered in horror that before they could make it halfway, more rockets emerged in the distance...

The outline of the thick smoke in the distance decorated the

barren island in shambles. It was like a fine pen drawing out the jagged curvatures.

The rockets rose, came down, and brought destructive rain to the mutated humans in the distance.

The shrapnel couldn't penetrate the armor of the mutated humans, but the force could explode their organs and brains. Despite the incredible power the mutated humans possessed, they couldn't escape the fact that they were creatures after all.

The mutated humans were more cautious with NAC's rockets. They huddled together under cover while spreading out. They attempted to minimize the damage the NAC could cause. Two thoughts motivated them to remain strong.

[We don't have a lot of rockets left!]

[The attack is their last attempt to win!]

But reality proved that it was only wishful thinking.

Jiang Chen had plenty of rockets to the point where it was unimaginable.

With the mutated humans scattering, Jiang Chen changed the music playing to "Stalin's Organ." He maintained the 40-rockets-per-minute launch speed as the BM-21 fired in rotations to cover the mutated humans' zone of control. At the same time, the First Corps stopped advancing forward under Jiang Chen's order while they enjoyed the symphony.

Fires and explosions flashed nonstop on the tablet. The continuous strikes caused a lot of buildings due for repair to collapse and buried the mutated humans hiding inside. The landmark buildings such as Jia Sports Center remained standing, but it looked like it was on the brink of falling at any moment.

The continuous bombing lasted for an hour as the entire city center of Jia looked like it was bulldozed over.

Jiang Chen felt tired by the shaking screens. He shoved the tablet back into Cheng Weiguo's hand.

Staring at the flames in the video, Cheng Weiguo was astonished.

To be honest, he didn't expect such an ancient weapon could demonstrate such a destructive force.

"This is too astonishing." Ten minutes later, Cheng Weiguo put down the tablet.

"How many did we launch already?"

Cheng Weiguo scanned the empty boxes on the side and provided a rough estimate: "Around five thousand rounds."

[Only five thousand rounds? Still fifteen thousand left.]

Jiang Chen stared at the smoke rising fourteen kilometers away with his eyes narrowed.

[Wait, five thousand rounds?]

He then did the math - one rocket cost 2000 USD, and 30 rockets were 60 thousand USD, equivalent to a BMW.

Five thousand launched out.

Jiang Chen felt his heart ache.

Although he didn't lack money but with 166 BMWs flying in the air, he was still pained by the sight!

...

Inside Jia Sports Center.

Bo Yu sat on a chair in a gloomy mood. The explosions in his ears made him especially flustered.

Troy, the leader of the mutated humans, sat across him with the same gloomy expression.

"What do we do?"

The Dusk Church helped them blow up the bridges, provided

them with a large number of firearms, and brought the information "there's a mutant flood in Wanghai City; these people won't last long."

But the last one was clearly false.

He didn't know if the mutant flood actually erupted in Wanghai or not, but the humans here clearly were committed to fighting the battle.

"I said earlier that we should retreat to the west as these people aren't easy to deal with. The merchants in Hang City are easier to bully." Bo Yu closed his eyes and spoke lightly.

"The mutated humans won't retreat; we won't compromise to inferior humans. We will rip them apart, stuff them into a meat grinder, and make them into sausages," Troy said deviously.

[Is that so? The person sitting in front of you who helped you live for so long is a human? Do you really think by the simple fact that you have a head, it would equate to intelligence?]

Bo Yu scoffed in his mind but didn't say anything out loud.

He knew it was not the time for an internal feud. Especially since hours ago, he predicted that the mutated humans were in favor to win, or he wouldn't be sitting there.

The NAC soldiers were on high alert, and the rockets were constantly striking the city. Retreating was no longer an option. It would be death if they retreated now; even without the rockets, two legs couldn't outrun the tanks. Abandoning their cover would mean that Dusk and the mutated humans were waiting to be slaughtered.

[No other plans?]

It wasn't the first time he'd experienced this.

When he was surrounded by the military government in the Northern Alliance Area, he was in a similar situation.

The only difference was this time, his back wasn't completely against the wall.

Bo Yu looked at the ring on his finger.

The blood crystal reflected a charming but dangerous eeriness under the light.

"When will you send your people out?"

His people were dying, but his ally had no response at all.

Looking at the face reflected by the blood crystal, Bo Yu said gently.

"Don't panic, very soon."

Chapter 449: Seige on Sports Center

The mutated humans had a fatal weakness - they couldn't stuff their giant bodies into vehicles. Even if they always arrogantly referred to themselves as moving armor, they were just trying to make the best out of a bad situation.

If it wasn't for the Dusk Church modifying trucks for them, they wouldn't even be able to operate vehicles.

In the early days of warfare with Fishbone base, they learned how to install cannons onto their trucks. But faced with the Tiger II, their crude "high mobility anti-tank cannons" were a joke.

The most common anti-tank cannon used on the wasteland was Type-99, produced by deconstructing the primary cannon used on the Type-99 light tank. The Type-99 shells couldn't penetrate the thick front armor of the Tiger II, however. At most, it could break the belt and destroy the observer hole, but one round of Tiger II's 5 kg bombs could break the cannon along with the truck into pieces.

So the mutated humans learned the hard way to avoid sending out an armored force. Instead, they chose to take down the cannon and fire at them behind cover.

Because of this, the First Corps didn't encounter any "armored force" resistance.

The eight hours of battle ended as 20,000 rounds of rockets were unleashed onto 20,000 mutated humans. Scorching flames continued to burn inside the war zone and melted all the steel in the area, although Jia City hadn't directly been struck by a nuclear weapon. Paint and organic construction materials were all unconsumed, but they burned in the flames and emitted toxic fumes into the city.

High temperatures and toxic gas. The city was in shambles.

A lot of mutated humans didn't die from being buried alive or

explosions but from the fires and asphyxiation that ensued.

The soldiers who saw the General personally visiting the battlefield erupted into cheers.

[How is authority built?]

While everyone was wondering whether the fort was indestructible or not, you stood in front of all of us. Because of your presence, the indestructible fort collapsed.

You are the hero.

All the glory belongs to you.

There's no need for words.

It's not logic that brings worship but emotion.

Jiang Chen faced the cheering soldiers as he signaled to them that the war wasn't over yet. He wanted them to stand firm on their positions and wait for the order to change.

Jiang Chen took a tour at the frontlines and met all the soldiers there. He and Cheng Weiguo stood in the middle of their area of control while they enjoyed watching the massive fire.

This wasn't a war.

With absolute firepower, it was more appropriate to describe this as a slaughter.

"How long do you think the fire will burn for?" Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly.

"If it doesn't rain, it'll burn until tomorrow," Cheng Weiguo said while looking up at the gloomy clouds in the air.

"Then get the soldiers to rest. They won't be fighting for a while." Jiang Chen made the order then headed to the command vehicle.

"Roger!" Cheng Weiguo saluted and began to make the order on the tablet.

The flames were beginning to lose control, but the situation soon

changed at midnight.

Maybe the wailing of mutated humans received mercy from the heavens since a few raindrops began to fall down. With this change, Cheng Weiguo immediately woke the well-rested soldiers and prepared to launch the order to attack.

Gradually, the rain began to pour down.

The grain-size droplets descended from the sky, smothered the flames, hit the muddy ground...

Rose from the burning steel and rolled down from the power armor's surface.

"Charge!"

A thunderous shout came from the radio channel as the First Corps battle line began to move forward.

The electrostatic sound of the mortars began to screech in the air as ten lighting bombs rose into the air and lit up the sky near the Sports Center with their orange flames.

The armored force crossed the river and the power armor's steel boots extinguished the faint footprints as they marched forward.

The rain washed away the chaos on the ground and cooled off the burning corpses. The soldiers who walked by had to hold their breath - the pungent smell of burnt meat lingered even in the heavy rain.

It wasn't only mutated humans who died under the rockets - thousands of Jia survivors also died as a result. But in the merciless apocalypse, even the previous Defender soldiers rescued from the Seventh Area didn't drop a single tear for the deceased.

Death was the norm.

3,000 soldiers surrounded the Sports Center that stood tall while they prepared to eliminate their last remaining enemies.

1,000 engineering soldiers were handed rifles to rescue any

human captives remaining among the shambles and kill off any undead mutated humans.

Needless to say, the mutated humans were tenacious.

Even in this living hell, there were still a few who survived.

On top of the Tiger II, wearing kinetic armor, Jiang Chen heard an angry roar in the distance.

In the pouring rain, a mutated human with pitch-black skin shook off the debris on top of him, swung the power warhammer in his hand, and hit an engineering soldier into the sky like a golf ball.

A lead mutated human!

The three soldiers all raised their rifles in horror as they began to fire, but the deflected bullets clearly showed that all was futile.

Jiang Chen looked at the figure in silence as the lead mutated human reminded him of an unpleasant memory from the past.

He patted the cannon below him and the Tiger II immediately understood.

The vehicle stopped and the cannon began to rotate.

When Jiang Chen met eyes with the mutated human two hundred meters away, the cannon he was sitting on shook violently.

An eerie blue arc ignited as the electromagnetic pulse bomb fired.

The 5 kg bomb blasted through the raindrops and drew a white trail in the midst of the rain. When the white trail faded, the lead mutated human had already been turned into pieces of meat.

The three soldiers sat up and waved at Jiang Chen to thank him for saving them.

Jiang Chen waved back and signaled the Tiger II to continue.

In the rain, the First Corps soldiers surrounded the Sports Center

and engaged in battle on the street 300 meters away. When the Tiger II arrived near the frontlines, he jumped down from the tank.

The power armors 20 meters in front of him were firing with their machine guns.

The battle was at a point where it was one-sided. To be honest, Jiang Chen wanted to put on power armor himself to try the thrilling experience of combat. But when he saw a few enemy rockets smashing a power armor nearby, he quickly gave up on the idea.

Since this wasn't the modern world, power armor wasn't invincible.

A few soldiers ran out and dragged the power armor and the injured soldier out amongst enemy fire.

When he walked to the command vehicle, Jiang Chen took off his helmet to dump out some water and spoke to Cheng Weiguo.

"What's the situation at the frontlines?"

"We're just closing out. This feels fu*king great."

He'd never fought a more exhilarating battle than this.

Jiang Chen grinned.

[This is all my cash - forty million USD to buy the lives of 20,000 mutated humans. If this isn't exhilarating, I don't know what to say.]

"Once you capture Jia City, leave 1,000 people to defend it - Hang's Merchant Alliance may send people to scout. But with this scene, I don't think they'll have any other ideas. Rest for the night and help Wanghai City tomorrow-"

Boom!

The explosion in the distance suddenly interrupted Jiang Chen mid-sentence.

Jiang Chen stopped then immediately ran out while putting on his helmet.

Chapter 450: Or God

There was a sudden explosion at the frontlines.

A Tiger II was lifted to the sky by a dark green flash.

20 soldiers hidden in the darkness suddenly snuck out as they launched a surprise attack on the northwest corner of the circle formed by NAC. They continued to push forward while they fired simultaneously. The raindrops exposed their outlines, but their outlines were still unclear in the darkness.

Suddenly, two fist-sized crystals flew out from the darkness. They cast an eerie light before they exploded at the NAC infantry's backlines.

Jiang Chen's pupils contracted as he gazed at the explosions in the distance.

He knew exactly what they were.

The ability to explode crystals.

These people belonged to the Dusk!

The soldiers at the northwest corner immediately responded as they started firing at the unknown force.

"It's an optical illusion! Bring out your EMPs!" A soldier shouted while ripping off his earpiece. He threw an EMP grenade.

The soldiers nearby all followed as they targeted the area with EMP bombardment. The static noise began to diffuse to the surrounding area and revealed the soldiers in black standing in a triangular formation.

Their black kinetic skeletons looked like full-body jumpers and their fluid rifles had a blue light. Judging by the quietness of their shooting, they were using Gauss rifles powered by electromagnetic acceleration.

Just from the details, their equipment definitely wasn't from

wasteland factories made with crude techniques; they were probably manufactured before the war!

And they were the elites of the Dusk Church – the Apostles!

The bullets left waves and ripples on the energy shield. After being exposed, the Apostles didn't panic as they searched for cover and scattered around the destroyed Tiger II while engaging in battle with the First Corps soldiers.

The EMP didn't affect their Gauss rifles as their working principle was based on high power currents accelerating metal projectiles; the effect of EMP on the flow of currents was almost negligible. The penetration power of the Gauss rifle posed a great threat to the soldiers even though the T-3 power armor was enough to defend against the projectiles of the Gauss rifle...

But it was futile.

Faced with the Wanderer Tank, everything was futile.

While the Apostles pushed forward to the Sports Center, putting their lives on the line, the sound of an engine humming appeared from behind them.

The concrete wall collapsed under the impact. The Wanderer tank previously leading the charge circled behind them.

The particle cannon fired and a blue ball of light exploded in the middle of the Apostles' formation. The scattered high energy particles instantly penetrated through their energy shield. At the same time, the coaxial electrostatic cannon started to unleash its power.

The 2 kg shells swept through at a rapid speed which caused a series of blasts in the rain. The cannon forced the Apostles to remain in their position before they were shredded. Faced with the Wanderer tank, their advantage of stealth was no longer existent.

Their fate was determined. The mutated humans and the Dusk had no more fighting chances.

The mutated soldiers at the Sports Center began to retreat while the NAC soldiers at the periphery of the building rushed in.

But then, a green light sparkled and an explosion filled the battlefield again.

The explosion was at the front of the Sports Center gate. The eight soldiers rushing in were blown a street away.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes to see the clouds of dust drifting apart as a figure walked out.

Red dots locked onto that person's body.

Without a doubt, if he dared to make any moves, he would become a sieve in the next second.

What made Jiang Chen uncertain was the still, calm look on his face.

The rain dampened his clothes, the fur on his collar had been turned into a few muddled strands, and his hands were in his pockets.

"I want to see your boss."

It was the first thing he said.

"Capture him." That was Cheng Weiguo's response.

Two soldiers walked up with rifles in hand and pointed straight at his head while marching forward.

"Kneel on the ground and put your hands above your head!"

The person sighed.

"Is this how you worship a god?"

As the voice died, the scene suddenly took a turn.

As if they were being directed by an invisible hand, two steel beams on the ground rose. Before the two soldiers could realize what happened, they were penetrated by the soaring beams.

Even Jiang Chen was shocked by the scene.

"Kill him!" Cheng Weiguo shouted.

The shocked soldiers turned angry as they immediately pressed their triggers.

Their bullets flew, but they all stopped in front of the stranger like flies stuck in a spider web. Like a scene from the Matrix, Jiang Chen's expression turned solemn.

[What kind of technology is this?]

Seeing as the bullets were useless, Cheng Weiguo waved his hand.

With his command, the Tiger II rushed in and targeted the Type-50 electromagnetic cannon at the gate.

The person smiled at the sight and opened his jacket.

The shining gems dangling inside his jacket reflected an eerie dark red.

When Jiang Chen saw this, his pupils instantly shrunk.

"Stop!"

Jiang Chen ordered.

Cheng Weiguo looked at Jiang Chen in shock as he didn't understand the decision.

The person smiled with pleasure and raised the flashing red ring on his hand.

"Jiang Chen, I know you're here. Come out! Don't you want to chat with me?"

Blood crystal was a substance with the same structure as crystal but possessed a thousand times the energy. Just a thumb-sized piece could create energy equivalent to one kilogram of tritium going through nuclear fusion.

Jiang Chen heard Lin Lin say that Klein particles in the third

dimension was only the tip of the iceberg in terms of its actual energy. Because of this, when Sun Xiaorou tried to assassinate him, just a few small crystals managed to create destructive power similar to a bomb.

The ability to explode the crystals worked by releasing all the energy of the Klein particles. Therefore, once he blew up the blood crystal, the energy released would be far greater than the energy released through one kilogram of tritium in nuclear fusion.

Therefore, for each of the blood crystals in his lap, each of them had power comparable to a hydrogen bomb.

Jiang Chen counted. Including the ring on his finger, he had a total of 121 blood crystals.

Cheng Weiguo saw Jiang Chen walking forward and immediately grabbed him.

"General! You can't-"

Jiang Chen shook his head, signaling Cheng Weiguo not to worry. He insisted on moving forward.

Watching Jiang Chen walk to him, the person smiled joyfully.

"Of course you know your stuff."

Cheng Weiguo watched Jiang Chen walking to the stranger without any protection. He gulped with uneasiness then signaled the sniper beside him. The sniper understood and raised his sniper rifle cautiously.

Jiang Chen glanced at the bodies penetrated by the beams then looked at the person.

"Introduce yourself."

Seeing as Jiang Chen wasn't scared at all, the person's smile became brighter and brighter.

"Bo Yu - Yu for space. Or you can call me pope or God."

Chapter 451: 121 Hydrogen Bombs

The rain fell rhythmically. The droplets shined under the light bomb, scattering a blood-like texture. The two stood across from each other in the front of the Sports Center, eyes fixed on each other in silence.

[God?]

Jiang Chen scoffed at the thought.

[How childish would you be to consider yourself a God?]

Boo Yu didn't seem to mind Jiang Chen's scoff as he smiled.

"I have to respect you for the fact that you made me show my trump card. I'm really curious as to where you got those rockets. As far as I know, no countries before the war were bored enough to use the boring non-guided missiles."

A task that could be completed by a single guided missile obvious didn't need a bunch of non-guided missiles to complete. These non-guided missiles left history in the mid-21st century, so it made sense for Boo Yu to be completely oblivious to the source.

"I managed to find creativity in history. Outdated doesn't mean useless." Jiang Chen grinned and gave a vague answer.

"Is that so?" Boo Yu shrugged.

"But you, how did you manage to do it?' Jiang Chen glanced at the steel beams and bullets on the ground. He was intrigued.

Bo Yu seemed to have heard an interesting question as he suddenly burst out laughing.

The arrogant laughter echoed inside the Sports Center, clear but strange.

"Looks like you know nothing about power."

Jiang Chen didn't respond as he only apathetically looked at the

smile on his face. He seemed to have finished laughing as he retracted his arrogance.

"Fine, because you answered a question for me, I'll tell you. Have you heard of the hidden genetic code?"

[Hidden Genetic Code?]

"I have heard about it," Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

[He already unlocked the second level.]

"Did you try to unlock the third level?" Bo Yu said mysteriously.

"The third level?"

"That's right. The hidden genetic code is someone human ancestors possessed, but through the process of evolution, it was eventually lost. The reason why they lost the ability was not of its weakness or extraneousness, but rather because they were too powerful, therefore they were balanced out by nature." Bo Yu stared at Jiang Chen's eyes with a smile and raised one of his hand, "Just like this."

The bullets began to float from the ground and concentrate in his palm before slowing forming a mini hurricane.

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows at the supernatural scene.

"Telekinesis?"

"No, no, no. That is too unprofessional of a way to describe it," with bullets in hand, Bo Yu shook a finger, "This is just a different way of using Klein particles. It uses the third-dimensional physics phenomenon to disrupt the coordinate location."

"So your ability is to detect Klein particles?" Jiang Chen said musingly.

Klein particles' disruption to a third-dimensional phenomenon. Speaking of which, he remembered that the Klein particles that Tingting fired could destroy electronic equipment, could that be a method of disruption?

The disruption to electron movement.

Just as Jiang Chen thought about this, he noticed the flashing ring in his hand.

[Wait, if his ability is to disrupt Klein particles, then his ability must come from...]

"Sense, disrupt, and control." Bo Yu smiled. "Just like what you saw, I can make kinetic energy stop at will, and I can create magnetic fields out of thin air. I become the God of this world by unlocking the third level! And technology's power will allow me to gift my power to my followers."

"I originally wanted to use the 121 hydrogen bombs I have on me to force you to help me leave, but now I have changed my mind."

"I respect your ability, with your help, my plan will be much easier."

"What do you think? Do you long for this power? Do you long for leaving the barren wasteland?"

"Join us. I will give you a ticket, and I will gift you the ability to intervene with nature."

Bo Yu said, his voice manipulative while gazing into Jiang Chen's pupils.

[Join him?]

The project to leave for a new world had not the slightest attractiveness to Jiang Chen. He could freely traverse between the modern world and the apocalypse. But Jiang Chen didn't immediately reject him but instead became immersed in thought.

[121 hydrogen bombs.

Even if they explode in Jia City, it could easily wipe off the province of Suhang from the map.]

"You have no other choice. I already activated the 121 blood crystals in my body. Once they leave my control, they will explode

like grenades." Seeing Jiang Chen was silent, Bo Yu advanced.

Jiang Chen looked up in the sky.

The fifteen light bombs dangling nearby seemed to be reaching their limit.

"What are you looking at it?" Bo Yu frowned.

"Nothing, I agree to work with you." Jiang Chen suddenly smiled and extended his hand.

Bo Yu paused for a moment as Jiang Chen's smile gave him an ominous feeling. But feeling the hefty weight on his body, he felt calm again.

[I don't care what kind of tricks you play, I have nukes strapped on me.]

Bo Yu opened his hand and let the bullets slide down as he shook Jiang Chen's hand.

"Welcome, my comrade."

"Haha, welcome." Jiang Chen warmly shook his hand as mischievousness suddenly flashed across Jiang Chen's eyes as he put his finger casually on his sleeve.

The light bombs in the air began to fade as the shadow projected down the wall began to gradually disguise the two's figure.

Suddenly, Bo Yu was alerted.

Before he could react, he felt the weight on his body disappear as his ring and jacket all vanished into thin air.

"How, how is that possible?!"

Bo Yu backed up feeling wholly shaken while pulling out the pistol around his waist.

He could no longer use his ability after losing the ring, although his mind was in complete chaos after witnessing the "supernatural activity", he knew one thing clear. If he wanted to live, he must

control the man in front of him.

But before he could even raise his pistol, a soaring light blade chopped off his arm "AHHHH!"

The deafening scream echoed in the giant stadium, Bo Yu tumbled and fell to the ground. He held onto his severed right arm; his limbs twitched in pain.

Jiang Chen hid away the laser sword in his hand while he used his earpiece to order Cheng Weiguo to come in. He then walked toward Bo Yu.

The leader that referred to himself as God had the muscles on his face completely twisted in pain. White foam fizzed out from his mouth as his calm and collected persona vanished.

"Looks like I just slew God." Jiang Chen kicked away the pistol on the ground and looked down on the leader of Dusk.

This counted as revenge for Sun Xiaorou and Sun Jiao.

The high temperature of the laser blade burned his wound. He didn't lose too much blood. Because of this, Jiang Chen could ask a few more questions.

"This is impossible, my blood crystals... You hid them. Haha, it's okay... Without my control, they will blow you all to pieces... and die with me." Bo Yu moved back while locking his eyes on Jiang Chen as words came stuttering out.

"You could speak already? Unfortunately, they disappeared from this world," Jiang Chen scorned.

Bo Yu's eyes widened, his face full of disbelief.

"That's impossible."

"Do you want to know why?" Jiang Chen smile.

Bo Yu curled up on the ground gulped and nodded.

"Then tell me first about Fallout Shelter 071. Or, why would you

chose Sun Xiaorou?"

It was what puzzled Jiang Chen the most. [If he had granted Sun Xiaorou's ability, why would he choose her and implant a chip to block her memory?]

When Bo Yu heard her name, Bo Yu took a moment to process it before realizing.

"Oh, you are talking about the assassin I sent? What a useless-AHHHH!"

"Don't bullsh*t me." Jiang Chen said apathetically as he stabbed the laser sword into his toe.

The sharp pain almost made Bo Yu unconscious.

He had never experienced such pain. Sweat began to roll down from his forehead as he said while howling and screaming.

"I'll say it, I'll say it!"

Jiang Chen stopped and looked at him.

"Fallout Shelter 071, there is a live PAC specimen there." Holding onto his severed limb, Bo Yu's muscles tightened up as his words came right out.

"Specimen?" Jiang Chen frowned.

There was hesitation in Bo Yu's eyes, but when he saw the laser sword dangling in Jiang Chen's hand, he decided to reveal the secret.

"Among the 500 survivors, there is an eternal life code hidden among them."

[Eternal life!]

Jiang Chen was completely stunned, but there was no expression on his face as he said nonchalantly.

"Oh, did you find it?"

No people of influence could escape the temptation of eternal

life, and Jiang Chen was not an exception.

Bo Yu's twisted face squeezed out a smile.

"Haha, guess?"

"Don't waste time." Jiang Chen said emotionlessly with the laser sword pointed at his nose, "Based on the value of the information you provided, I can consider letting you live."

"Hehe, then why don't you just kill me." Bo Yu said with a grim smile, "You really think I will fall for your trick? You only have two choices; kill me and loss all the clues or let me live in exchange for a clue."

The truth-telling liquid was useless to anyone injected with the genetic vaccine. If he didn't say anything, Jiang Chen had no better ways of obtaining the information in his head.

[Capture him first before interrogation?]

But just then, drowsiness began to overwhelm him.

He felt a burning sensation from his wrist.

With "uh oh" in his mind, the laser sword pointed at Bo Yu nose slid down from his hand.

Without screaming, the laser sword penetrated Bo Yu's head.

Trying his hardest to maintain his fallen consciousness, Jiang Chen pressed on the earpiece and said "help me" to Cheng Weiguo before dropping to the ground.

The 121 blood crystals finally exploded.

But it was not in this world. It was inside Jiang Chen's storage dimension.

Chapter 452: Collapse

Among the hazy chaos.

The 121 crimson dots began to expand and illuminated the 30 cubic meters subdimension.

The light was getting brighter and brighter and gradually swallowed all the items inside the storage dimension and expanded to the edge of the space.

All the energy inside was trapped by the invisible force field inside the tiny space. The entire subdimension was like a paper box that quarantined all the energy released from the 121 hydrogen bombs.

The blinding light expanded against the invisible wall in an attempt to break through the boundary and spread further.

The 121 blood crystals were like a dam that was cracking; the violently diffused energy unleashed into the third-dimensional space. Followed by the Klein particles constant decay to the third dimension, inside the 30 cubic meters space, the pressure against the boundary was even comparable to the pressure inside a star.

It was just like a sun squeezed into 30 cubic meters.

The restraint was absolute, despite the massive amount of energy, they could not leak out from the subdimension.

Suddenly, the energy filling the space came to a halt as it stopped pressurizing the space boundary.

With the force of gravity, once the photon concentration exceeded the threshold. They could no longer escape, but rather began to collapse toward the middle...

The light that filled the space shrunk to a single point. That one point was darker than any material in the natural world because no light could escape its constraint nor its gravity field.

"Is that... a black hole?"

Jiang Chen stared blankly at the changes in the space. He wanted to reach for the black dot, but he realized he had no hands at all.

After fallen unconscious, his consciousness appeared in the dimension.

Before, even if he could store and sense the items in the subdimension, which he referred to as the storage dimension, he never examined it closely.

And now, he could allow all his consciousness to flow into the dimension and observe everything inside.

"This dimension is not cubical nor spherical, but rather... Uh, what exactly is it?" Jiang Chen frowned as he searched for the right word to describe the place.

Without any shape, it was purely comprised of an invisible gravitational force used to restrain all matters inside the 30 cubic meters space.

Space was free of shape. The only limitation was the size of the matter inside the space.

Jiang Chen shook his head and gave up on the idea of naming the dimension. He started to observe the black dot.

The 121 blood crystals completely vanished, all the Klein particles decayed into energy visible in the third dimension.

Jiang Chen quietly viewed the black dot while patiently waiting for its change.

But a long time passed, and no change occurred.

But even then, Jiang Chen could sense that the black dot's dimension was still compressing. Only because its shape was being compressed by its own gravitational force to the shape of the space, it was difficult to physically observe its change.

If there was a physicist here, he may fall into shock or even

frenzy, and gaze onto this "miracle".

Gravitational collapse!

It was gravitational collapse!

Any of the small changes that occurred there could cause an earthquake in the world of physics.

But Jiang Chen, who stood there, was only an engineer that forgot most of his knowledge. Not only did he lack any understanding, but he also did not have any desire to pursue. He only spent the time observing the black dot because he had nothing else to do...

It was not the first time he wasted a valuable opportunity.

But then, an odd occurrence appeared in his storage dimension.

The black dot where not even light could escape began to use its force to twist and shred the dimension.

At the same time, Jiang Chen shockingly discovered that the boundary that restrained the subdimension began to loosen.

He was first ecstatic, but his mood took a rollercoaster ride down to the bottom.

The boundary did indeed begin to shake.

But it was not being expanded outward, but being dragged in by the black dot with infinitely large density and infinitely small dimensions.

Jiang Chen didn't know what to feel.

"My storage dimension will be pulled to form a singularity?" Jiang Chen wanted to stop everything from happening, but he could not interfere with the changes.

Throw the black dot outside?

Jiang Chen instantly rejected the idea as cold sweat dripped down.

Creating a black hole on earth, the place would no longer be an apocalypse, but doomsday.

Just as he was pained by the idea that his storage dimension "disappearing", the black dot exploded.

The big bang occurred.

If a physicist were here, he would fall unconscious due to the excitement.

Because at that instant, Jiang Chen witnessed the birth of a universe.

When compressed to the limit, the motion of photons turn into an absolute static state. The photon without mass instantly lose all its energy when it stopped moving. The black dot lost its energy, the infinitely large density instantly returned to zero, and the gravity that warped space vanished too.

The big bang caused by the gravitational collapse caused a sudden transition from the "subdimension" to a dimension.

Jiang Chen witnessed everything that occurred in front of his eyes with astonishment before his consciousness slowly returned to his body...

He opened his eyes and realized that he was in a room.

Cheng Weiguo sat beside him.

"General! You are finally awake!" Seeing Jiang Chen wake up, Cheng Weiguo instantly turned joyous as he immediately got closer.

"How long was I unconscious for?"

"Two days!"

"Mhm... Where is this place?" Jiang Chen scanned his surroundings.

"This is Shenxiang Town, I followed your order and left 1000

soldiers to defend Jia before taking the rest of the soldiers and armored forces back to Wanghai." Cheng Weiguo immediately responded.

"We won?"

"We won!" Cheng Weiguo nodded in excitement.

[We won... but everything feels surreal.]

Jiang Chen reminiscenced about the final showdown and what happened in the storage dimension.

"General, please don't do something dangerous like this again. If anything happens to you, your Miss will blow our heads off," Cheng Weiguo said with a bitter expression.

Jiang Chen only smiled.

[If it were not for me, who threw the 121 blood crystals into the storage dimension, the entire Suhang province would have been wiped out from the map, never mind you.]

Of course, he would not explain this to them. Only a few members of the NAC knew that the Dusk could explode crystals. As to his storage dimension ability, only Sun Jiao, Yao Yao, and Lin Lin knew, even Sun Xiaorou didn't know as he hasn't had the opportunity to tell her.

"Where did the eight mounted rocket launcher vehicles go?" Jiang Chen asked.

"The vehicles are deployed to Shenxiang; the remaining solid fuel rockets are still being transported. General, are you hungry, should I bring you some food?"

With how caring Cheng Weiguo was, Jiang Chen shook his head.

"No need. Leave me alone for now. I just want to lie here for a bit... Also, did you report that I was unconscious?"

"No, I was about to."

"No need."

"Okay." Cheng Weiguo was relieved too.

When he left, he closed the door for Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen rested for a moment before he picked up his EP and began to check his body stats.

All body functions were normal without any physical damage.

Then, Jiang Chen instantly disappeared from the bed before returning to bed in the next second.

The interdimensional traveling ability was functional.

Feeling relieved, he submerged his consciousness into the storage dimension.

Jiang Chen's mouth twitched at the sight.

There was nothing inside.

Including a power armor, some grenades, the PK2000 he used for a while... two protective suits, a few instant noodles, and snacks...

Everything was destroyed in the big explosion.

Jiang Chen sighed.

He was not pained by the loss of weapons and foods.

But all the debit card, ID, and driver's license must be obtained once again. He would also have to obtain a new set of keys and a new phone...

He was used to tossing everything into the storage dimension. Now everything inside had been melted down.

"Whatever, it is a good time for new things. I will ask Yao Yao to create a new phone for me," Jiang Chen let a sigh as he muttered to himself while staring blankly at the ceiling.

Other than that, there was an increase in his sense of the storage dimension, as he could not only submerge his consciousness into

the pitch black space, but he could also use his consciousness to interfere with the matter inside.

For example, he could control a pair of nonexistent hands inside the dimension to move the location of the vase he threw inside.

The vase reappeared in his hand.

Jiang Chen opened the life signal detector on the EP and lowered the frequency identification range. Staring into the EP screen, Jiang Chen was silent before he sighed.

[Still could not carry creatures?]

Jiang Chen shook his head and let his consciousness continue to sink into the dimension to feel more of the "suspended feeling."

But then, he was shocked by his discovery.

[Eh?]

[When did my storage dimension get so big?]

Chapter 453: An End to the West Line

The storage dimension somehow reenacted the Big Bang.

The previous 30 cubic meters dimension expanded ten times, and it was now 300 cubic meters already! The previous sub-dimension only restrained by gravity now turned into a "universe!" And the "universe" was expanding outward at a hardly visible speed!

A spherical dimension 300 square meters in volume with a radius of 4.146 meters.

Outside of the spherical was just space.

It was minuscule compared to the actual universe, Jiang Chen referred to it as "small universe" for now.

He knew with time; the "small universe" will eventually become something comparable to the actual universe.

Although it may take billions of years...

But what fascinated Jiang Chen was not the slowly expanding size.

He had an inexplicable feeling that the transition between emptiness to defined state was the key to him bringing people through interdimensional travel.

...

Jiang Chen rested until morning. He moved his body around in the room after waking up, seeing that there was no discomfort, he headed out.

The soldier stationed outside the door saluted when he saw Jiang Chen and took him to the temporary command post of the First Corps under his request.

When he saw Cheng Weiguo, he started to ask about the status of the First Corps.

First, it began with the loot.

The 300,000 tons of Grade C steel far exceeded the expected 200,000; the Sixth Street investors would cheer at this fact. At the same time, the First Corps obtained 50,000-tons of Grade A steel from the newly built warehouse in Jia, as well as large amounts of Type-99 anti-tank cannons, mortars as well as other heavy weapons. The looted steels would be used by the factories in Fishbone base to produce Tiger II tanks. The regular weapons were left in Jia and were guarded by the 1000 First Corps soldiers.

On the other hand, the kinetic skeletons and Gauss rifles remains used by the Apostles were collected by Cheng Weiguo. After the end of the mutants flood, the pieces would be sent to Fallout Shelter 027 for technological recreation.

Optical illusion, Gauss rifle, Jiang Chen had been thirsty for these technologies for a long time but never obtained the design blueprint for them. Although he didn't know where the Dusk managed to obtain such technology, they belonged to him now. The loot from a technological point of view was pleasing too.

Bo Yu died. This marked the end of the Dusk and the big problem was finally solved.

The only regret was that the secret of Fallout Shelter 071 would be carried into the grave along with the death of Bo Yu. If he wanted to know, he would have to search for the remaining members of the Dusk, or personally investigate the abandoned remains of fallout shelter 071.

In the nuclear fallout shelter under the Sports Center, the NAC soldiers killed the leader of the mutated humans, Troy, as well as the remaining mutated humans in the Seventh Area. All the mutated humans in the Seventh Area were eliminated. After capturing the Seventh Area and Jia, Cheng Weiguo ordered all mutated humans vial to be destroyed as well as the FEV formula.

Therefore, the problem that bothered Wanghai for so long was

finally removed. The business route to the west would be open again.

By next year spring, endless amount of merchants would traverse to the treasure land, Wanghai, with their shining crystals and delicate goods.

On the other hand, only ten thousand Defenders were saved from Jia. They all expressed their interest in joining NAC, even though 50,000 died under the rain of destruction.

It was human nature for the weak to worship the strong.

If they were protected by a powerful force, they wouldn't have needed to experience that kind of hardship in the first place. So they pleaded Cheng Weiguo to shelter them, even as NAC slaves.

Cheng Weiguo didn't immediately agree. He only expressed that he would pass their request on to the general.

Jiang Chen considered it for two seconds before accepting them. Then he selected a few people who looked clever to look after the ten thousand people from the First Division and to start rebuilding in Jia.

Jia was the gateway to Wanghai from the west. Jiang Chen was debating if it should be declared a military zone or economic zone.

But after discussing with Chu Nan on the phone, Jiang Chen made the final decision.

He established Jia as an economic zone and completely abandoned the Seventh Area. This way, the merchants that pass through the area could complete simple supplying. On the other hand, Jiang Chen requested the temporary director of Jia to investigate the state of the maglev track.

If they could repair the maglev track from Jia's rail station and link it with Wanghai's rail station, the time between Jia to Wanghai would drastically shorten. The merchants from Hai heading to Su and Changzhou would indeed favor taking

Wanghai's route and abandon traversing the barren land to the east of Lake Dingshan.

At the end of the call, Jiang Chen briefly asked about the current status of the Sixth Street. He knew that they were in a precarious state, hanging on by a thread.

Currently, large numbers of dangerous mutants appeared from east of the Sixth Street, and the long defense line brought immense pressure to the soldiers defending. Just yesterday, the north door was attacked by a group of Death Claws.

It was a calamity.

It was not difficult for the Death Claw to hop onto the wall. But to the survivors, all the anti-tank cannon or rocket launchers could damage the Death Claw.

"If we cannot receive assistance within four days, we will have to abandon the Outer Circle wall and retreat to the Inner Circle. The mutants in the rural area have become more and more powerful. The fuel storage in the Sixth Street is also running short..." Chu Nan said difficulty.

"Don't worry. Latest this afternoon, everything will end." Jiang Chen laughed on the phone.

Chu Nan raised his eyebrows, puzzled. He didn't know the massive commotion Jiang Chen caused on the East line. But with how confident Jiang Chen sounded, he still stated that he would do his best to defend while waiting for backup to arrive.

The source of Jiang Chen's confidence was simple.

[20 thousand solid fuel rockets to bring on the rain of destruction.]

[Regardless if it is zombies or Death Claws, any carbon-based life form must die!]

Jiang Chen hung up the phone and looked toward Cheng Weiguo

waiting on the side.

"When will the 20 thousand rockets be ready?"

"It has been ready since an hour ago, waiting for your order."

Jiang Chen nodded pleasingly.

"What about the armored force?"

"Prepared to enter the battle!" Cheng Weiguo raised his chest.

It was time to end everything.

Jiang Chen looked at the hologram map hovering on the table and a grin formed on his face.

"Tell everyone to get ready. Bring the weapons and let's go home!"

Chapter 454: The Fire

Outside of the east gate of the Sixth Street, broken limbs were scattered on the ground. The thickened blood and zombie fat mixture formed a hard shell and covered any visible surface.

A soldier on the wall gulped and slightly moved his finger on the trigger. The tragedy and disgust under the wall made his skull feel numb.

The sentry guns on the wall moved at a uniform speed with the red sight scanning outside of the wall, searching for any suspicious target. The higher towers were installed with Type-50 electromagnetic pulse cannon or Type-99 anti-tank cannon. The soldiers responsible for firing were taking a nap beside the cannon as a lot of them haven't closed their eyes for over 24 hours.

"They are almost here."

Inside the command tower, Zhao Gang gazed at the red dot on the hologram screen with his eyebrows twisted together. The drones captured the mutants' distribution outside of Wanghai. The red box labeled "Bug Vehicle" gave him an ominous feeling.

As an ex-Qingpu survivor who survived for over ten years on the wasteland, he knew exactly what the "Bug Vehicle" was. He hid into the Sixth Street along with his father that year to survive through the first mutants flood.

"The First Corps is still not here." Chu Nan also looked tense beside him.

"They already left from Shenxiang, but with their current speed, they may not arrive until tomorrow."

"This is an absolute disaster," Chu Nan looked at the halted blue dots on the map as he exclaimed.

When he was a pilot at Liuding, he never met something like the mutants flood. The mutants flood seemed to be only limited to

land as the mutants in the ocean didn't exhibit any oddity. Therefore, the Bohai that was stationed beside the harbor would only need to retract the foldable suspension bridge for the zombies and mutants to be stuck on land.

The occasional mutants that could fly onto the dock were killed off by soldiers or power armors holding flamethrowers without the need for him as a pilot to head to the front line.

"This was a disaster to start with." Zhao Gang stared outside the wall.

Another round of mutants attack began!

"It's the Bug Vehicle!"

Followed by a shout, all the soldiers napping woke up and stared down the wall.

On the soft but powerful bug body was a shell as durable as a rock. The shell as smooth as the mirror surface protected its weak head and fragile body. It crawled at an even speed, leaving a disgusting white trail on the concrete surface. It was just like a giant snail with its head covered, but it was not afraid of salt...

It could easily climb over high walls and swallow any of live creatures along its path.

"Machine guns fire! Cannons prepare to shoot, fast!"

Tatatata-!

The soldier kneeling behind cover fired the machinegun and unleashed its fire along with his comrades. The sparks reflected on his face vividly displayed his look of despair.

Bullets splattered and only left thin dents on the surface of the Bug Vehicle. The dense calcium shell was formed from the interlayer of graphene and hexagonal silicon mesh, which was close to the strength of B Grade steel, and the thickness of the shell close to 500mm was like a wall.

The Type-99 anti-tank cannon fired. A bright orange shell soared through the sky. But when it hit the "snail shell", it was deflected at a 90 degrees angle.

"Fu*k, it bounced off!"

With a loud roar, the soldiers reloaded.

At the same time, the Type-50 electromagnetic pulse cannon unleashed its blue electric arc and the 5 kg bomb instantly vaporized the shell. In front of the Bug Vehicle that rendered all anti-armor bullets useless, only the electromagnetic cannon posed a threat.

The problem was the limited number of electromagnetic cannons deployed in the Sixth Street. Only four cannons were distributed to each wall with each cannon responsible for defending a defense line of over a thousand meters. But there were at least hundreds of Bug Vehicles attacking the north wall.

The Bug Vehicle that lost its shell didn't die yet. It crawled on the ground like a snail before quickly dying under the machine guns fire.

A soldier with a rocket launcher kneeled down by the wall and aimed at the Bug Vehicle closest to him.

Target Locked.

He pressed the trigger.

The exhaust burst out as the rocket launched five meters out before readjusting course and blasting into the sky. Five seconds later, the rocket smashed down like a meteor and penetrated the shell of the locked on Bug Vehicle. The "snail shell" suddenly stopped in its track before it was blown three meters into the air and the bug hidden inside was instantly shredded to pieces.

"Nice shot!"

The soldier beside him gave him a thumbs up. He grinned,

removed the one-time use launcher, and took out another launcher from the box beside him to install it onto the guidance device.

Red Arrow-42, one of the few weapons that could damage the Bug Vehicle other than the electromagnetic cannon.

With the assistance of anti-tank weapons, the battle began to turn as the Bug Vehicles close to reaching the wall were being wiped out. But Zhao Gang in the command tower still had his eyebrows knitted in a frown.

A total of 251 red dots were on the screen, but there were only 100 Red Arrow-42 rockets in storage. The weapon costing 4000 crystals was too expensive for the Sixth Street to have in high reserve.

At that time, the communication device connected through.

"Hello?" Seeing it was Jiang Chen, he immediately picked up.

"Get ready to look at the fireworks." Jiang Chen laughed.

Zhao Gang was still processing as to what was going on. But half a minute later, the communication device dropped from his hand onto the ground. Staring out the window, his pupils began to widen. His mouth moved up and down in disbelief as he could not search for a single word that could describe his state.

Beside him, Chu Nan's expression was nonetheless similar...

On the wall, a soldier heard the roaring sound from a distance and raised his head.

"Look! What is that?" A person shouted out and pointed to the southwestern sky.

Dense black dots with long smoke trails.

The anti-air machine guns pointed in that direction in caution, but when they saw that those were not mutants, everyone widened their eyes in disbelief.

The rockets smashed down like raindrops and covered the area behind the Sixth Street.

Suddenly, the scorching flame columns shot into the sky and instantly engulfed the battlefield. It swallowed the two hundred something Bug Vehicles as well as the zombies and mutants flooding toward the Sixth Street.

The shell of the Bug Vehicle could easily deflect the rocket and withstand the blast of the explosion, but it could not withstand the thousand degrees high temperature. Their outside remained intact, but the soft body inside was cooked before turning into carbon dust.

The swarming fire and the thick smoke that covered the sun. Under the rain of destruction, no mutants survived.

Feeling the high heat and burnt smell drifted to their nose. The soldiers on the high wall stared at the scene blankly as their rifles rolled out of their hand without knowing.

Moments later, someone spoke the first sentence.

"This is insane."

"...Indeed."

"What is that..." The soldier's voice was trembling.

"...Hell?"

"Perhaps...It is our people."

"Without a doubt."

Feeling the scorching heat whiff to the tip of his nose, his comrade beside him closed the safety and lowered the rifle in his hand.

If this existed, rifles no longer served a purpose.

A Death Claw dashed out from the fire. It rolled on the ground in pain, but the mixed fuel that stuck to its body could not be extinguished. Rolling and turning around didn't help but made it burned faster. Slowly, it no longer twitched, it only scratched the concrete with its claws in agony.

No one bothered with the Death Claw, because everyone knew it could no longer survive.

In the distance, rockets continued to soar through the sky.

In the command tower, Zhao Gang and Chu Nan gazed at the fire in the distance.

The sky in the distance turned red.

But they didn't know if it was the dusk or the fire that illuminated the sky.

Chapter 455: Watching the Firework together

Liuding, the deck of the Bohai Aircraft Carrier.

The limping zombies wandered near the port, and their whitened pupils were blankly fixed on the aircraft carrier in the distance. The deck of the aircraft carrier was filled with survivors, most of them came from the east of Wanghai.

When the mutants flood arrived, the weak survivors often chose to join more powerful settlements, or some just chose to migrate out of the city. Liuding in the ocean was without a doubt their primary choice since zombies and mutants that lived on land couldn't do anything to the aircraft carrier city in the sea.

For these survivors, Liuding's official stance was also welcoming. The official government designated a living area and provided them with drinking water and nutrient supplies. Of course, these services were not free. Including the ticket to board, all the protection must be exchange with crystals.

A middle-aged man in uniform and a general cap stood up straight with his hands behind his back. He gazed into the sky in the distance.

"Rockets?"

"Yes... And it should be napalm rockets," With a rifle in hand, the soldier beside him replied.

The General didn't say a single word and only stared at the flames ascending afar.

After a moment, he cursed out in a low voice.

"Fu*k, where did they get so much fuel?"

The powerful NAC was indeed a threat to Liuding. If this massive amount of rockets flew toward Liuding, he knew too well that even

with the electromagnetic and laser anti-missile systems, they had no possibility of surviving.

With the rockets that absolutely had no "technological capability," the cutting-edge countermeasures such as electronic hacking and electromagnetic were simply invalid. The laser anti-missile systems could also at most destroy three or four rockets. In front of hundreds of missiles, it was a joke.

The soldier beside him didn't speak. He slowly took a deep breath and watched the rockets fiesta in the distance with a stiff expression.

It was already getting darker. The General abruptly asked.

"How long did they fire for?"

"They started from dusk," the soldier who recollected his thought replied.

After a momentary silence, the General turned around and left the deck.

"These bastards, they will blow all the radiation dust from the city center to here. Prepare to activate the anti-radiation sail."

"Yes!" The soldier saluted while watching the General.

At the same time, the survivors not far away were also on the edge of the aircraft carrier, gazing at the flames in the sky.

They whispered to each other and discussed everything that was happening on land.

"Did NAC do all of this?"

"Should be... That's the Sixth Street's direction."

Men, women, elder, children... Almost everyone gazed in the same direction.

Their pupils reflected the bright red fireworks.

It was the flame of order.

They saw hope.

...

At the same time, in the space 36000 kilometers from the surface.

The debris of satellites and space stations quietly rotated along the synchronized orbit and formed into a steel planetary ring. Just from the sheer sight, it was easy to catch a glimpse of the tragic battle that erupted there.

Among the space junks, a ship cruised among them.

Inside the ship lied a figure.

"Oh? Very interesting."

Through the layer of glass, he narrowed his eyes while watching the spark of flame on earth. The flame from Wanghai was visible even in orbit.

At the same time, the pleasant female electronic voice began to play.

<We have reached the synchronous orbit.>

<Detected strong radiation source, please prepare for radiation.>

"Okay, but I don't think I will need it." Lin Chaoen spoke to the program that could not reply before he clicked on the launch pad.

<Please wear a spacesuit.>

Lin Chaoen ignored the voice as he inputted the password beside the glass hatch.

The steel opening popped up as the emergency launch button appeared. He slapped the red button.

Following the sound of air dispersing, the hatch door gradually opened.

As a robot made completely of mechanical parts, he didn't mind the vacuum environment and was obviously unfearful of the radiation source. He pulled the graphene and attached the metal

hook around his waist. Lin Chaoen put on the booster and bounced out into space.

He watched the silent space station floating in space as a smile appeared on his face.

It was a cane.

A cane that granted absolute authority.

...

Besides the launch vehicle, Jiang Chen had a cigarette in his mouth as he watched the flying rockets.

It was already night time, but the sky was still bright.

The BM-21 rockets continued to unleash its power as the solid fuel rockets covered the west rural area all the way to the city center. Millions of zombies and mutants died under "Stalin's Organ." Just with the body of flesh, he didn't believe that any creature would survive in this hell.

It was quite funny, but he suddenly remembered the last time Sun Jiao, and he played together in the virtual reality game. She seemed to have used a spell and scorched the entire beginner's village.

"The feeling of magic?"

Jiang Chen raised the cigarette with his two fingers as he grinned and extended his hand into the night sky filled with rockets.

The "Fireball Rain" started because of his order. If he interpreted the order as a spell, then he was indeed a magician.

The magician that possessed power.

Cheng Weiguo who stood on the side had his hands behind his back. He pretended not to see the General's childish moves.

"What's in the city center?" Jiang Chen suddenly spoke out.

Cheng Weiguo first took a moment to process before a wry smile

appeared.

"I don't know, I heard that when the rumor of God's Cane was in the city center, the furthest the survivors reached was the Changning area which is still five kilometers away from the city center. It was all ruins there with a giant nuclear crater in the middle. Only dangerous mutants or extremely mutated creatures would appear there.

"Is no one curious what is there? It shouldn't be that difficult to send a drone to investigate." Jiang Chen killed the cigarette and threw it on the ground.

To be honest, after being injected with the genetic vaccine, he didn't really smoke anymore. But when it was too boring to wait, he would occasionally have one or two.

"The drones can't enter the area, or I should say no electronic equipment could enter." Cheng Weiguo shook his head.

[EMP?]

[Using EMP through a creature's body? That's too obscure.]

As Jiang Chen thought about this, he raised his eyebrows in question as he reached for his pack of cigarette only to realize it was empty.

He wanted to look in his storage dimension, but he remembered that there was absolutely nothing inside.

Cheng Weiguo immediately walked up and took out his own.

Jiang Chen smiled and grabbed one for himself.

"I will give it back to you."

"Haha, General, you gave it to me." Cheng Weiguo smiled.

With the cigarette in his mouth, Jiang Chen didn't light it up. He gazed into the flame in the distance, pondering.

[No, the creature could launch EMP... or launch Klein particles.]

Tingting inside Lin Lin's body could do that too.

Speaking of which, he never really understood.

[The bug that the artificial intelligence talked about, what exactly was it?]

Chapter 456: Coming Home

When the last rocket ascended, it was already midnight.

The 20,000 napalm rockets were all launched.

The blazing fire covered everything from the rural areas to the city center and vanquished all life in the vicinity.

When the concentration of zombies and mutants dropped below a certain threshold, the mutant flood would stop. The zombies and mutants in the western half of the city would meet this condition.

"Will the fire be extinguished by tomorrow?" Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes as he looked at the thick smoke and light of the flames.

"It should stop," Cheng Weiguo said. "Wanghai was struck by nuclear warheads before, so most of the materials should've burned already. Once the rocket fuel is completely consumed along with the zombie fat and lipid, the fire should stop then."

The armored force was mobilized in the morning to clear out the road from Shenxiang to Fishbone base. They should've arrived by now. Once Jiang Chen took care of all the necessary things, it would be time to return to the base.

Jiang Chen nodded and threw away the cigarette in his hand.

"Mhmm, you can head back now."

Cheng Weiguo saluted and turned around.

Jiang Chen knelt down as he stared at the dry soil. He seemed to be searching for something.

An ant caught his attention.

It waved its tentacles, searching the ground for something. At the same time, a finger stopped in front of it. Its two tentacles touched it before the ant vanished from this world.

The next second, the ant reappeared again, but it was no longer moving.

"It still can't transport any live creatures?" Jiang Chen looked at the dead ant on his fingertips, deep in thought.

Jiang Chen shook his head and dusted off his hand before he headed to Shenxiang.

When he returned, Cheng Weiguo came over with a phone, looking helpless.

Jiang Chen took the phone and opened the hologram screen.

"Hello?"

"General, the next time you want to do something dramatic like this, could you let us know first?" When the communications came through, Chu Nan's wry voice came from the other side.

"Haha, I just wanted to give you a surprise." Jiang Chen laughed, completely oblivious.

"It was quite a surprise." Chu Nan sighed as he continued to speak with the same wryness: "It would've been better if we could've brought the weapon out earlier. We only needed to launch a few into the city without the need to burn half of the city..."

"Because I didn't have it at the time, or I hadn't transported them into Wanghai. Umm, was that it?" Jiang Chen changed the topic.

"No, it has to do with the crystals." Chu Nan paused for a second before he continued, "According to the rules of the wasteland, the crystals of the mutants belong to whoever killed it. But we clearly don't have the capability to collect crystals from half the city."

"Then they will belong to whoever picks them up," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

When Chu Nan heard Jiang Chen's words, he took a moment to process them.

"Is there a problem?" Jiang Chen spoke since Chu Nan didn't

respond.

"No, I just feel like... General, you're very generous." Chu Nan facepalmed.

"Rather than letting outsiders who heard the news pick up the crystals, it's better to let the survivors who fought together with us pick them up. All of Sixth Street is mine - do I care whose pockets the crystals are in? How about this: from Sixth Street to the outskirts of the city center, the crystals will belong to whoever picks them up." Jiang Chen was extremely generous.

"Okay, but I think it's better to tax the crystals a certain percentage since you killed all the mutants yourself. I don't think the survivors would disagree. Without a tax, it's not good for a large number of crystals to suddenly appear on the market," Chu Nan suggested.

"Then we'll follow your plan. I give you full authority to handle this."

"Roger that." Chu Nan nodded.

After hanging up the phone, just as Jiang Chen was going to return the phone to Cheng Weiguo, the phone rang again.

Seeing the "Office of the General" on the hologram screen, Jiang Chen didn't need to think before he realized it was Han Junhua.

"Did you fire the rockets?" Just as the call went through, Han Junhua immediately spoke.

"That's right, are you surprised?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"Why didn't you use it earlier..."

She had the same question as Chu Nan.

Jiang Chen let out a sigh. "That's enough, don't be greedy. I had to leave the base before being able to obtain them. What's the status at the base?"

"Your rockets greatly alleviated the pressure. The areas five

hundred meters out were all suppressed by the rockets. After the mutants behind the wall were cleared out, the soldiers on the wall watched some fireworks with protective masks on," Han Junhua reported concisely.

"Is that so?" Jiang Chen laughed, delighted.

The feeling of crushing his opponents was too delightful.

...

At dusk the next day, at the rural area west of Wanghai:

The broken limbs were visible on the wide road and the pungent smell of burnt flesh filled the streets. The broken ruins were stained with daunting darkness; it would take more than several drops of rain to wash it all away. It wasn't until they approached Fishbone base when the scenes from hell began to fade.

Four bulldozers modified from trucks were working outside the wall as they pushed the corpses with crystals already extracted 1000 meters away to be burned.

With the First Corps force appearing at the end of the street, the survivors working outside the wall began to cheer. They whistled and waved at the victors.

On top of the Tiger II cannon, Jiang Chen carefully listened to the cheering from the crowd as he responded by waving back.

The gates opened and allowed the First Division to storm in.

When Jiang Chen arrived, he didn't immediately head to his office. Instead, he chose to go home.

After being gone for so long, Sun Jiao and the others must be worried.

As Jiang Chen thought to himself, he couldn't help but smile.

When he entered the mansion, he opened his arms to welcome Sun Jiao, who jumped toward him. After they kissed, he picked up the cute Yao Yao and pecked her adorable face.

Her pale skin was colored red as Yao Yao lowered her head in embarrassment and said in a timid voice: "D-do you want to shower together?"

When she reminisced the last time they showered together, her heart began to pump uncontrollably.

But Sun Jiao authoritatively declared possession of Jiang Chen and spoke to Yao Yao with a smirk: "That's not okay, your Brother Jiang Chen will have to wash with me."

Yao Yao made a face like she was wronged as she replied in a feeble voice: "Wha-what about tomorrow..."

"How about the four of us shower together?" Sun Xiaorou hugged Yao Yao. "We can also teach Yao Yao the adult stuff..."

"I-I'm not a kid anymore! I'm older than all of you!" Yao Yao protested as her cherry-like mouth pouted with displeasure.

With arms crossed, Lin Lin interrupted on the side.

"The time spent in the hibernation chambers does not count toward age. That was the rule in any country before the war."

Yao Yao's face turned red as she looked away.

Only Lin Lin and she were born before the war.

"Does Lin Lin want to come too? The five of us together?" With a little devil's smirk, Sun Xiaorou invited herself.

Lin Lin blushed. Her mouth opened and closed for a while before finally squeezing out half a sentence: "Wh-who wants to do it together..."

With her face completely flushed, Lin Lin walked out hastily.

Sun Jiao gave her sister a harsh stare. "Xiaorou!"

Sun Xiaorou blew out her tongue and innocently hid behind Jiang Chen's back while pretending to be sad. "Brother-in-law, sister is bullying me..."

As she said this, she hugged Jiang Chen's arm and began to shake him in front of her chest.

Although it was a tempting proposal, Jiang Chen's conscience told him that if they showered together, something out of his realm of control could potentially occur.

Jiang Chen gulped and acted like nothing happened.

"Ahem, why don't you three shower together? I'll go after you're done..."

Leaving before the girls could react, Jiang Chen slipped out of the living room.

Chapter 457: Regain Control from the Mutants

Although Sun Jiao liked to bully people at times, she was a nice person by nature. Maybe it was because of the warmth of their little family, but it made her recall happy moments before she left the fallout shelter. This was why she was more considerate of family members than anyone else, particularly with considering how everyone felt.

Although she declared possession of Jiang Chen, she told Jiang Chen before bedtime, "Yao Yao really misses you - go spend some time with her." She slipped back to her room and locked the door.

While Jiang Chen was touched by how considerate Sun Jiao was, he didn't know how to feel with the door shut in front of him.

Yao Yao was indeed cute, but she was inedible.

And that was not okay.

The somewhat matured little loli would always subconsciously do something that would turn him on and he almost couldn't control himself.

[Whatever, there is something I need to ask Yao Yao.] Jiang Chen turned around and headed to Yao Yao's room.

He knocked on the door before he heard some noise from behind the door.

"Ummm? It's already so late, is there anything to do?"

With the door pushed open, he saw Yao Yao in loose pajamas. Judging by her wet hair, she must've just showered as the light scent of lilies blew in his face.

"Mhmm, I have something to ask Yao Yao, is that okay?"

"Mhmm! Of course." With a sweet smile, Yao Yao walked to the

door with light steps. "Come in."

Jiang Chen tousled her hair and walked in.

Jiang Chen scanned the room. Because there was only one chair inside, Jiang Chen casually sat on the bed. Yao Yao blushed at the scene but still walked up and sat beside Jiang Chen, pretending nothing was amiss, before she secretly moved in Jiang Chen's direction.

"Could you tell me what it is?"

Because of her anxiety, her voice trembled slightly to the point where it was out of tune.

With her nervousness, the little loli was unable to sit still. Jiang Chen wanted to laugh.

He paused before he spoke.

"It's about the phone. Could Yao Yao design a phone for me?"

With a few imaginary question marks appearing above her head, the little girl didn't hear the words she wanted to hear. She paused.

Realizing that she misinterpreted the situation, redness extended from her ears all the way to her neck.

It took a while before Yao Yao recovered from her state of awkwardness. She spoke in a quiet voice.

"Phone? Is that the thing brother Jiang Chen showed me before?"

It was a very distant memory, but Jiang Chen gave her a phone for reference.

"Mhmm, it's that type. If possible, could Yao Yao design a similar but more powerful phone?" Jiang Chen tried to make Yao Yao understand what he wanted as he used his hands to show the shape while explaining the functionality of the phone.

Yao Yao listened and nodded attentively.

After Jiang Chen was done, Yao Yao patted her small chest

confidently.

"Leave it up to me! Are two days okay?"

"Mhmm! Please!" Jiang Chen joyfully rubbed Yao Yao's head.

Yao Yao closed her eyes as she enjoyed his caress while a sweet curvature appeared on her mouth.

Seeing as it was late, Jiang Chen stood up and prepared to leave. But then he discovered a small hand feebly dragging onto his clothes.

"Mhmm? Is there something else?" Jiang Chen looked at Yao Yao.

Yao Yao looked away while she spoke timidly, "Umm, could Yao Yao make an unreasonable request?"

"Of course."

She retracted her hand while her face turned red again. Her fingers pointed toward each other.

"Could-could we sleep together t-tonight?"

Considering how adorable she looked, Jiang Chen felt like he was going to melt.

...

The next morning.

Observing the gracefulness on Yao Yao's face, Jiang Chen was touched by her happiness. He leaned down and gently kissed her soft forehead.

Yao Yao seemed to have noticed that kiss and moved her beautiful mouth before moving herself into a more comfortable position. She curled up like a small animal.

Jiang Chen quietly got out of bed and covered Yao Yao with the blanket before he sneaked out of the room.

He microwaved two buns in the kitchen then left the mansion.

It was almost the end of August - the tail end of summer.

Due to the radiation dust, mornings in the wasteland were usually cold, but the temperature during the next few days would be irregular. It was two days after the fire, yet there were still sparks that could be made out in the direction of the city center.

The reality was different than what Cheng Weiguo imagined. Although there were no more combustible materials in Wanghai, the fat of the zombies and mutants provided an excellent source of fuel for the fire.

When the thousand-degree fire evaporated all the water content inside, the entire Roshan was like a barrel of fuel burning continuously due to its high density of fat.

Following the conclusion of the mutant flood and the return of the First Division, the quiet base became crowded again. The survivors returned to the surface. They were either reunited with family members who were part of the crusade or accepted the urns in mourning.

There were fatalities with every war, an unpleasant point that could not be changed.

And on the wasteland, death was to be expected.

When Jiang Chen arrived at his office, he was surprised to discover that Han Junhua was already in front of the table that belonged to the advisor. She was working on the tablet.

"Did you sleep here last night?" Jiang Chen sat at his desk while looking at her.

"No. Mhmm, precisely speaking, I didn't sleep. There was too much work yesterday, looking at fatality numbers as well as the war consumption figures from the logistics department, the compensation to the families of deceased soldiers, as well as the cleaning of mutant bodies and collection of crystals..."

Only now did Jiang Chen notice the heavy eye bags on her face.

No wonder she didn't look for him when he returned last night - she was too busy.

"Thank you." Jiang Chen expressed his gratitude.

"It's okay." Han Junhua still wore the same expressionless look.

"If you're tired, go take a nap first."

Han Junhua half-heartedly agreed before stopping the task at hand and looked at Jiang Chen. "How many rockets are left?"

Jiang Chen shrugged. "All of them are gone, a total of 40 thousand rounds. But now that the mutant flood is over, is there still a need for them?"

Although he could certainly buy more, it was hard to prevent other people from noticing that he frequently purchased weapons that violated the Geneva Accords. If possible, it would be better to delay repurchasing until a later date.

"All gone?" Han Junhua fell into deep thought.

The number of rockets should be limited since fuel was uncommon in the apocalypse before, let alone solid fuel rockets mixed with other chemicals. No one thought of using low-tech weapons to begin with.

But to everyone's surprise, low-tech weapons were highly effective against mutants.

After a short silence, she spoke again.

"How much fuel can you obtain?"

"A lot. Hmm?" Jiang Chen asked.

"The technology required for that napalm rocket should be low. We could easily produce rockets with better combustion effectiveness and a high range."

Han Junhua paused, looked at him in the eyes, and said sternly: "With fuel, it's not impossible for us to regain complete control of

Wanghai from the mutants."

Chapter 458: Even more Powerful Rockets

[Regain control of Wanghai from the mutants?]

Needless to say, it was a tempting proposal, and the current NAC certainly had the capability to do so.

Wanghai from before the war wasn't only the center of PAC's economy; it was the industrial base for technology. If NAC could regain control of Wanghai, the speed in which the pre-war technologies could be recovered would be much faster.

But then another problem had to be considered.

The mutants did indeed threaten the lives of the survivors, but the crystals they provided were the foundation to survivor industries. The Sixth Street's power station required crystals, the fuel rod used for everything from vehicles to power stations required crystals. Survivors unable to obtain Helium-4 to produce nuclear fusion batteries had to use crystals to produce fuel rods with the same specification to provide power to pre-war equipment.

Fallout Shelter 027 was currently using this fuel rod.

The economy of the Sixth Street depended on Wanghai City as the hunting grounds. If the mutants inside the steel forest were wiped out, the hunters had to go further to hunt.

Jiang Chen only debated for two minutes before he made a decision.

Regain control of Wanghai.

The reason was simple - going from hunting to farming was a necessary step to go from brute to civilized peoples. And the first step toward civilization was a step NAC must take one day. Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to provide food for this place forever. The current population of NAC was five digits, but what if it became six digits? What if it even exceeded the million mark?

As to the farming problem, if he was willing to pay up, there were solutions available. It wasn't out of the realm of possibility to produce a closed biosphere through the Project Garden of Eden controlled by Lin Lin with NAC's resources.

Jiang Chen had a potential alternate source to obtain crystals, but to make it into a reality, he had to discuss it with the biologists in Fallout Shelter 027.

After leaving the community center, Jiang Chen arrived at the empty plot of land belonging to the Aerospace Research Institute and managed to find Jiang Lin who just returned to the surface.

It was quite funny as the guy was standing beside the BM-21 rocket that Jiang Chen bought with a wrench. The picture looked like a 21st-century modern rocket scientist studying the "[firing crow](#)" from the Ming dynasty.

A soldier standing nearby looked nervously at Jiang Lin, afraid he would take this thing apart.

He didn't care if it was for research or not. As the launcher for the rockets, he just knew that this thing destroyed half a city of mutants and zombies, and the powerful explosion was still clear in his memory even after two days.

"Did you figure something out?" Jiang Chen walked beside him and asked nonchalantly.

Jiang Lin nodded and exclaimed at the same time: "A straightforward design - primal, even - in both ignition and targeting system. The rocket has no guiding function, and it wipes out targets just by sheer strength. It damages creatures with the fuel and it proves that nothing is more effective than this against zombies and mutants. But to produce this, it must've been stressful for the logistics department."

Jiang Chen smiled mysteriously and didn't answer his question.

[Funny, are logistics even a problem for me?]

"There's certainly difficulty surrounding the logistics, but it's not unsolvable. I need you to design a rocket launcher that can launch multiple rockets simultaneously without impacting functionality. The only requirement is being able to send thirty kilograms of combat parts to a distance of thirty kilometers. It must have more power than this while having higher accuracy. Can you do that?"

"That's easy. All that needs to be done is redesigning the boosting fuel and the contents of the explosive. The problem is the material itself - there's nothing harder to find than oil on the wasteland. If we can secure the materials, it's not difficult to produce the weapon you want." Jiang Lin nodded, paused, then asked a question as if he just remembered something: "Do we still need to produce the Dolphin-10 Ballistic Missiles?"

"Of course. I have other uses for the nuclear missile." Jiang Chen smiled.

Jiang Lin scratched the back of his head. "Okay, if you insist."

After rocket production was assigned, crystal production was next on the agenda.

Starting from the end of the mutant wave, Wang Zhaowu began to prepare to take the Second Corp back to Fallout Shelter 027. When Jiang Chen came out from the Aerospace Technology Research Institute, the Second Corp fleet was lined up at the front door while waiting for Wang Zhaowu's order to mobilize.

"General." When Wang Zhaowu saw Jiang Chen, he saluted.

"No need. Are you planning to head to Fallout Shelter 027?"

"Yes, our soldiers are ready to mobilize."

"Take me along," Jiang Chen said.

"Yes, Sir!" Wang Zhaowu nodded and immediately went to arrange a spot for Jiang Chen.

After ten minutes, the Second Corp fleet finally finished loading

the supplies. With the gate open and the survivors waving farewell, the fleet gradually started to move.

Burnt corpses were scattered along the road. When the fleet was halfway through the journey, Jiang Chen saw a Roshan kneeled in the middle of the road. Its face looked horrific, and its body was charcoal black. Its body was blocking the fleet, so the armored vehicle Jiang Chen was on turned its machine gun before a few shots broke the Roshan into charcoal blocks.

Crushing the "charcoal dust," the fleet continued to move. The horrific scene along the road agitated Jiang Chen's stomach, but to the hardened apocalypse survivors, this was a common scene.

Jiang Chen, inside the car, closed the observer screen before resting with his eyes closed.

It was an hour before the fleet finally arrived at the gate of the fallout shelter. When the rain of destruction was unleashed, the First Corp didn't leave this place pristine - the entire Camp 27 was stained black as if a blaze had swept through the place. But most of the supplies were moved underground, and the condition of the remaining concrete didn't matter much.

When the gate opened, it was havoc.

The zombies who smelled the scent of mutants didn't leave this place just because the Second Corp retreated. The ten-meter-high wall could tolerate a hill of hundreds of zombies.

The corpses blocked the entrance to the elevator. The soldiers jumped off the car, put on protective masks, and worked with their shovels for a while before they finally cleared the charcoal dust piled at the elevator gate.

"Damn, the First Corp really is ruthless." Wang Zhaowu got off the car with Jiang Chen as he cursed out while laughing.

"They had to be ruthless, otherwise we would've had to face a bunch of zombies who could climb over the wall," Jiang Chen

joked.

"True. But the engineering soldiers in the front certainly will have a lot of fun." Wang Zhaowu scoffed before leaving Jiang Chen and heading to the truck in the back.

He needed to arrange for the redeployment of the fixed weapons. When they retreated, the machine guns and electromagnetic cannons were all moved into Fishbone base.

At the same time, considering how atrocious the environment was inside the base, a deep cleaning was necessary before anyone could enter.

Without disturbing the Second Corp's work, Jiang Chen headed in the direction of the fallout shelter elevator.

A type of weapon consisting of a flying device attached with explosives

Chapter 459: Mutant Farm Project

A blue light flashed and the elevator quickly descended to the bottom.

A moment later, the red indicator light turned green and the elevator stopped at 1000 meters below the surface. Jiang Chen walked toward the entrance of the fallout shelter, typed in a few passwords, pulled out the cable from inside, and connected his EP.

Jiang Chen disconnected the cable and backed up two steps. Following a deep noise, the circular entrance in front of him began to shift to the side. At the back of the door, the director of Camp 27, Xu Lu, was already waiting there.

When she saw Jiang Chen, she bowed down with a smile and led Jiang Chen into the fallout shelter.

"The mutant flood is already over; you can arrange for personnel to return to the surface."

"Already?" Xu Lu was slightly shocked, but it didn't take long before she returned to her smiling self. "I'll go prepare now."

After saying goodbye to Xu Lu, Jiang Chen headed straight to the Robotic Research Facility in Fallout Shelter 027 along with the two soldiers behind him. He managed to find Fang Weixian, who was working on a blueprint.

"General? How come you're here?" Fang Weixian pushed aside the tablet used to draw blueprints and greeted Jiang Chen with a smile.

"Mhmm, I want to show you something and consult your opinion." Jiang Chen signaled behind him.

The soldier nodded and put the two boxes in his hands on the table before returning to stand behind Jiang Chen.

"This is...?" Fang Weixian raised his eyebrows, walked up to the

box, and opened it.

When he saw the contents, he took a moment to process before he was shocked.

"Kinetic skeleton... Gauss Rifle?!"

"It's a kinetic skeleton with optical illusions," Jiang Chen added.

With interest flashing in his eyes, Fang Weixian first searched among the broken pieces of the kinetic skeleton before glancing at the broken Gauss Rifle.

"I want you to recreate the technology - can you do it?"

"I can give it a shot; it shouldn't be hard." Fang Weixian first moved the two boxes beside a scanner. "Scan the part composition and replicate the lost parts then use a quantum computer to simulate the design plan to finally establish the production process."

"Is it possible to produce these on a large scale?" Jiang Chen asked.

"It's going to be difficult." Fang Weixian shook his head. "A lot of things must be recycled. For example, for the Type-50 Electromagnetic Pulse Cannon at the base, a lot of parts can't be produced. Without recycling the parts, we can only print the parts using a 3D printer."

The 22nd century 3D printing technology was extremely mature without the durability, precision, and limitations in materials faced in the early 21st century. But even then, 3D printing technology was still an expensive technology. For example, a Reaper Assault Rifle manufactured from a military production line would have a price of less than ten thousand USD, but if 3D technology was used to print the rifle, the cost would be at least six figures, and producing it on a mass scale would not lower the cost.

On the wasteland, with the collapse of the industrial process, the

survivors printed parts unable to be produced with 3D printing technology. Just like with the T-3 power armor, out of the ten thousand parts, at least six thousand were printed by 3D printing then assembled by hand. It was a large factor leading to the high cost of the power armor.

"What would the cost be to equip one Gauss Rifle per power armor?" Jiang Chen asked casually.

"The majority of the cost would be power consumption and material usage if everything is printed by 3D printing... It would be 4000 crystals per rifle. The Miniature High Energy Capacitor and acceleration track have high requirements for materials." Fang Weixian provided an estimate.

[Damn, it's close to half the cost for T-3 power armor.] Jiang Chen was shocked by the figure.

Jiang Chen deliberated for a moment before he said, "Regardless, first recreate the technology. It's fine for it to be a bit expensive."

Other than a potential application in the aerospace field, the Gauss Rifle was particularly effective against power armor. Its penetration power and stability could not be matched by traditional rifles.

Jiang Chen examined the status of armored vehicle production inside the Robotic Research Institute before he left, not wishing to disturb the researchers inside any longer.

Leaving the Robotic Research Institute, Jiang Chen then headed to the Biology Research Institute not far away and found the biologists unpopular at the fallout shelter. When Jiang Chen walked inside, he saw a bunch of scientists in white lab coats all surrounding a vial with daunting excitement on their faces.

As to the reason why it was daunting, it was because they acted like science freaks from cartoons.

The study of life had always been a taboo in the science field as its

danger was no less than advanced artificial intelligence. But on the wasteland, research laws were no longer in effect and hence, they had the opportunity to allow their creativity to flow.

"What're you looking at it?" Jiang Chen walked up to Wang Fangping and patted him on the shoulder.

Wang Fangping jumped. It wasn't until he saw Jiang Chen that he smiled. "General, we completed the electricity-producing seaweed project."

"Completed?" Jiang Chen stopped to think for a second before a joyful expression appeared on his face.

For Xin to develop its tourism, they had to decrease the number of coal-powered power stations. But due to the low efficiency of wind and solar energy, the high cost of tidal energy, and the reluctance to use nuclear energy, Jiang Chen maintained a strong interest in the biological power generation Wang Fangping proposed.

Not only was it environmentally friendly, but it was also cheap, and the one thing a Pacific country didn't lack was ocean territory.

"This is it." Wang Fangping moved aside and pointed at the vial in the middle.

Inside the yellowish-green vial was a piece of floating three-meter-long seaweed with a UV light hanging above the seaweed. The note on the side recorded the ratio between light levels and power generation.

"It can be grown 100 meters below the surface with maximum power generation of 1-kilowatt of power per square meter. The tip of the seaweed can be attached to a metal wire and transports the electricity to the transformer on the surface before becoming part of the grid." Wang Fangping pointed at the device and explained to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen nodded with pleasure. "Great, you did well. All

researchers who participated in the project will be awarded 1000 crystals each!"

All nine scientists in the facility turned ecstatic.

A NAC knight's monthly salary was merely 50 crystals, so 1000 crystals was a large sum of wealth. Jiang Chen would never be stingy on his investment in research.

"Thank you, General!" Wang Fangping thanked Jiang Chen with sincerity.

"No need, I'll generously reward anyone who contributes to the NAC. Also, I still need you to do something: I need you to breed a type of mutant that isn't hostile, easy to breed, and quickly able to produce crystals." Jiang Chen brought up the primary purpose of his visit.

Since he was certain he was going to "clean up" Wanghai, the source of the crystals would have to come from elsewhere.

He would make all the hunters transform into mercenaries guarding the merchant fleet, then change the source of crystals from the "hunting ground" to a farm and establish food production at the Garden of Eden.

Jiang Chen already had the blueprint drawn out in his mind, and the first step to completing the plan was to find the best-suited mutants as livestock.

Chapter 460: Droplet No.1

To help the Biology Research Institute with researching mutants, Jiang Chen ordered Xu Lu to establish an area to house the mutants outside of Camp 27's walls. The area would support research intended to genetically modify the mutants while conducting breeding tests. As for the task of capturing mutants, Jiang Chen assigned the task to the Hunter Corp.

With the support of the helicopter and power armor, aside from the difficulty in capturing Death Claw, other mutants were relatively easy to catch.

All experiments would be done outside the walls. Any mutants who escaped would be killed by machine guns and electromagnetic cannons on the wall which prevented uncontrollable circumstances from arising.

After all this, Jiang Chen returned to Fishbone base via helicopter.

When he returned, Jiang Chen headed to the warehouse and moved a set of T-3 power armor, kinetic skeleton, and Reaper Assault Rifle into his storage dimension. After all this, only a laser sword would fit inside the three hundred cubic meter dimension. Emptiness in the storage dimension didn't make Jiang Chen feel safe.

Heading to the city center would still require a period of preparation before their mission could be executed - whether it was designing the rocket launcher or producing ammo at the base, it all required time to complete.

The crystals on the ground would especially need people to pick them up.

Therefore, after Jiang Chen and Han Junhua had a discussion, the attack on the city center was set for mid-September.

The reproductive cycle of creatures wasn't short; even a month after the rain of destruction, the number of mutants and zombies didn't increase substantially.

Seeing as he didn't need to assist with anything else, Jiang Chen returned to the modern world.

The 20 days were almost up as he was eager to see the results of the construction robots. He needed to solve the mining problem as soon as possible so Future Mining could officially start its business and virtual reality helmets could then be manufactured.

Leaving his mansion on Coro Island, he went to a telecommunication store along the way. While he reactivated a new SIM card, Jiang Chen purchased a new phone.

Although Yao Yao was designing a phone for him, he still needed a phone in the meantime. In such a digitalized world, being without a phone practically meant being back in the primal age.

After all the troublesome things were dealt with, Jiang Chen took a boat and arrived on Coconut Island. Just as he approached the island, he discovered from afar that the dock built along the shore was completed.

The primary structure was reinforced concrete with the top covered by metal roofing. The interior was a concaved water trench. Compared to the hundred-meter-long dry dock, the small dock could only be described as tiny.

But despite its miniature size, it possessed all the functionality of a dock. And if there was a need in the future, it could be expanded further.

He dragged the boat onto the dock and headed to where the construction materials were stored.

The two construction robots were in standby mode where the materials were stored. After they completed the construction mission, they automatically entered hibernation.

The reinforced steel, anti-corrosion concrete, and sand were mostly consumed, the explosives used to blow up the shore were all gone, and the six fuel rods used as batteries were depleted. After he placed all the remaining construction materials back into the storage dimension, Jiang Chen walked to the drone terminal among the trees.

The bee nest-shaped drone terminal quietly laid there with most of the drones charging on standby mode; only a small portion hovered near the beach outside the forest.

He connected the cable to his EP and checked the reconnaissance reports of the drones. After he confirmed that no one approached the island, Jiang Chen removed the cable and headed to the dock.

He opened the dock door before he saw the deepwater submersible floating on the surface.

The length, width, and height were nine meters, three meters, and four meters respectively. The waterdrop-like design had a smooth surface.

The rear end was embedded with a "T" shaped structure, the inlets on both ends allowed water to be fed into the engine without interruption, while the back-end nozzle jet pressurized water. The tail tilt of the shell produced a water pressure squeeze effect, and the dual effect of the water jet propulsion gave the submersible the speed of victory over all the submarines.

The "Droplet" had two pairs of mechanical arms installed in the front, capable of conducting deepwater construction as part of the construction module. An eight-meter cylindrical device hung on the bottom as part of the mining module. The construction robots assembled all parts and were operational once charged.

The submersible consumed electric power designed to fit the 100mm nuclear fusion battery, but due to a lack of nuclear material, Droplet used crystal fuel rod.

The submersible's built-in molten salt electrolytic carbon dioxide reduction device meant that in theory, as long as sufficient power was present, it could maintain a normal water supply in the submersible.

Jiang Chen jumped on top of Droplet. While he felt it sway under his feet, Jiang Chen carefully kneeled down and finally found a camera-like device on top.

Jiang Chen moved closer then spoke in an undertone.

"Initiate."

"Iris verification passed. Welcome, captain."

A crack appeared one meter away from Jiang Chen before exposing a way inside the submersible.

Jiang Chen moved closer. After confirming its safety, he jumped inside.

"It is transparent? No... should just be an optical effect."

When he entered the cabin, Jiang Chen scanned his surroundings in shock.

It was hard to imagine that viewing the outside from the inside was easy - it looked transparent.

[Wide angle imaging?]

By hiding some full-angle cameras on the outside of the submersible, external images were presented on the screen in the cabin. Standing in this submersible felt like being inside a huge transparent bubble.

After exclaiming at the magnificent image, Jiang Chen passed through a narrow hatch and entered the cockpit.

Most parts of this submersible were printed by 3D printing, costing more than half a million crystals. But when he saw everything inside, he didn't feel it was a high cost at all.

"Captain, please name the submersible." The courteous digital voice instructed Jiang Chen.

After deliberating, he said:

"Droplet."

Because the exterior looked like a droplet of water, it was Droplet then.

"Great, Droplet at your service. Captain, please follow the instruction manual..."

Without complicated operating procedures and with the help of basic artificial intelligence, even a single person could operate the piloting system that normally demanded the cooperation of multiple people. There were controlling rods at the captain's seat - one was responsible for controlling the XY axis while the other controlled the Z axis. Beside them was a series of other instruments.

Other than manual control, it could be set in automatic control mode as well. Based on the map stored inside the deepwater submersible, the captain could control through a tablet or voice.

Once Jiang Chen familiarized himself with the controls, he immediately used the terminal to instruct the submersible to submerge.

With the low noise of water breaking, the entire submersible plummeted below the vast ocean surface outside the dock. Needless to say, it was more fun compared to being on a boat. With the waves splashing, the waves looked as if they could hit him since the cabin was transparent.

He felt as if he was surfing.

Jiang Chen immediately ordered as he stared at the waves disappearing.

"Submerge, 100 meters."

"Roger."

The digital voice spoke out before Droplet began to submerge. Just like submerging a person's head into the water, the sound of the waves instantly vanished.

Jiang Chen observed the instruments next to his hand as the symbol signaling depth continuously flashed before finally stopping at the 100-meter mark.

He took a deep breath and suppressed the excitement in his mind as Jiang Chen set the coordinates of Future Mining's mining platform as well as a depth of 7000 meters.

With excitement in his voice, he said:

"Droplet, set sail!"

"Roger, captain."

Into the deep eerie ocean, Droplet plunged down.

Chapter 461: Deepwater Construction

Due to the shape of Droplet, it had faced no resistance when traversing in the water. It could move through fifty meters in the blink of an eye with the instrumentation showing a speed of <Nautical Speed: 75 knot/hour.>

"Damn, just from pure speed, it could easily defeat the fastest submarine in the world." With the ocean soaring under his feet, Jiang Chen couldn't help but exclaim at its magnificence.

He remembered that the fastest submarine in the world is the Russian K Class Ballistic Nuclear Submarine with its highest speed reaching 44.7 knots. And the speed of Droplet could achieve a daunting 75 knots.

He was wondering how the rumored superconducting magnetic fluid submarine faired against his "ride."

The jagged trenches were filled with swaying seaweed. The colorful fishes freely roamed amongst them. The jellyfish and eel danced under the rhythm of the bubble. All the scenes were captured on the walls of the Droplet.

Other than that, Jiang Chen saw a shark.

When the Droplet passed by it, the giant seemed to have ignored the Droplet as it turned its body and instantly disappeared from Jiang Chen's field of vision.

Following gradually increasing depth, the light from the surface began to fade, and the claustrophobic feeling from the dark blue eeriness was more and more apparent. Jiang Chen was uncertain if he had deep sea phobia, but he still closed the wide-angle cameras and only left the four visual windows in the four directions open.

"Droplet, where are we now?"

"We are still 100 nautical miles away from our destination."

[100 nautical miles, or around one hour?]

Seeing that there was still some time, Jiang Chen headed to the living quarters.

The living quarters were compacted together with two beds with nylon hooks on each side of the room. If the beds were lifted up, the table and closet underneath would appear. Jiang Chen examined the interior of the submarine before he instructed the submersible to wake up him once they reached their targeted location. Then he stuffed himself into the sleeping bed to take a nap.

One hour later, with gentle music, Jiang Chen opened his eyes.

When he got off the bed and returned to the cockpit, he looked toward the control panel before his eyes widen in disbelief.

7500 meters under the surface?

The dark abyss where life is restricted.

In the entire area, only a light beam shining from the front of the Droplet remained. The black and shiny rocky surface reflected the faint light under the light beam. The disturbed creatures nesting on the surface scattered before they escaped to the darkness nearby.

Other than the odd-looking deep sea creatures, the cracks on the bottom of the ocean constantly spat out scorching air bubbles. The dark red light was just like a volcano, possessing an incredible amount of energy.

At the same time, a ten meter long, flat-shaped fish slowly moved toward Droplet. The disc-shaped head had no visible eyes, and the nail-like teeth looked horrifying. It curiously examined the Droplet and even used its mouth to touch it. But it quickly swam away as if it was electrocuted without turning its head.

The static electricity on the surface of the Droplet would make most of the deep sea creatures lose their interest. The design was

put in place to protect and ensure the safety of the submersible while also there to protect the safety of the creatures.

Without playing further, Jiang Chen manually controlled the Droplet based on the mining deposition marked on the map and moved to the top of the rich molybdenum manganese nodules.

"Initiate mining module." After confirming the targeted location, Jiang Chen order.

"Roger, Mr. Captain." The artificial intelligence politely answered.

Immediately, the circular tube below the Droplet separated out. A trail of air bubbles dispersed out from behind the circular tube and pushed the torpedo-shaped tube to the targeted deposition.

100 meters.

50 meters.

10 meters.

The light locked onto the circular tube as Jiang Chen stared at the scene without blinking.

The black rock was embedded into the greyish black mudstone similar to a road built with pebbles. The circular tube stooped above the black rock with the engine stalling.

Jiang Chen scanned the map on the screen; the green dot that marked the location of the submersible coincided with the red dot on the mining map.

After a brief paused, Jiang Chen ordered affirmatively, "Mining module, deploy!"

"Roger."

Bubbles appeared from the bottom of the circular tube as a graphene hook shot toward the bottom of the sea. The cable tightened and slowly dragged the circular tube toward the ground and stopped three meters before reaching the surface.

The circular tube gradually deployed with the hatch door on the two sides extended out to release two rocket-like items. The rocket was five meters in length and one meter in diameter, the tail was connected to the inner circular tube with a graphene tunnel.

The two rockets were released from the circular tube, and the head immediately dove down with a series of water bubbles propelling it from behind, pushing the rockets down into the sea.

The rockets' head pierced into the rock body.

Then an almost miraculous scene happened.

The tail of the rocket popped out, while it created more air bubbles, just like an umbrella opening, it expanded into a circular disc with a radius of ten meters. The disc slowly descended and clipped onto the flat sea surface.

From afar, it was just like a circular tube connecting two bowls flipped upside down with graphene tubes.

"Mining module deployed, please deploy transportation module."

The courteous digital voice sounded again and brought Jiang Chen back from being shocked by the technology.

The transportation module was four graphene cables and an oval-shaped ascending device. Because of the size of the equipment, Jiang Chen didn't bring it aboard the submersible. Since he had the storage dimension, it was easy to bring things under water.

With Droplet stalling, Jiang Chen returned to the apocalypse and headed to the backyard of the mansion. The place stored his Dolphin-10, a bunch of graphene cables from the Sixth Street factory.

Under the deep sea environment, 7000 meters under, normal materials could not withstand the water pressure. Therefore, graphene played a key role.

After putting everything into the storage dimension, Jiang Chen returned to the Droplet.

With a hand pressed against the hatch door, his consciousness submerged into the storage dimension. It didn't take long before the graphene cables were deployed outside of the submersible.

Then, Jiang Chen traveled a few more times between the modern world and the apocalypse and released all the construction material outside of the Droplet.

He ordered the Droplet to restart again, and the smart system began to connect the graphene cables together with the floatation markers, using the blueprint stored in the mining module.

He didn't need to do anything after. With five hours remaining of construction time, Jiang Chen yawned and returned to the living quarters.

The artificial intelligence will take over.

As the captain, he only needed to take a nap. And once construction was completed, he could return home.

Chapter 462: Future Mining in Production

The 7000 meters track was just like a strand of seaweed that swayed with the ocean current.

The 500 meters long graphene track connected on both ends by Titanium rings; 14 tracks in total formed the 7000 meters deep sea stairs from the abyss to the surface.

The entire track cost 500 million crystals, almost equivalent to the entire food trade revenue of NAC.

Out of all the equipment, the most expensive was the 15 titanium rings. They not only play a role in fixing the graphene tracks, but they could also freely control the depth of water just like submarines. Based on the direction of the ocean current, the titanium ring can also move through the four angles of the blade engine to move in the opposite direction. This prevents the huge tidal force from tearing the entire graphene track apart.

When the Droplet placed the six meters long, two meters wide oval "elevator" at the bottom of the track, the entire deep ocean mining module was completely deployed.

The two suction discs underwater would shred the rocks on the surface and use the graphene tube to transport the broken pieces into the "circular tube". Based on the selection, the circular tube would crash the rocks into finer particles. Mudstones with low hardness would be crashed into particles and released into the ocean through a mesh net. The higher hardness molybdenum nodules would pass through the selection and be sent to the "elevator" to the top.

When the elevator was filled with minerals, the graphene track would be powered up. The entire oval would be sent to the surface like the shell of the electromagnetic cannon.

Once the minerals reached 100 meters below the surface, the

modern equipment would be able to retrieve the minerals.

The workers on the platform would send out retrieving boats based on signals from below the sea. Then scuba divers with nets would be able to bring the minerals up.

Once the minerals on the platform accumulated to a certain point, a boat would transport the minerals to the manganese nodule refiner on Ange Island. By that time, Xin would no longer need to depend on import for its consumption of iron, molybdenum, and manganese.

After all this, Jiang Chen deployed two 3D printed tidal current power generators at the surface of the sea to provide electricity to the mining equipment.

With the cost of the Droplet included, the equipment totaled more than seven million crystals.

Although it was expensive, Jiang Chen knew the investment was well worth it.

Just from the market price of ten crystals for one kilogram of molybdenum ore in Sixth Street, 700 tons would allow breakeven.

Moreso, the deposition at the surface of the ocean floor had more than one million tons!

The entire mining equipment would support mining operations for ten years without a problem.

When Jiang Chen returned to Coconut Island, Jiang Chen phoned Yang Yuan and told him about the mining operation.

"The problem with deep sea mining is solved?" When Yang Yuan heard that he could send people to the platform now, he was shocked.

"That's right. I will provide you with the mining steps through email. A transportation boat, a retrieving boat, two scuba divers, one observer, that's about all." Jiang Chen smiled.

Yang Yuan raised his eyebrows in skepticism.

"But how do you retrieve the ore from the deep sea? Don't tell me you're going to tell the scuba divers to chisel it 7500 meters below the surface."

"Do you think I'm dumb?" Jiang Chen scoffed jokingly, "Don't worry, I took care of it. I will send it to you by email, and you'll know how the entire mining device functions. It's the top technology of Future Group, don't be too shocked."

Yang Yuan glanced at his phone.

[Funny, I'm a graduate student from West Australia University and a top student that signed with Rio Tinto in my first year as a student. What type of equipment haven't I seen?]

It was the first time he heard that something could retrieve ores from 7000 meters below the sea.

"Okay, send me the email first."

"Mhmm, wait."

Then, Jiang Chen hung up and sent out the email that included visualization of the mining equipment through a digital file.

Yang Yuan held onto the phone for half a minute before he heard a buzz; the email came through.

He opened the email with skepticism and began to scan the document Jiang Chen sent.

He was first questioning the mining equipment as he thought his boss didn't consult with him before purchasing and that he must have been fooled by a fake company.

But when he was halfway through the document, he shocked state was more and more apparent.

"This, this is impossible. What kind of joke is? Are we shooting a sci-fi film?" With his finger continually sliding on the screen, Yang Yuan muttered to himself.

Nothing else, just the circular tube mining device, even if it was built with titanium, it was hard to prevent it to be squashed into a ball by the immense water pressure by operating for an extended period in the deep ocean. And that bowl-shaped mining device, it didn't look like it was designed to withstand pressure at all.

And the long graphene track...

With the current material, technology level, it was impossible to make this mining equipment a reality.

Yang Yaun's finger moved furiously and slid down the document. The operation of the employees on the platform was outlined in detail in the document.

When he saw the last line, he stopped.

<The document is an internal document of Future Group, copying is strictly prohibited. Excluding the employee instructions, all visualization of the equipment and other sensitive parts must be deleted in 24 hours.>

Yang Yuan suddenly realized that the mining equipment was the work of Future Group.

"How many more secrets does this guy hold?" Yang Yuan shook his head.

After hesitating for a moment, Yang Yuan deleted the document as required based on the warning on the last line.

He got up and headed for the door.

"Yuan, are you leaving?" Su Fei, who was in the kitchen preparing dinner, spoke out.

"Mhmm, its work related." Yang Yuan hastily put on his shoes and headed out.

Although he could arrange employees through the phone, he couldn't wait to personally see the mining equipment. It was unbelievable. Without seeing it with his very own eyes, he

wouldn't be able to sleep.

Su Fei looked at her boyfriend rushing out the door as well as the shoes messily scattered on the ground, she let out a sigh and put the bowl she was working with on the kitchen counter.

Although she was first excited when she arrived, there was a mansion, a beach, endless amount of champagne and seafood. But after a while, she thought the life far away from the noise of the city was different than the life she envisioned.

She washed her hand and went to the bedroom on the second floor to scroll through her Weibo.

Only when she saw her friends in the country's envious replies could she satisfy her vanity a bit.

But just as she was scrolling through Weibo, she noticed an unread private message.

"Who is it?"

She murmured to herself and opened the text bubble.

Chapter 463: Her body is more honest than her words

After sending the email to Yang Yuan, Jiang Chen left Coconut Island on a boat.

As to the Droplet, he left it on the island. With the Hummingbird drones guarding the place, he was confident about the security of the place. Even if an elite special force landed on the island, the hundred something drones would easily wipe them out.

Without the support of the EMP weapons, the small and agile drones are the nightmare of any creature.

When Jiang Chen arrived on Coro Island, it was getting dark. He touched his empty stomach while thinking about the empty mansion as a wry smile appeared on his face.

He missed Ayesha's cooking.

It was late. Even if he returned to the apocalypse now, Sun Jiao and the rest must be done with dinner too.

"Whatever, I will just grab something to eat."

Since he drove to the city center area, a few restaurants were around him. He parked the car and found a Chinese restaurant.

He ordered a few dishes before he began to play with his phone out of boredom. The phone he just bought had nothing inside. After using the restaurant's Wi-Fi to download Future 1.0, he scanned his iris with the camera and logged into his account.

Just as Jiang Chen was syncing the contacts on Future 1.0 to his new phone, he suddenly noticed a name.

With a smile on his face, seeing there was still sometime before the dishes arrived, he pressed on the name and called.

"Hello? You finally remember me?" The phone went through,

and it was Liu Yao's voice, full of resentment.

"Haha, I've been busy, do you miss me?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"I miss you so much." Liu Yao pouted.

"Your movie is finished?"

"Finished two months ago, the editing was done last month. It has been sent in for review, and the release schedule has been proposed already. Our director also asked me to see if you could give the movie a headline." As Liu Yao said this, she couldn't help but smile.

The achievement she has today was all because of the man behind her. Among the cast, even the leading actresses respected her when they spoke without acting superior to her, and even called her sister.

This was something she couldn't even imagine before.

She was an intelligent woman. Although the intelligence was sometimes not used at the right place, she knew that he didn't mind as long as they didn't make principle mistakes. And because of this, even if she received her position today, she didn't feel any arrogance. She knew that the people that looked at her in awe were not actually looking at her, but the man behind her.

Even if a lot of actors wanted to pursue her to use the paparazzi to increase their publicity, she rejected without hesitation. A lot of actresses without much fame did everything to get close to her to connect with Jiang Chen, and she smartly deflected all the requests.

She was already holding onto a firm leg. She didn't need to mind what other people thought, she just needed to hold onto the leg tighter.

"Headline? No problem."

It was easy for him since he was the biggest investor in the film.

"Love you, mua."

Jiang Chen's mood felt more cheerful listening to her coyness.

Not only did she have big breasts, Liu Yao's voice and vibe all cast liveliness. She was already 24, but whenever he saw her, she gave Jiang Chen the feeling that she was only 17.

"Are you free?" Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly.

"Yes, do you want to take me out traveling?" Holding onto the phone, Liu Yao said in excitement.

"I'm inviting you to visit my island." Jiang Chen said with a smirk.

Liu Yao seemed to have heard the smirk in Jiang Chen's voice as her face turned red, "Pervert."

But rather than rejecting, she sounded excited.

Since the experience Jiang Chen brought her was always so addicting.

"Do you need me to book a flight for you?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"No need, I already got paid! Eight million! I will treat you to a nice dinner."

"I gave it to you." Jiang Chen rolled his eyes.

Eight million was enough for a superstar. The top actress in Hua was paid eight million per film; her pay was the top ten. Normally speaking, the supporting actresses' pay never exceeded the leading actresses' pay.

But Liu Yao was an exception, the investors paid her directly.

"Don't say it like that. It is my first time receiving so much." Liu Yao pouted coyly.

"Ok, ok, ok, up to you," Jiang Chen smiled, "Also, do you have a digital version of the film?"

"Digital version? Yes, but why do you need that?" Liu Yao was

puzzled.

"Get me a copy of it for collection purposes."

Collection? Liu Yao skeptically tilted her head.

There was no way the director would agree to make a digital copy of the film before the film was released. But since Jiang Chen was the only investor in the film and spent one hundred million and the director was not particularly famous, the director would not reject his request.

"Okay. But you can't upload it online. If it is leaked, it will impact the box office," Liu Yao pleaded in a small voice.

"Don't worry, I spent my money on it, why would I let other people watch for free." Jiang Chen mocked.

Liu Yao was more assured as she began to giggle.

"Mhmm! You're the best! Also, could you tell me what you're going to do with the digital version?"

Jiang Chen smiled with mysteriousness.

"Of course I'll watch it with you."

"Watch it with me?" Although she was delighted that Jiang Chen wanted to watch her film, Liu Yao still tilted her head feeling puzzled, "Didn't we say we are going to watch it in theaters? The experience of the digital version is not as good as the actual theatre right?"

"Don't worry, I have a home theatre in my mansion, six million AUD. The experience is no less than a movie theatre." Jiang Chen smirked.

Jiang Chen's smirk made Liu Yao slightly "unsettled" as she frowned .

"Watch it in a home theatre... I think you are planning something naughty."

"Could you not guess it?" Jiang Chen pretended to be shocked.

"I can't guess it." Liu Yao shook her head.

"Then let me give you a hint. When the movie is playing, you sit on me." Jiang Chen laughed mischievously.

With his teasing tone, Liu Yao's face instantly turned red and immediately understood what this pervert was thinking.

"You're so perverted!"

"Eh? Why do I sense you sound excited?" Jiang Chen didn't mind the waiter bringing the dishes look at him strangely.

"Leave me alone. I'm going to book now."

Liu Yao hung up.

[Book now? Her body is more honest than her words.]

Jiang Chen put down his phone in a pleasant mood and began to enjoy the dinner in front of him.

Chapter 464: For Our Friendship

Just as Jiang Chen was working on his dinner, a blonde beauty suddenly sat across from him.

Without raising his head, Jiang Chen knew who it was.

"How did you know I was eating here?"

"You definitely didn't notice that the Russian embassy is on the next street, and how eye-catching your Lamborghini is parked on the side of the road." Natasha grinned and asked the waiter to bring her a bowl of rice.

"I remember that Russians live off of bread, are you okay with eating rice?" Jiang Chen glanced at the bowl in front of her.

"No worries. Before I came here to work, I learned about the culture." Showing off, Natasha picked up the chopsticks and spun them between her fingers.

[Would ordinary people play with chopsticks before they eat?] Jiang Chen mocked in his mind.

"Is there something you need?" Jiang Chen was direct.

"Nothing in particular, can I not just ask you to treat me?" Natasha also asked the waiter to bring two bottles of beer.

"Are you not afraid of getting a beer belly?" Jiang Chen joked.

"Are you caring about my body?" Natasha giggled.

Jiang Chen looked away.

[This girl is seducing me again.]

"Also, could you let me play with your virtual reality helmet?"

Jiang Chen let out a sigh.

"Didn't you say you just want me to treat you?"

"Can we not talk about this topic as friends?" Natasha took a gulp

of beer.

"Of course, once the Phantom is officially released, I will gift you one personally."

Seeing that Jiang Chen wasn't planning to disclose any information, Natasha sighed.

"Okay, the Kremlin wants me to learn more about how advanced your virtual reality technology is... Don't be mistaken, the only reason I ask this is that we are somewhat disconnected from the world in this area. But even if I ask, you won't tell me right?"

"That's right." To Natasha straightforwardness, Jiang Chen was extremely pleased.

Natasha rolled her eyes as she picked up a piece of meat and sent it to her red lips. With every movement, it looked seductive. So Jiang Chen's choice was to not look at her to avoid being distracted.

"What about the nutrient supply?" Natasha continued to ask.

"Nutrient supply? Kremlin would be interested in nutrient supply?" Jiang Chen laughed out.

"Precisely speaking, the Ministry of Defense and Department of Aerospace are both interested. Because we tried your nutrient supply, although it is not filling, we surprisingly discovered that we wouldn't po-"

"Ahem, we are eating." Jiang Chen coughed to remind her.

Natasha immediately realized and changed her wordings.

"Mhmm... You don't produce any waste."

Jiang Chen glanced at her and continued to work on the delicacies on his plate.

"So?"

"We want to work with you to develop a nutrient supply that's convenient to carry, capable of maintaining people's energy, and

won't po-, produce waste in critical times." Natasha put down her chopsticks, put an elbow on the table, and smiled at Jiang Chen.

"A nutrient supply that's convenient to carry, and would allow the soldiers to obtain enough calories without the need to number two in critical times?" Jiang Chen put down his chopsticks and wiped his mouth with a napkin.

"And astronauts. With nutrient supply as food, we could save space and remove the waste disposal unit." Seeing Jiang Chen was done, Natasha directly began to talk business.

"To be honest, we already developed this, so we don't need to work with you," Jiang Chen sighed, "But I personally have a cautious attitude to the military necessities market. This thing is just like poop, it is hard to wash off after you get it on your hands."

"It is only military necessities and not a tool for killing, you don't need to be so sensitive." Natasha sighed, "Just like a tech company, Google, they still design robotic dogs for the UA army for transportation."

When he heard Natasha's words, he fell into silence.

After a long pause, Jiang Chen asked.

"How are you planning to partner up?"

"Three plans. First, sell your technology to us, and promise that it won't be released to a third party. We'll purchase it at one hundred million USD."

"Too low, I don't want to sell it."

Other than too low, the organic boiler that's used in manufacturing of the nutrient supply possessed too many advanced technologies. Just with a particle filter inside, it is something that current technology cannot achieve. The recipe for the nutrient supply itself is not expensive; the expensiveness comes from the technology used to produce it.

Natasha was not surprised by Jiang Chen's response. She put up a second finger.

"Second, we'll give you the policy to build a plant in our country. We have a wealth of labor resources and a raw materials market."

"I'm only planning to build the nutrient supply plant on Ange Island. After so many things have happened, I don't feel very safe. You know," Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

Natasha gave Jiang Chen a hard stare. She took a deep breath before extending out her third finger.

"Three, you produce, we import."

"The military type?"

"Of course." Natasha nodded.

Jiang Chen was silent.

"Could I know how much you're ordering?"

"20 million per month."

20 million per month? If it were not for the fact that the nutrient supply in the modern world pursued low calories, the cost would be much lower. The nutrient supply now must be produced with DH seaweed, but if the wasteland nutrient supply was manufactured, any fruit and vegetable could be used as the ingredient to produce nutrient supply above A grade.

And the cost of fruit and meat was meager for Xin, a near significant farm product exporting country.

"What kind of price could you accept?" Jiang Chen asked.

"3 USD per nutrient supply." Natasha proposed in anxiousness.

The average food cost for a Russian soldier per day is 351 Rubles which is equivalent to 4.6 USD. Based on the consideration that the nutrient supply could replace regular dietary needs, if the nutrient supply is not high in cost, it is no longer a burden for the

Russian military to replace food as it could decrease military spending in that area. And due to the ease of storage of nutrient supply, to use military supply as a strategic supply for storage, it could also save a big chunk of the budget.

But based on the nutrient supply's current price of 6.1 USD per nutrient supply, they could not afford it.

So when Natasha proposed the price point, she was very anxious as she feared that Jiang Chen would consider their price point too low and disagree with the proposal outright.

Too low?

Jiang Chen thought it was high.

Jiang Chen calculated in his head. A normal nutrient supply had a cost 1 USD, much lower than the improved nutrient supply. Would the profit of 2 USD per nutrient supply be too greedy?

Especially since it was effortless to increase the production of this nutrient supply; there was no need to expand DH seaweed's farm area. It could also be produced with normal vegetables and even the leftovers from restaurants.

Jiang Chen glanced at Natasha, seeing how tense she looked, she was afraid that he would reject.

[Since you don't think it is expensive, I will sell it to you.]

Jiang Chen coughed and pretended to be serious.

"Although it is lower than what I expected, based on our friendly relationship... deal."

A charming smile immediately appeared on Natasha' face, she clearly looked relieved.

"Thank you for your generosity, I wish the best of luck to both of us."

"No need." The tip of Jiang Chen's mouth carved up.

Natasha slightly raised her eyebrows, puzzled at Jiang Chen's expression.

The faint smile on his face made her feel like she was tricked, but she couldn't tell where she got tricked.

Chapter 465: Virtual Reality Helmet in Production

Back into the mansion, it was too lonely to sleep himself. So after rolling in bed for a bit, Jiang Chen headed to the apocalypse and quietly sneaked into Sun Jiao's bedroom.

When he took off the blanket, he was shocked to discover two people in bed.

"Haha, is brother-in-law disappointed?" Sun Xiaorou covered herself with the blanket and pulled it up by her chin while giggling.

Sun Jiao blushed and rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen.

"Fool, I thought you went back to that side to sleep."

Sun Jiao was used to Jiang Chen traveling between the apocalypse and the modern world. The mutants flood was just over as she initially thought Jiang Chen would stay for a bit of time on that side, but he left in the morning before returning at night.

Jiang Chen looked at the giggling Sun Xiaorou. The reaction in his head was as follows.

[Two people?]

[Then two people it is!]

Following two light shouts, Jiang Chen leaped onto the bed with a smirk.

...

The next day at noon, Jiang Chen had lunch with the girls and got the phone from Yao Yao.

Just by the looks of it, other than the phone being a bit thinner, it didn't look too different from a normal smartphone. However, the functionality was much stronger than normal smartphones.

Most of the parts inside used graphene materials and completely replaced the silicone chips.

Also, the camera on the front was installed with hologram components. Also, the phone could be installed with the drone control program and used as the remote for drones. The latter functionality was similar to an EP, but Jiang Chen loved the first function.

To be able to project the operating system out in the form of a hologram, he would be the only who could do it in the world.

He then changed the sim card and headed to his office.

For example, even though the city center was showered by the rain of destruction, the life signal in the area didn't completely disappear. The mutants flood did stop, but zombie reproduction continued. A lot of mutant's nests weren't destroyed either. But since the drones could enter into the area, they brought back the details of the city center to the base.

A lot of mutant nests were not located on the surface, but rather in the underground sewer system, metro stations, or the basement of buildings. The mutants on the surface indeed all died, but the mutants under the surface didn't completely die off. Even if all the oxygen were burned off, a lot of mutants were resilient even in an oxygen-free environment with only a portion of the mutants dying off due to asphyxiation while the rest survived.

To remove the remaining threats, the plan of attack on the city center was in the process. The First Corp was responsible as the primary attack force, with the support of the armored force, they will conduct surgery to the infection source in the city center.

At the same time, Jiang Lin's improved rocket already achieved great results. The material didn't require fuel but was refined through Carm tree sap and other mutated plants. The new fuel's unit volume of combustion rate was two times the amount of solid-fuel and three times the fuel used in BM-21. At the same time, the

component of the rocket became two times heavier than the BM-21, and the original launcher was replaced with the more powerful rocket booster.

The "primal weapon" replicated by future technology had no similarities other than the appearance.

The single launch cost was 1000 crystals, equivalent to 20 rifles sold at the Sixth Street Gun Store. While it was a bit pricey, the power was immense.

The weapon was named "Fireball-1" by Jiang Lin. Although the name sounded magical, it was surprisingly fitting. Any mutants splattered by the fuel would turn into a fireball.

When 1000 rounds of "Fireball-1" were produced, they could start the military operation on the city center. Jiang Chen ordered to stop the production of the Scream mortar shell and used the remaining production capability on the "Fireball-1".

Although the cost of 1000 crystals certainly pained him, he knew it was well worth the price. With one fireball, it could at least decrease one casualty. To Jiang Chen, who didn't lack food, people were the most valuable resource on the wasteland.

...

Everything at the base was functioning smoothly. Since there was nothing to do, Jiang Chen returned to the modern world.

Since the problem in the apocalypse was solved, he needed to get the virtual reality helmet production online as soon as possible. There were only four months left before the start of next year. Once the virtual reality helmet hits the market, Future Technology will face a completely new market.

Even if 10% of the global 3.2 billion netizens pay for the virtual reality helmet, it was 300 million units! Even if each helmet only made 500 USD, it was a daunting 150 billion USD.

Of course, he would be grateful if 20 million Phantom could be

sold when the helmet is officially released. With the gradual ramp up in production, once the game goes online, Future Technology should be able to sell around 100 million in helmets in the most ideal scenario.

He took a boat to New Moon Island and found Ivan who was training the recruits. He was having a great time on the island as he was growing a belly. But from how tanned he looked, it was almost comparable to Barkary.

When Ivan saw Jiang Chen, Ivan gave him a sharp salute and asked Jiang Chen what the purpose of this visit was.

"Future Mining's platform is in use. I need you to send and station three soldiers on the island. In terms of equipment, bring the "Python" anti-tank rocket and the drone backpack.

The drone backpack was the single-soldier drone carrier. Capable of providing processing support for five Hummingbird drones, ammo supply as well as charging. In the modern world without single-soldier EMP equipment, it was a strong and powerful weapon.

"Yes!" Ivan stood straight and saluted again.

With how serious he looked, Jiang Chen smiled and patted him on the shoulder.

"Make sure you pick people you can trust as Future Group's secret is on the island. There is no dispute area around the platform area and zoned into a military control zone. Any ships approaching can be shot if they ignore the warning.

"Don't worry, with the truth-telling serum, we have already found two traitors in the team." Ivan laughed cheerfully.

Although his laugh was cheerful, Jiang Chen felt a hint of cruelty in the laugh.

As to the two poor suckers, Jiang Chen was too lazy to ask. He knew Ivan would take care of them.

Zero tolerance to betrayal.

Jiang Chen had emphasized this point since day one.

...

Because the sea platform was located in the shallow sea, it was extremely stable, and it practically felt like standing on the ground.

Jiang Chen planned to put the production line for the "Phantom" helmet here. In the entire Xin, there was no place safer than New Moon Island. When the platform was completed, Jiang Chen brought the construction map and opened bidding to the international construction companies to construct three plants here listed on each of the three corners on the sea platform. Factories would be connected by enclosed streamlines.

Plant A would be responsible for the basic production of the helmet, Plant B would be responsible for manufacturing the graphene chip and the nerve connection module, and team C would be responsible for putting everything together and installing the security function on the enclosed helmet with the finished product was exported out of plant C.

The entire production facility was highly automated. Only 30 workers were necessary to complete the operation of the production line. The workers only needed to transport the ores to the targeted location, stand on the fixed production line, and follow the manual to control the equipment. As to the principles, they didn't need to know, and Jiang Chen wasn't planning on telling them.

All products that met the quality standard would be passed on with products fallen below the standard sent back to ensure quality was met. Production would increase once the workers familiarized themselves with the production procedures.

All the workers must pass a security screening when they enter

and their phones locked away during shifts. The procedure was stricter than college entrance exams to prevent the technology from being leaked.

With Future Group's technology, even a pin-sized needle would be scanned out. Any worker attempting to bring in spy devices would be prosecuted based on Xin Business Secret Act and fired from Future Group.

If the production facility experienced technical difficulties, the entire production line would immediately halt, and the triangular floating island would be temporarily shut down. The production would only be restarted when Jiang Chen arrived to solve the problem.

But the facility had high stability. Without deliberate human damage, the facility could run several years without error.

Currently, Jiang Chen instructed the scientists in Fallout Shelter 027 to improve this production line and the possibility of drones replacing workers to conduct the production. It was best to decrease the number of people directly involved with the production while increasing production volume.

The exterior of the helmet was primarily made out of industrial plastic, and lead insulation and modern world technology could easily produce this. Therefore, the work without any technical innovation could be contracted to companies with interest.

With the current production facility, half a million helmets could be produced monthly. Followed by the wasteland's continuous improvement and building of the production line, the helmet could reach five million per month by year-end.

After sending the soldiers on the platform back to the island, Jiang Chen went into a plant and returned to the apocalypse and moved the two finished production lines over. He installed and placed the two production lines based on the blueprint provided.

After everything, Jiang Chen dusted off the sand on his hands and looked pleasingly at the equipment in the three plants.

Once the two production lines come into production, the entire world will be crazy over Future Technology.

Chapter 466: Unrest at Night

Earlier in the month, Jiang Chen contracted out the specification of the "Phantom" helmet to workshops on Coro Island with a production cost of 40 USD per helmet. Jiang Chen aimed to sell each helmet for 50 USD, so a single helmet would have a profit margin of 10 USD.

The high rate of return brought a wave of startups in Xin.

There were no more fishermen on Ange Island. People grasped the opportunity to purchase production equipment and started workshops in their own backyards. They only needed to produce 1000 helmets to gain 10 thousand USD in profit; it was a much better business compared to fishing.

After they got accustomed to the taste of money, the clever ones would start building bigger plants, expanding production, lowering costs, and making more money...

And they would become capitalists dependent on Future Group.

The calculations showed that a helmet cost roughly 500 USD. Jiang Chen planned to set the price at 1500 USD. Based on the tariffs of each country, the price would vary 5 to 15%.

Although the price of 1500 USD was a bit pricey, from another perspective, it would allow users to gain eight more hours when they could have their eyes "open." Was that still considered expensive?

It was like giving them a second life!

And Future Technology promised that the "Phantom" had a warranty of more than five years. Any helmet broken with normal usage within two years could be replaced while any helmet malfunctions within five years could be replaced at half price - the warranty was impeccable.

For users who opened the helmet out of "curiosity," they had to

pay for their curiosity, unfortunately. The agreement and package explicitly stated that any activity exposing the interior of the helmet could cause the interior to "oxidize." A helmet damaged in this manner would not enjoy the warranty provided.

On the production side, due to low production rates of the helmet, it meant that only part of the population could obtain one. Jiang Chen trusted that even at a price of 1500 USD, the "Phantom" would be out of stock for a long period of time.

...

Late into the night, inside the virtual reality MMORPG testing room, 2000 players quietly laid on their recliners and carried out the testing.

In the first 20 days, the internal tests were conducted in the morning. But the employees soon discovered that when "Phantom" was active, the user's brain would be in sleep mode. So when the testing was done in the morning, it shifted the players' biological clocks. It meant that the players were all energetic even well into the night.

The fact that the helmets affected their biological clocks was undoubtedly a problem, but it also meant the virtual reality helmets had an excellent ability to lure people to sleep. Even for players with insomnia, they could use the helmet to obtain a great night of sleep.

Although this was just a minor detail, the employees recorded this data to provide better information for when the game would officially be in operation.

It was day 25 of internal testing.

After their initial shock, the players became accustomed to the otherworldly experience.

At first, a lot of mages loved to throw fireballs in the starting village only to be killed by guards who came to the rescue, and it

wasn't until all the NPCs in the city displayed unfriendly attitudes towards them that their brain-dead behavior stopped.

They couldn't be blamed as anyone who suddenly possessed magic wouldn't think about saving the world first; they would probably try to frustrate the NPCs and cause extensive damage instead.

However, there was no doubt that even if the Florentine psychology was brought out, this behavior still followed a certain pattern.

And it was because of this that most mages chose their second job as a fire mage or undead mage.

One was powerful. The other was evil.

According to user preferences, the game designers in the other world could only use the raw data and wave their "butcher knives."

"The weather is quite nice today."

"Let's nerf the mage."

These two sentences were commonly spoken in Du Yongkong's office.

Since they couldn't see the players, they didn't know why internal testers favored mages or why they were so keen to light up the NPC's building with fireballs. It was something Du Yongkong had never seen in the twenty years of his professional career.

It wasn't until Du Yongkong reported the mage getting nerfed to Jiang Chen that the behavior stopped.

The virtual reality in the apocalypse took a century to mature from its infancy, so the players in that world didn't feel too astonished by the freedom and magic of the world - they were already accustomed to it.

To put it in simple terms, the internal testers in the modern world displayed behaviors similar to primates in awe of civilization

due to the hastened timeline of the availability of virtual reality. Just like an indigenous person who had a musket thrown into his hand, their first reaction wasn't to be repelled but rather to come closer to the muzzle, wondering how the black hole could spit out fire.

Nerfing the damage on the spell would decrease the game's playability, but without nerfs, no one would play warrior which would impact the overall gaming experience. After careful consideration, Jiang Chen instructed them to nerf the scalability, but not the damage.

For example, C level equipment for a warrior required 100 gold with a drop chance of 10%, while C level equipment for a mage required 1000 gold with a drop chance of 4%. If most noobs couldn't afford to play a mage, they would automatically choose another profession.

And at level 20, players would gain an opportunity to redistribute their stats and choose their class again.

Also, for classes like the priest, the game designer on the wasteland made similar adjustments.

25 days after the change, the playability of the game increased quite substantially.

As Wei Wendong played an archer he just created, walking in the woods, the symbol of <Connection Lost> suddenly popped up.

"Disconnected?" Wei Wendong frowned.

The battery should be full. The "Phantom" connected to Wi-Fi could potentially disconnect in theory, but this is the first time this has happened...

He chose to log out, put down his helmet, and look around only to discover it was pitch black in the hall. He could slightly make out that the players around him were all experiencing the same situation as they woke up from their games with a blank

expression.

"Everyone, please remain calm. There's been a small accident outside."

An employee walked in and spoke to the crowd with a loudspeaker.

Chapter 467: The Intimate Arrival

Because Wei Wendong was close to the door, he noticed that behind the employee was security in "plastic armor."

He had been skeptical of the futuristic-looking "plastic" armor that could defend against bullets. The fluid-looking rifles in their hands were more like props from a sci-fi movie.

But if Wei Wendong knew the plastic armor could defend against the firing of a 12.7 mm caliber machine gun or the toy could easily flip over a 3-ton military Hummer or that the prop gun could penetrate through the bulletproof exterior of a Hummer, what kind of expression would he have on his face?

The kinetic skeleton had remained a concept only in labs. In this aspect, Celestial Trade was leading the world.

A faint explosion transmitted from outside.

But due to the excellent insulation of the hall, only Wei Wendong, close to the door, felt a minor shake. The explosion made him uneasy, but just as he was planning to ask the employee, the lights in the hall came back again.

"What just happened? Fu*k, I was killing a boss but suddenly disconnected."

"Q.Q, I just got a legendary weapon but hadn't picked it up."

"Did the power just go out?"

Wei Wendong listened to the chit-chat of the surrounding players. He hesitated for a moment before he swallowed his question down. The explosion outside and the barely audible gunshots made him feel the situation wasn't as simple as a power outage.

"We apologize as the hotel's power system experienced a temporary outage. Our technical experts have resolved the

situation, please return to the game. The game data has been reset to before the outage and will be unpaused in two minutes."

[Pausing the server is only something that can be done during internal testing.] With a mind full of questions, Wei Wendong put on the helmet and logged into the game.

...

Jiang Chen had spent an entire day working on the contract for the production of helmets. When he returned home, he fell asleep right away.

But two hours into his sleep, a call from the internal testing center woke him up.

"An attack?" Jiang Chen listened to the description over the phone as his eyebrows furrowed together.

"That's right. There were five attackers in total. One cut off the power supply in the hotel remotely while the other four with light weapons attempted to enter the hotel, but the drones detected them. Our people immediately suppressed them with bullets. When they were retreating, they used grenades and struck the wall of the hotel, but fortunately, there were no casualties," the security manager responsible for the internal testing center reported.

"Where are they?" Jiang Chen asked in a serious undertone.

As long as there was one person alive, the truth-telling liquid could uncover the truth.

"Three people were shot dead during their escape. One person died due to a vehicle collision and the other person committed suicide."

[Suicide?]

Jiang Chen's eyebrows tightened.

"Did you confirm their identities?"

"Other than the fact that three of them were white and two were

black, we weren't able to obtain any more information," Ma Li answered.

The organization that sent out that force was a formidable opponent as they sent out agents who would rather commit suicide than reveal their identity.

"Were there any witnesses?"

"All information leaks have been controlled."

"Great, continue to monitor the information leaks and don't let the media know. Take care of the situation."

If the media exposed a shooting at the door of Future Technology's Internal Testing Center, Xin's tourism rating and Future Technology's public image would be impacted. If possible, it was better to keep the media ignorant of the incident.

"Understood," Ma Li answered affirmatively.

Jiang Chen thought for a while after he hung up the phone to think about who could've launched the attack. But when he carefully went through a list of potential organizations, he realized there were too many suspicious people. Future Technology's virtual reality touched too many people's slice of the pie. It was fortunate that the testing was being done on his territory and Celestial could punish any rats with iron fists.

He had to wait for Ayesha to finish training the agents.

Jiang Chen shook his head.

There was no signal on that island, so there was no way of contacting Ayesha even if he wanted to. If he made a trip... he feared it would interrupt her teaching.

Jiang Chen flung his phone to the side, yawned, and laid down again.

Regardless, he was tired today. He still had to head to the airport tomorrow, so it would be an early morning start for him.

...

Inside the airport, a splendid figure in a summer outfit strolled around. Her black circular shades were matched with a straw hat; her graceful hand pulled a lemon-yellow suitcase along. Her appearance looked exactly like a celebrity traveling in secret, catching the attention of all the tourists.

But the beauty was clearly used to their envious looks, so she didn't react at all as she headed straight to the door.

"Hello~"

Liu Yao's eyes lit up when she saw Jiang Chen leaning against the door. She waved energetically.

With Liu Yao's lively appearance, Jiang Chen smiled and greeted her as well. But just as he was about to speak, an unstoppable yawn came out.

Liu Yao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen and dragged her suitcase in front of him.

"What? Did you not miss me?"

"How could I not? It's just that something happened last night," Jiang Chen said with his mouth wide open while taking Liu Yao's luggage. He walked in front of the car to stuff the luggage in.

Something did happen last night, but Liu Yao clearly mistook it for something else. She rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen again but it didn't take long before her attention shifted to Jiang Chen's car.

"Wow, is this a Lamborghini? The trunk is in the front." Liu Yao touched the car out of excitement.

"Do you like it? I'll gift you one then?" Jiang Chen opened the door.

Even Natasha had scoffed at the lack of defense on his ride. Out of safety considerations, it was time to switch to a safer vehicle.

For example, he should build the car with C-type steel, use

tempered glass for the car windows, use nuclear fusion batteries as the engine for the car, and install two rockets.

When Liu Yao entered the car, she immediately took off her shades and tossed her hat to the back.

"Why do I feel like you're really excited?"

"I just really missed you." Liu Yao stared at Jiang Chen with her watery eyes.

"Really?"

"Of course!" Liu Yao lifted her graceful legs. Her movements showed her charm.

"I think you got prettier." Jiang Chen examined Liu Yao while rubbing his chin.

"Where?" Liu Yao asked with enthusiasm.

Jiang Chen pretended to be deep in thought. Faced with Liu Yao's hopeful glance, he finally gave a response:

"Your boobs got bigger."

Liu Yao's face was decorated with a blush as she pouted.

"Screw you."

"Then where should I compliment you?" Jiang Chen started the car while he spoke with a smirk.

"Obviously other parts. Like my face, my eyes."

"Then your face got bigger."

"What? Did it get bigger?" Liu Yao scrambled through her purse to find a mirror and examined her face. "It didn't get bigger..."

But soon after, she saw the smirk on Jiang Chen's face and she replied to him with a hard stare:

"Hmph, you dared to trick me."

With a grin on his face, Liu Yao felt she shouldn't let this go so

easily, but she couldn't think of a way to punish him.

Her eyes rolled around and suddenly a bright smile formed on her face.

"Pay attention when you're driving."

"Of course, you don't have to worry about my driving."

"Oh, is that so? Then you better drive slowly..." Liu Yao smiled mysteriously then reached out her left hand nonchalantly.

"Xin's road conditions aren't bad; there aren't many cars on the road-"

The cold sensation made Jiang Chen's scalp tingle.

"What're you doing..." Jiang Chen frantically tried to stabilize the steering wheel then glanced at the mischevious Liu Yao.

"I'm testing your driving skills."

Liu Yao turned the bottle of water and grinned.

Liu Yao studied Jiang Chen's expression and she felt confident. Regardless of what happened last night, he still had feelings for her. As his mistress, only this feeling gave her a sense of security.

If Jiang Chen knew what she was thinking, he would have a peculiar expression on his face. Something did happen last night, but it was completely contrary to what Liu Yao thought.

Something similar happened before. When they came out of Wanghai University, a similar scene happened in the car. But the only difference was that the Maybach had tinted glass. The inside of this Lamborghini could still be seen from the outside.

If Jiang Chen parked on the road, everyone would see what was happening in the car. But the car was moving.

"Can't you wait until we watch the movie?" Jiang Chen was consumed by the gentle coldness while he squeezed a few words from his teeth. He tried his best to maneuver the vehicle.

It was very distracting to have people drinking water on the side.

"No, I'm thirsty." Liu Yao pouted.

The "displeased" Jiang Chen made Liu Yao even more naughty.

Her mischevious eyes rolled around and she opened the bottle cap. Her bright red lips moved closer and began to slurp on the water.

Chapter 468: What If

Jiang Chen drove Liu Yao back home and they watched a movie she starred in at her home theater.

Needless to say, it was fun hugging the actual movie star from the film. But because Liu Yao distracted him from viewing the movie, Jiang Chen didn't absorb any of the film's plot.

But even then, just from the few scenes she acted in, her performance as "the prom queen who could only be viewed from a distance" was exquisite. This was especially obvious when she rejected the supporting actor's confession and the leading actor accompanied the supporting actor to watch Liu Yao's plane fly into the distance - Liu Yao displayed her "goddess" ambiance and even surpassed the leading actress on this aspect.

Although it had a typical romance plot, teenage girls loved to watch it and their boyfriends loved to watch it with them. The plot wasn't important necessarily as long as the BGM and scenes were emotional enough. With the weight of a favorable review from "senior film critique," Jiang Chen, once the film hit the theatres, Liu Yao would become the goddess in everyone's heart, the prom queen only viewable from a distance...

But what they wouldn't know was that the prom queen was currently sitting on Jiang Chen's lap.

"Okay, that should be all your scenes. Aren't you going to come down?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"No, the film isn't over yet." Her hair was slightly messy, but Liu Yao pouted defiantly, shook her waist, and swatted away Jiang Chen's hand.

"Okay, as long as you can take it."

Liu Yao stuck out her tongue and thought about it for a bit before coming down.

"The gorgeous exit scene I heard was added when the director asked the screenwriter to change the script."

"Oh? Is that so? I feel it was a great addition. Mhmm, bring me a bottle of champagne." Jiang Chen smiled nonchalantly.

Typically speaking, to prevent the supporting cast from taking over, the director would usually decrease the number of scenes the supporting cast appeared in. Although Jiang Chen wasn't well-versed in the art of movies, who cared? He was rich.

"Thank you," Liu Yao whispered as she stood in front of Jiang Chen and tidied up her messy clothes.

"No need." Jiang Chen smirked, closed his eyes playfully, and opened his mouth: "I'm thirsty, give me water."

Liu Yao seductively rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen. She turned around and headed to the kitchen with elegant steps.

...

Liu Yao was the type of girl who knew her position and what other people needed. Because of this, it was relaxing and joyful spending time with her.

In the next three days, Jiang Chen had the rare opportunity to enjoy the lavish life of a billionaire. He either brought Liu Yao to "contribute to the local tourism industry" on Coro Island or spent time with her on his private island.

When he thought about it, he hadn't had the time to relax for the past while. He was either working on Future Group's business in Xin or he was working on the "territorial dispute" in the apocalypse. While he made a decent amount of money, only a small percentage was used for leisure.

"This is such a waste." Jiang Chen laid on the lounge chair while sluggishly bathing in a ray of sunshine.

"A waste?" Liu Yao laid beside Jiang Chen while uploading

pictures of the southern kingdom.

"It's nothing. I just think it's so beautiful here, yet I only spend a handful of time enjoying this."

"Could I interpret that to mean you're showing off right now?" Liu Yao pouted while looking at Jiang Chen, speechless. She then continued to play with her phone and upload pictures onto her Weibo.

Just then, she posted a photo of their private beach. A lot of "good friends" commented and called her "sister," hoping she could bring them along next time she traveled.

Liu Yao's vanity was satisfied when she scrolled through the comments. A bright smile appeared on her face. She typed away with delight and replied, saying she would bring some specialties back and treat them to a nice dinner with her pay.

As for bringing them there...

She'd pass. She didn't want to increase her competition.

While Liu Yao was waving her legs in joy, Jiang Chen couldn't help but smile.

Without needing to look, he knew what she was doing.

A woman's vanity wouldn't make a man jealous, because vanity could also bring satisfaction to men. A lot of the time, men just hated women who used their vanity to kidnap him, challenge his limits, and cause unnecessary problems.

But Liu Yao seemed to know this point well - while she did brag about her man's power, she never used Jiang Chen's name for anything unreasonable. And she didn't use her relationship with the biggest investor in the film industry to mistreat the other cast members.

Jiang Chen often thought she was the perfect mistress.

"Oh, am I in the picture?" he asked casually.

"Hmm? No." Liu Yao tilted her head but suddenly remembered something as she whispered, "Of course, if you want to make our thing public, I won't mind."

"No." Jiang Chen shook his head.

[This girl's thought process is completely different from mine. To be honest, I don't care about scandals or rumors; the reason I asked was because...]

"It's for your safety."

"Safety?" Liu Yao had a slight look of fear. "Did you get into trouble with gangs?"

Jiang Chen burst out laughing and spat out the orange juice he just gulped down. [Gangs? Am I this low?]

Liu Yao looked at Jiang Chen, still confused, as she didn't know why he was laughing.

"Are you scared?" Jiang Chen didn't address her confusion.

If she was afraid, he would draw a line in their relationship and force her to stay away from that world.

Liu Yao took a moment to process things before she shook her head rapidly.

"I'm not afraid."

"Really?"

"Don't act like this. What did I do to make you dislike me?" Liu Yao got up from lying on the ground with sadness on her face before she moved next to Jiang Chen. She rested her face on his arm and looked at him, feeling mistreated.

Jiang Chen's question gave her an ominous feeling.

Jiang Chen laughed and tousled her hair.

"You're absolutely safe in Hua and Xin. But if you make some people believe you're close to me and that you mean something to

me, some people may attempt to kidnap you and use you to threaten me in exchange for a ransom."

Although it was the most comical thing to kidnap the women of rich men, a lot of wealthy men wanted to get rid of their old wives and mistresses who no longer interested them. Compared to kidnapping, it was better to seduce... but Jiang Chen considered himself someone who cared about the people around him, so he had to consider this possibility.

[Then would you come and save me?]

Liu Yao subconsciously wanted to ask, but she swallowed the question down in the end.

[I'm only his mistress...]

She regretted that she hadn't given her first time to him more than once. [If we met earlier... if...]

Her tears rolled down and hid in the sand. Perhaps the sorrow of being an actress was that even if she felt emotional, her tears would be considered acting by others.

[I'm your regret.]

[But you're my regret as well...]

Liu Yao felt melancholic.

But Jiang Chen seemed to have read her mind. "I'll save you."

Liu Yao's eyes widened in disbelief; her teary look was beautiful.

Her shaking lips seemed to be asking: "But why?"

"But... the only thing I can do in the end is to avenge you." Jiang Chen sighed.

Even though Liu Yao was just his mistress, if the people who bothered him killed her, he would do anything to find them and press the nuclear button without hesitation because he cared.

The reason why he tolerated spy activity was because they hadn't

reached his bottom line.

"That's enough," Liu Yao whispered as she dried her tears on Jiang Chen's arm.

"Why's that enough? Can't you protect yourself?" Jiang Chen asked wryly.

"Because I still mean something to you. Can't I be proud of that?" She rested on Jiang Chen's arm.

They weren't worried about the same thing. He was concerned about safety, but now the topic had shifted to personal importance.

[It might not be a great thing to be important to me...]

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes and gazed at the horizon in the distance.

"You know what's the best way to protect the people important to you?"

"What's that?" Considering the sternness on Jiang Chen's face, Liu Yao asked genuinely.

"Have enough important people in your life so people won't know who's more important," Jiang Chen said with a smirk.

Liu Yao first paused before she pouted speechlessly.

"You know..."

"What?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows, no longer serious.

"You completely ruined the atmosphere just now!" Liu Yao made a funny face at him with her eyes rolled and tongue stuck out. She sat back down and completely ignored him.

Jiang Chen smiled and didn't respond.

It was just a joke.

Chapter 469: Farewell

"Recently, the MLF active in Country F's territory launched a large-scale military attack named 'Autumn Assault' on the Dawo Port. Currently, over 70% of the area in Dawo is under the control of anti-government forces. The new leader of MLF called all faithful believers and Moro nationalists to join the organization, to resist Country F government's invasion and suppression, to restore the sovereignty of Moro and return MLL Island to the Moros."

"The UA spokesperson criticized Santos' speech, calling its actions unconstitutional. Seeking independence should not threaten the life and property of normal citizens. And they expressed that they will refuse to recognize a country formed through violent means. The Rainbow House is currently discussing the possibility of sending out ground forces..."

"The Russian president stated that the comments should take into consideration the current situation in Syria. It isn't only Country F's anti-government forces using violent means..."

"Due to the conflict in Country F, support for Sandy has slid down by 7 points. The UA media questioned its campaign objective to return to the Asia Pacific, stating that it could not improve the current situation without making the situation spin out of control. The Capital didn't comment further and only expressed that they would provide assistance to their allies when the time was deemed appropriate. But analysis stated that the possibility of sending ground forces to intervene with the Country F situation is unlikely. With the upcoming election, due to the influence of anti-war sentiment in the country, the Republicans don't want to further add variables to the election..."

[Santos actually did something, then.]

Watching the news on TV, a smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face.

Just then, a soft sensation came from behind his head.

"Are you watching the news?" Liu Yao hugged Jiang Chen from behind.

"Mhmm, just taking a look." Jiang Chen shut off the TV.

"Country F is so close to Xin - would it affect us here?" She rested her chin on Jiang Chen's head as she asked with concern.

"Are you worried about me?" Jiang Chen lifted Liu Yao's head and rubbed her hair.

"Why else then?"

Liu Yao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen and lowered her body to nibble on his ear. She then moved up and said, "Breakfast is ready, let's eat."

Jiang Chen smiled, got up from the sofa, and headed to the table with Liu Yao.

The past seven days, he lived a shameless life with Liu Yao. Jiang Chen previously thought she was the trophy type of woman who didn't do any housework or cooking, but the reality soon proved that he was wrong. After living alone for so long, Liu Yao learned how to take care of herself.

For the past few days, Jiang Chen's life had been taken care of by the celebrity. Because of this, the mansion, previously filled with dust, became bright again.

Other than enjoying life, Jiang Chen kept himself busy. The production arrangements for "Phantom" and the new nutrient supply production line were all tasks that couldn't be delegated to anyone - he had to do it all himself.

Also, three completed Dolphin-10s were deployed by Droplet, 200 nautical miles away from Coro Island in the Pacific region. With the protection of nuclear weapons, Xin no longer needed to be afraid of the threat of any external forces. As to when their nuclear weapons would be made public, the date hadn't been set.

During the night, Jiang Chen immersed himself completely in Liu Yao's softness.

With the blink of an eye, it was already early September.

Although he wanted to continue to live the comfortable life, since the "Wanghai City Center Attack Plan" was approaching its scheduled date, he had to wrap up everything in the modern world before mid-September.

...

Outside the airport, Liu Yao released the suitcase she was dragging. She hooked her arms around Jiang Chen's neck longingly and kissed him.

"I'm going to go. Take care of yourself."

"When's your next film going to show up? Is there a plan?" Jiang Chen gently patted her back and smiled.

"The movie isn't currently in theatres yet. I'll have to wait for the box office at the year's end. Remember to watch it with me one more time in a movie theatre."

"Aren't you embarrassed?" Jiang Chen smirked.

"Pervert!"

Her boarding announcement echoed throughout the terminal. Although Liu Yao wanted to stay longer, time didn't permit.

She went up on her tiptoes and left another kiss on Jiang Chen's face. Then she dragged her luggage along and rushed to the gate.

When Jiang Chen left the airport, he didn't get in the car immediately. Instead, he leaned against it and watched the sky above the airport.

Her plane departed and disappeared into the clouds.

He reminisced the past seven days of joy before he started to chuckle and got into the car. He put on his Bluetooth and went on

his way.

Jiang Chen dialed Xia Shiyu's office.

"Hello?" It was a cold but familiar voice.

"There are 600,000 units of 'Phantom' helmet ready. How are preparations on your side?"

"Only 600,000? That's too little." Xia Shiyu leaned on the office chair, scanned the document on her laptop and spoke with an eyebrow raised.

"Don't worry, by the year's end, you'll see 20,000,000 virtual reality helmets." Jiang Chen began to laugh.

Production must be increased gradually. Just yesterday, Fishbone base produced two more production equipment. When the equipment was installed at the plant, the output of "Phantom" could reach 1,100,000 per month.

As long as they increased the production capacity to 10,000,000 before January, with the Sixth Street part of the order, it wouldn't be unrealistic to achieve the 20,000,000 target.

"Currently, we contacted 70,000 net cafes domestically and 310,000 net cafes internationally to launch the virtual reality experience project. We need 1,440,000 helmets for this."

Marketing was only one aspect of the project, but for word of this project to spread, advertisements alone weren't enough. Using internet cafes as a physical channel to market the product was an excellent choice. With expensive products, consumers often held a cautious attitude, but Jiang Chen was confident that when players experienced the magic of "Phantom," no one would want to put it down.

"What're the specifics of the plan?" Jiang Chen asked curiously.

"We'll provide the product and they'll provide the channel. The current pricing for experimenting with the product is set at 1 USD

per hour with an equal split of profits. I've laid out the details of the plan. But the key is: do you really have 1,440,000 helmets?" Xia Shiyu pushed up her glasses and asked concisely.

"When do you need them?"

"As soon as possible. In the initial stage, we can work with bigger net cafe chains before expanding to the smaller cities. We only need 100,000 in the first phase, but it's still better for us to have 1,440,000 ready by the end of October."

"Don't worry, it'll be done by early October. On your side, you can start to arrange the logistics." Jiang Chen smiled.

"I already made an agreement with Norway-based MSG Group. They have an excellent reputation, have high efficiency and are considered a top-five global logistics company. I signed a three-year agreement with them. They promised to bill us at 90% of the market price." Xia Shiyu spoke nonchalantly with subtle pride.

When Jiang Chen heard this, he was amazed at Xia Shiyu's abilities. Anything that could've come to mind was already arranged by her.

"Haha, I can't believe you took care of everything. Then, for everything aside from production, I'll have to count on you."

"You've always counted on me," Xia Shiyu said, speechless.

Jiang Chen only grinned at Xia Shiyu's scoff.

"How's it been?"

"Mhmm... not bad." Xia Shiyu felt touched when Jiang Chen began to ask about her; she answered with a finger twirling her hair.

The female assistant at the side looked at her CEO's expression in shock.

She had been working for her for a long time, yet it was the first time she saw such a womanly expression on the normally-

emotionless CEO.

Chapter 470: Experiencing Virtual Reality

Inside the hallway of Tencent's headquarters, a project manager in a suit walked with brisk steps. He had a document in his hand and from the expression on his face, something good must've happened.

Du Zhuze stood in front of Ma Huateng's office. He took a deep breath, adjusted his tie, and knocked on the door.

"Come in."

When he heard the voice inside, he eagerly pushed open the door.

"Boss, they agreed on the acquisition. Wanghai Lexiang Technology stated that with our support, their Deepon virtual reality equipment now has the ability to directly connect to laptops and the previous compatibility problem has been resolved. From the test they did yesterday, it can smoothly run virtual reality games such as Microsoft's Minecraft and Eve: Valkyrie."

The former had quite a reputation domestically. Ever since the virtual reality trailer was released in December of 2015, it received considerable attention. And the latter's lack of publicity domestically was primarily due to the poor selection of game operators.

"Discuss publication rights with CCP. You must make them sign the contract," Ma Huateng said with an undertone.

Without a game that people enjoyed playing, it would be extremely difficult to market virtual reality. People wouldn't purchase VR equipment just because they could log on their QQ with VR equipment.

"But EVE's partner Shiji Tiancheng is also in discussions about Valkyrie. They're already the operator for EVE; we don't have any advantage in winning the bid for Valkyrie," Du Shuze said with a pained look.

Ma Huateng smiled mysteriously. "We have money and an even better user group."

He hadn't focused on EVE because it was a small market game, but now that he thought about it, what was more appealing than freely soaring in the galaxy in virtual reality?

After receiving assurance from his boss, Du Shuze felt relieved and continued.

"What about Microsoft's Minecraft?"

"That's a single-player game, right?" Ma Huateng had a slight frown.

"Primarily a single player game, but it has server functionality," Du Shuze answered.

"Therefore, without the need for a large-scale server, it allows for a local network connection?"

"In theory, yes." The project manager nodded.

"Then ignore it. We're only focusing on MMO. The spirit of the internet is sharing, and players will naturally tire of this type of game." Ma Huateng waved his hand to dismiss his concerns.

The project manager suddenly understood.

"Boss you're so smart!"

[Did you even need to say it?] Ma Huateng glared at him.

But it certainly felt good to listen to flattery as Ma Huateng sunk into his chair, feeling proud. Future Technology's sudden emergence was indeed annoying, but with the solid foundation of the Tencent empire, it would be easy to break into virtual reality.

The only reason they hadn't made a move was because the mobile market was saturated. As a newly-formed company, they dared to fight for market shares with the three giants - Baidu, Tencent, and Alibaba? That was wishful thinking.

But since the war began, he was more focused on the plans of the other two giants.

"Keep an eye on Alibaba and Baidu; I feel they will-"

The door was suddenly pushed open, interrupting their conversation.

The person at the door leaned on the door frame while gasping for breath. He had a piece of wrinkled paper in his hand.

Ma Huateng raised an eyebrow as this employee's rude actions displeased him. Du Shuze, by the side, glanced at the person and gloated before returning to a serious expression.

After catching his breath, the person finally stood up. Without apologizing, he hastily walked to Ma Huateng's desk and placed the document down while shaking.

"Boss, Future Technology made a new move. This is a document I copied from a net cafe that works with us." The person finally started to breathe normally and began to articulate himself.

Ma Huateng glanced at him before gazing at the document.

"Virtual reality experience project?"

Ma Huateng flipped through the document before he started to look concerned.

For some reason, Future Technology's move made him feel uneasy.

"Little Du."

"Mhmm?" Du Shuze straightened his back and awaited orders.

"You're responsible for virtual reality. After work, go experience this for me," Ma Huateng said nonchalantly.

"Yes Boss."

"Ok, that's it from me."

Du Shuze immediately stepped out. The employee who rushed in

hesitated for a moment, wanting to say something. When he saw the displeased expression on his boss' face, realizing his recklessness, he shut his mouth and left the office with Du Shuze.

...

Wanghai City's Star Netcafe was filled with people. There were empty computers, but the front desk was crowded with people.

The first things people said when they entered the net cafe was:

"Could you get a 'Phantom' virtual reality helmet for me?"

"Sorry, sir, the only four Phantom helmets in the store are being used," the staff said with mixed emotions.

She had repeated the same line over fifty times.

"What?! Full already?" The man's eyes widened. "Eh, why're there only four here?"

Her explanation clearly didn't convince this man. If it wasn't for the fact that the staff looked cute, he would've cursed.

As a loyal fan of Future Technology, he followed the official site of Godly Land while waiting for the monthly updated trailer. Other than that, he also avidly followed the streamers who chose to be part of the internal test.

The streamers didn't disclose the game content, but when they were asked if the game was fun, even straight-faced streamers would display a fervent look.

It had been half a year since the official site came online. Now that he could finally play it, he was indeed eager. As soon as he saw "Experience project" on Future 1.0, he immediately dropped everything he was doing and rushed to the closest partnered netcafe.

Yet now, the Star Netcafe was telling him it was full?

What kind of joke was this? The largest net cafe in the area only had four "Phantom"?

"How long is the wait?" the man said out of annoyance.

The new staff was about to be in tears considering how menacing the man looked.

"You'll have to wait."

"I know I have to wait. I'm asking how long do I have to wait?" the man said aggressively.

The older staff who just finished her tasks could no longer stand by as she dragged the new staff to the back before personally handling the situation.

"Sir, do you want to open a computer or experience virtual reality? If you want to experience virtual reality, please register on our computer. There are still 51 players before you for a total of 102 hours of wait time. We'll alert you through text message five hours before your spot opens up. Also, if you have time at night, you could join the night list with 23 players currently waiting—"

When he heard he had to wait for five days, he immediately exploded and began yelling.

"Fu*k, what kind of sh*tty net cafe is this? I have to wait! I won't play anymore."

Although he said that, he still stood there. He stared at the staff while waiting for the server to give in.

But the staff was experienced as he looked at the man with a smile without displaying any emotion.

Since he was blocking the way, the people behind him began to grow discontent.

"Can you be faster? If you don't want to play, leave. Stop wasting time."

"That's right."

When he heard the voices from the back, the man's face turned red out of embarrassment. He wanted to leave, but when he saw

the long line before him, if he left, he wouldn't be able to experience virtual reality anymore.

"Who said I won't play? I'll wait, how much?"

"You said that?" There were whistles behind him, but he chose to ignore them.

[Whatever you say, my skin is thick enough.]

"6 RMB an hour." The staff pointed at the sign at the door.

It wasn't expensive, which made him feel a bit better. By comparison, an Apple computer cost 12 an hour.

The same scene was also occurring in Wanghai, Shangjing, and other metropolises. A few days later, Phantom was set to appear in New York, London, and Paris.

When the first player put down the virtual reality helmet reluctantly and began to share his astonishment with his friends, it would mark the first intimate contact between civilization and virtual reality.

Chapter 471: Arena Mode

Based on the income and tax of each country, the virtual reality experience price differed. The internet cafe in Hua was priced at 6 RMB an hour, in UA it was 2 USD, in Europe, it was 2 Euros. Half went to the internet cafe while the other half went to Future Technology. Two months later, the internet cafe could purchase the helmet at 2000 USD without the need to share their profits with Future Technology.

All the players' accounts were being connected to their iris scan and could be linked to their Future 1.0 account.

To ensure everyone could play the game, Future Technology limited the experience of time per person. Every person could experience the game for a maximum of 2 hours every 72 hours. The frequency would increase following the increase in vacant helmets.

But that would never happen.

Within 24 hours, after introducing the virtual reality experience project to 21 major internet cafes in Wanghai, the internet exploded with passion. A lot of forums, BBS, and Weibo were flooded by the word "Phantom." Players who were fortunate enough to experience the game all expressed their astonishment.

"It's immersive virtual reality helmet! The rumor before was true! I did experience it in my life!"

"That's unbelievable. It's hard to imagine, my body didn't move... It's hard to describe the feeling. It felt as if I traveled to another world!"

"Selling HoloLens purchased, only played for two days, selling at half price, please contact here..."

"..."

Words alone could not describe the excitement of the players.

Not only players, but even the scientific field was also stunned by Future Technology.

The Nobel Prize Committee sent emails to Future Technology, inquiring about the individual that made the breakthrough of exchanging information between the neural network and electric signals as they wished to name them as a candidate for the next Nobel Prize.

But when Xia Shiyu asked Jiang Chen about the name of the person, Jiang Chen painfully rejected the Nobel Prize right at his doorstep. Even if he said he invented it himself, no one would believe him. With his personal resume and life, it nowhere resembled a sophisticated scientist.

This technology was destined to be left out of the Nobel Prize.

Disregarding how astonished the players and the scientific field was.

In the hopes of the players waiting to experience virtual reality, Future Technology finally opened the tip of the iceberg to Godly Land - Arena Experience Project.

Although it was just an experience project, it could be defined as internal testing.

All the players were arranged to be part of the testing server. Although they could not experience the content of the full game, they could experience the arena function that the internal test players have yet to experience and its dueling function.

In the arena, the player level was set to ten with all classes available. When the game started, the player could use gold from the system to purchase equipment from the arena merchant, then join the battle in the arena.

Duel or team. Twelve different terrains to choose from.

Everyone was a beginner without any need to consider advantages and disadvantages. But when they just enter the game,

there was a tutorial. In some element, the data from the arena would affect the class balancing in the official release.

On the other side, the arena would allow the players to unleash their desire to throw fireballs. On the official release, the prepared players would not all choose the mage class.

What was funny was that a lot of pacifist players chose to make an agreement with the opponent not to fight, but rather to stroll around the map, turning the arena into a tourist spot.

A lot of mages who had fun with the fireballs began to dig mud with their canes. As to the players that purposely chose to be a different gender, they wanted to see if they had the parts of the opposite gender... based on the country's law, the sensitive content would be removed. If they wanted to play the adult game, once the helmet was officially released, following the tutorial on the internet, they could use Xin's VPN to play.

But strictly speaking, the "Phantom" helmet didn't provide audio and video footage. All the footage was played at the brain level. Similar to the idea of "daydreaming". So it was debatable whether virtual reality content would fit in the boundary of the current regulation on electronic publications. It would be unreasonable to use the law to prevent people from daydreaming.

Of course, the primary theme of the arena was the battle.

Other than that, what also shocked the players was the real-time translation functionality in the game.

All the players in the world were in the same testing server, but they could freely communicate. The functionality allowed the players to speak in the common twelve languages.

With so many advanced functionalities, Future Technology once again became the center of the public's and media's discussion.

In a UA talk show, the host had a discussion with Gates on Future Technology.

"There is virtual reality equipment called 'Phantom' that has been recently introduced, Gates, did you play it?"

"Of course, I was at a internet cafe the day it was available, mmmm... and finally managed to play it yesterday." Gates had a helpless expression on his face as laughter came from the crowd that shared the same sentiment.

The host also laughed along and continued to ask.

"if this equipment is officially released one day and you purchase it on the second day, are you not afraid that the scene in the movie would happen? For example, locked into the virtual world and unable to come back?"

"That's a great question. My answer is..." Gates purposely lowered his voice to build up the suspense before he burst out laughing, "I'll play even if I can't come back."

The host was shocked.

"As the founder of Microsoft... Is it good that you view a competitor's product so highly?"

"I view virtual reality highly. I have to admit, after experiencing 'Phantom', the realistic feeling left me stunned. But I want to say that the HoloLens introduced by Microsoft also has its uniqueness. Our philosophy is to promote user interaction in the real world with virtual items, and not further stray away from reality."

"So you're saying, Microsoft and Future Technology have two different emphases?"

"You could interpret it this way." Gates crossed his legs and said while leaning on the chair.

"Then which one do you think will become the new trend?" The host asked a tough question.

The crowd was attentive to the discussion, but Gates certainly felt awkward about the question.

His expression changed for a few seconds. Then he coughed and used a voice with certainty, but gave an ambiguous answer.

"... I can only say that there are advantages on both sides."

Just as Gates was still troubled by the host's tricky question, a research institute was trouble by Phantom.

In a national research institute.

Director Qian with a stern expression looked at the researcher walking toward him.

"Little Wu, did you figure something out?"

The research called Little Wu let out a sigh and shook his head.

"X-ray is unable to scan it. Future Technology sneakily built a lead insulation layer in the helmet."

"What about taking it apart?"

Little Wu's smile was even more bitter.

"Just as we were taking it apart to see what was inside, it immediately triggered the protection mechanism. All the circuits were fried. The only thing we are certain about is that the material they used is the rumored graphene chip. Because when it was taken apart, everything burned into carbon dioxide. As to the critical neural connection, it was even more of a disaster. The molybdenum melted into a ball..."

"Is there no way of replicating it?" While pained by the idea, Director Qian asked.

Little Wu shook his head.

"Damage is too great."

Whenever Director Qian thought about the person called Wang in Wanghai, he was furious. Although he was not as powerful as that guy, it still didn't stop his contempt.

"So wasteful." He cursed out and shook his head before heading

out the door, sighing.

He needed to request to his superior to see if they could contact Future Group. If they could cooperate in virtual reality, it would be best.

Though he knew that it would be a difficult process.

Chapter 472: The Progress in Interdimensional Travel

"The patent office has sent another person here, hoping we can complete the patent registration process to prevent other companies from stealing our intellectual property and future disputes."

"Tell them that the company will take serious consideration on their recommendation, next."

"Tencent wants to partner with us on virtual reality. They stated that if we could provide support on neutral connection—"

"Next."

Currently, Jiang Chen was sitting in front of his desk with both legs on the table while video chatting with Xia Shiyu. Perhaps he was feeling good about himself for he felt just like an emperor at his morning meeting.

"Okay. Although I share the same thought with you, can you still just let me finish reporting?"

Xia Shiyu put down the documents and let out a sigh as Jiang Chen continuously interrupted her.

But from the curvature formed by her lips, her mood was particularly pleasant right now.

As an ambitious woman, Future Technology was just like her kid. She felt no less achieved than Jiang Chen watching it grow into the giant it was today.

Based on the highest valuation from venture capitals, Future Technology's market cap was estimated to be over one hundred billion dollars. Compared to the ten billion last year, it increased ten times. And as the Miss CEO with 1% of the company's shares, her net worth rose exponentially to one billion USD.

Just one year ago, it was something she never dared to imagine.

She still remembered that night. Jiang Chen had inexplicable confidence when he said:

"Currently, the company is still in its planning phase, don't you feel excited? You'll be the new Steve Jobs and I. I will become the new Bill Gates!"

She still vividly remembered how she doubted him.

But now looking back, his confidence was not "without reason". He did become the Hua Bill Gates, and in Wall Street's view, he even exceeded Bill Gates. Future Technology expanded from a small company in an apartment to a one hundred billion dollar company. It only took him one year.

"Is there something else you need to report?" Jiang Chen leisurely sunk into his chair and asked.

Only 17 days left before internal testing is over and the virtual reality experience store will expand worldwide. In four months time, people will gain an initial understanding of Future Technology. Then they would use the hype to put Phantom online before raking in the cash.

"Currently, I have released preorders for half a million helmets with a price of 1000 USD. They were all gone in three minutes. Players who didn't manage to purchase a helmet hoped we could release another half a million units."

Taking out the 500 USD cost, a profit of 250 million in three minutes was extremely exciting.

"Then release another half a million units." Jiang Chen said in excitement.

"My recommendation is to release half a million units at the beginning of every month," with Jiang Chen's excitement, Xia Shiyu covered her mouth and began to giggle, "releasing high amounts would lower the price of the product in consumer minds."

Only a hungry market is an energetic market."

When Xia Shiyu finished, Jiang Chen blanked out.

"Is there something wrong with what I said?" Seeing Jiang Chen was silent, Xia Shiyu was confused.

Jiang Chen shook his head and laughed without being serious.

"It's nothing, I just feel you like to smile more now compared to before."

Now it was Xia Shiyu who blanked out.

"Really?" Xia Shiyu touched her own face.

But when she noticed the joking expression on Jiang Chen's face, she blushed and closed the camera.

"Ahem!" She coughed loudly as she sat up straight in front of the computer forcing herself to put on a serious expression, "let's continue with what we just talked about... umm, where was I?"

Although there was no camera, Jiang Chen still imagined how she looked as he couldn't help but smile.

"Preorder."

"Mhmm! Right, preorder..."

The entire conference was done with a black screen.

Although Jiang Chen requested multiple times to turn on the camera, Xia Shiyu refused with the excuse that it would distract her from work.

[Is this girl being shy?]

Instincts told him that was the likely cause.

He shut the computer, stretched his body, and headed to his bedroom.

...

It was already mid-September, As the attack on the city center

was about to commence, it was time to go back.

When he headed to the warehouse on the south end of Coro Island, Jiang Chen put on the bracelet and was prepared to send the warehouse full of food back to the apocalypse when he discovered that the interdimensional teleportation device no longer functioned.

Although slightly downed by the mishap, the storage dimension still had a size of 300 cubic meters. So after a few trips, he finally emptied the warehouse.

It costed some extra crystals, but he didn't mind.

Like usual, he ordered Wang Qin to arrange for the storage of the food. Jiang Chen then went to Lin Lin's lab to see Lin Lin who was working between vials.

"What are you working on?"

"Fuel. Your Aerospace Technology Research Institute requires fuel with higher combustion time and higher energy and I happen to have some knowledge in this area, so I am helping them out. So, what do you need from me?" Lin Lin swirled a suspicious looking clear liquid in a test tube while she said proudly.

"Your interdimensional mass teleportation device seems to be having problems." Jiang Chen took out the bracelet and put it on the desk.

"That's impossible." Lin Lin raised her eyebrows and put the test tube on the rack, and then picked up the plastic bracelet.

She entered into deep thought while examining the bracelet.

Then, she abruptly walked in front of a table as if she had thought of something and took out a rubric cube-sized cube.

"Put this into your sub-dimension." Lin Lin walked back in front of Jiang Chen and passed the item to him.

Jiang Chen threw it into the storage dimension.

"And then?"

Lin Lin didn't respond but instead walked to testing equipment on the other side of the room, and then opened a device similar to a radio.

"This is?"

"Klein Particle Resonance Receiver. The cube could return the coordinates of its location, as well as the image... how is this possible." Lin Lin stared at the waves in rhythm in disbelief.

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows in confusion, staring at the electrocardiogram lines.

"What happened?"

"It is not a question of what happened... Your sub-dimension became a universe? Although it is just a mini one." Lin Lin's eyes were flushed with excitement.

"I call it the small universe."

"I don't care what it's called. This is a miracle in the field of physics... a sub-dimension created by gravity could give birth to physics principles, this is unbelievable."

"Sorry, I don't understand what you're saying." Jiang Chen looked at the exhilarated Lin Lin while he facepalmed.

"Ahh, don't worry, you don't need to mind the details. There is nothing wrong with my device! I just need to change the coordinates before it can be used." Then, Lin Lin threw the bracelet back into Jiang Chen's lap.

"It is good now?"

"It is good."

"Then what are you doing now?" Lin Lin was eagerly working in front of a computer and completely forgot what she was working on before.

"I'm collecting data, or put it in simple terms, I'm studying your small universe!" Lin Lin said in excitement.

"Is there any purpose to that?" Jiang Chen sighed.

"The purpose is, maybe because of my research, you could travel with people," Lin Lin said.

Jiang Chen held his breath.

"Ahhh, are you not surprised?" Seeing Jiang Chen didn't say anything, Lin Lin proudly glanced at him.

"I'm shocked... or rather, amazed! If you could really develop a way for me to travel with people, I promise an endless amount of pudding." Jiang Chen was ecstatic.

He promised Sun Jiao that if there were an opportunity, he would definitely take her to see his world, visit his school, and look at where he lived before...

Not only that, if he could bring people to travel, he could further gather the technology in this world, and utilize the rich resources in the other world to easily conquer both worlds.

"Pudding from all over the world." Lin Lin was afraid that Jiang Chen would forget their promise as she immediately corrected him.

"Don't worry, anything!" He laughed.

With billions in assets, the pudding was nothing to worry about it.

She smiled cheerfully, but just as she was going to say something, she bent down and began to cough.

"Are you okay?" Jiang Chen rushed up to see what was wrong.

"It's nothing." When Jiang Chen touched her arm, Lin Lin's pupils instantly turned red but quickly returned to normal.

She moved back and avoided Jiang Chen's hands. She took a few

breaths and calmed down.

"Are you sure you are okay?" He was concerned.

"Don't worry." Lin Lin covered her left eye with the other hand pushing him away, "All in all, you can leave now."

"Are you sure?"

"I'm sure, Just go."

Although it hurt to be pushed out, Jiang Chen still listened to Lin Lin's request and left her room and closed the door for her.

[Is she really okay?]

With the door closed shut, Jiang Chen muttered in his mind.

For some reason, Lin Lin concerned him or even gave him an ominous feeling.

And at that moment, the Klein particles flooding out dispersed from city center like a soundless cry.

The last cry.

Chapter 473: Inflation?

A strange phenomenon had appeared in the Sixth Street market lately, as to what it was...

"4 crystals for a kilogram? Why don't you go rob the bank?" A mercenary with a piece of gold in his hand shouted beside the store.

The merchant yawned and then glanced at the survivor.

"Does the explosive to blow the vault open not cost money? Does it not cost money to transport it back? Gold is not that easy to find. I met a Death Claw still breathing in the basement. That's enough. If you're not going to buy it, just leave. You won't be able to buy it later."

After moments of hesitation, the mercenary still threw the crystals to the merchant and picked a few pieces of gold that weighed four kilograms. Although the gold had PAC's specification on it, it was better to be safe.

The merchant picked up the crystal and confirmed it was 16 crystals on the detector before he put the crystals away.

The mercenary looked at the gold in his hand in pain, but he still covered it up before leaving in quick steps.

Four crystals per kilogram was cheap for gold. As to why? Canned food was worth ten crystals. One kilogram of gold was only enough to buy a pack of instant noodles.

But from the expression on the mercenary's face, he was still displeased with the price.

He certainly had his reasons.

Since for the people on the wasteland, gold really didn't serve a purpose. The amount used in the industrial process could be recycled through other electronic parts. When the apocalypse just

arrived, people did indeed hoard a lot of gold, but those people pretty much all died out due to starvation.

The reason why gold was valuable was due to its rarity, anti-corrosive nature, and its agreed upon value. With a population of billions in the PAC, gold indeed possessed value. But in a world where it was questionable if there were a billion people, if the total amount of gold were divided among everyone, everyone would net at least a few kilograms if not more, did gold still possess value?

The answer was obviously no.

But even then, why did the mercenary still use his crystals to exchange for gold?

The reason being that there were too many crystals in the Sixth Street right now!

The NAC's destruction of Wanghai did indeed frighten the survivors of the Sixth Street with its glorious scene. Half a city of zombies and mutants were wiped out was a scene as horrific as actual hell.

And then they were shocked by NAC's generosity again.

The crystals belonged to whoever picked them up as long as they hand in 10% to the military government since the military government fired the rockets. It was hard to execute the task as it was mostly done at the gate. But since the tax amount was not high, the survivors were all cooperative. And with the existence of banks, it made auditing this much simpler.

But even then, the survivors in the Sixth Street all won the lottery.

The diligent could make 700 a day, and the lazy could easily make 400. Mutant bodies were everywhere. Without the need to fight, they only needed to use a knife to pick apart the burned charcoals.

It was not only the survivors that made bank, but the NAC soldiers also participated in the looting process. It was not until

half a month later did the zombies and mutants from the east side of the city migrate over.

In just half a month, everyone had thousands, if not over ten thousand crystals in hand.

If the number of crystals defined wealth, there were no poor people in the Sixth Street anymore.

The Sixth Street survivors were never this rich before, and this type of wealth was dangerous. The average wealth already far exceeded the number of products available in the market. Even if the Sixth Street factories worked at full capacity for ten years, they could not consume all the crystals.

Subsequently, a period of hyperinflation occurred. The price of canned food rose from 10 crystals to 50 and continued to be sold out. The steel that depreciated due to the second expedition rose to its peak value of 100 crystals per ton, and that was when no steel was actually available.

Then, luxury goods regained its value.

Jewelry, gold, gems... all the things viewed as useless in the apocalypse reappeared on the market. A lot of soldiers, mercenaries, and soldiers with wealth in hand not only stored their crystals in the bank, but they all also chose to invest in gold and gems for future investment. Gold price skyrocketed from the initial price of 100 crystals per ton to four crystals per kilogram.

Investing in gold was betting on the future. If the wasteland could restore its order, gold would eventually regain its value.

It was just that when the World Alliance Organization launched the space colonization ships, it made most people's hope falter. But with the emergence of NAC, it made the survivors in Wanghai regain the confidence of order returning. Therefore the future of gold's value began to climb.

Naturally, gold became more valuable.

"It is not a good thing for everyone to become rich. Without enough products to meet the consumption of the survivors, a lot of people with abilities would spend the crystals elsewhere. Since crystal is a hard currency on the wasteland, while the life in Su or Hang might not be as good as here, ten thousand crystals would make you a wealthy man there."

Inside the virtual conference room, Chu Nan stood in front of the table and reported the status quo of the Sixth Street.

"Your plan is?" Jiang Chen rubbed his chin and asked in an undertone.

"First, ensure the products are stably supplied."

"Second, it is something we have to do regardless. Moderate inflation could stimulate economic growth, but hyperinflation could destroy the market. Inflation itself is not scary, but the scary thing is if we can't control the inflation," Chu Nan said.

"You mean, we should introduce a currency?" Jiang Chen tried to guess Chu Nan's plan.

"That's right. This is an urgent task." Chu Nan nodded.

"Introduce a currency... What do we use as a guarantee?"

'Gold? Too much. Not only among survivors, but there was too much in Wanghai. And although gold became valuable in the Sixth Street, outside of the province, it could not become a hard currency.'

'The total global reserve was estimated to be 60 trillion tons and comparable to the iron reserve. Until 2005, a total of 8.9 trillion tons of reserve were identified, with 12.5 trillion tons extracted, god knows what the number was in 2171 before the war.'

Chu Nan smiled mysteriously at Jiang Chen's question as he was clearly prepared.

"General, please think carefully. What is something that has a

stable demand, and we have control over its quantity?"

Demand? Control?

Jiang Chen paused for a second before he suddenly realized.

"Is it... food?"

"That's right! We can use food as a guarantee!"

Chapter 474: Issuing Currency

The next morning, there was a long line up in front of the Sixth Street Bank.

Under the supervision of NAC soldiers, people handed in their crystals and changed them into papers with a special identification code. Some even walked out empty handed.

Is the NAC government robbing people?

Clearly not. Due to a culture that praised power, all the survivors possessed guns. And from people rushing in with an expression afraid that the bank wouldn't accept their crystals, they clearly wanted to be inside. And the NAC soldiers that looked threatening were ensuring order in the line.

As to the reason, it had to do with a newly implemented policy.

To change the current chaotic pricing environment on the Sixth Street market, the NAC government used the Sixth Street bank to introduce a new currency known as "credit point", credit in short. It was not guaranteed by any precious metal. Instead, it was guaranteed by NAC's credit.

At the same time, any of the products defined as specially supplied could only be traded with credit. The products were all made through NAC factories. For example, food, Carm tree sap, iron, aluminum, firearms, etc. It covered almost all the necessities of life.

A kilogram of rice was ten credits, a compressed cracker was two credits, a kilogram of flour was 16 credits... Although the price doubled compared to a month ago, in the currently chaotic market, the price was indeed thoughtful.

Two crystals were equivalent to one credit, and credit point exchanging back to crystals had a 10% tax to it. In mid-September, the Sixth Street planned to introduce 5 million credits and the NAC

government promise to provide 500 tons of rice, 100 tons of flour, and 100 thousand pieces of compressed crackers to the market by next spring.

The rights for the food trade in Wanghai was taken back from Zhao Corporation and controlled by the market established by the NAC government at the west gate of the Sixth Street.

The quantity of the credits introduced was a decision made after careful deliberation between Jiang Chen and Chu Nan.

The paper bills had the amount of 1, 5, 10, 100, with a total of 3 million credits distributed. 5 million virtual credits were released and recorded with the DNA sequence of the individual and used with EP implemented with the "credit trade chip." All data was stored in the bank's database, and virtual trades must be done in NAC jurisdictions with information relay stations.

The employees in the military zone of NAC would be paid in credits to prevent the depreciation of crystals impacting the net worth of its employees.

The introduction of credit received extensive support from the Sixth Street merchants.

The merchants were all smart people. They knew that only the existence of order would allow for their assets to continually appreciate and to prevent everything they own from becoming worthless the next day.

To the merchants with a high amount of crystals, Jiang Chen opened an exclusive channel for them with a total of 8 million credits dedicated to them to collect the crystals depreciating in their hands. The specially introduced credits would be stored in the merchant's account. Jiang Chen also outlined that before November of this year, 90% of the special credits could not enter the market. 50% would be made available after November before lifting the restriction in January of next year. This would prevent a large amount of currency from flooding the market and

disturbing the price.

The introduction of credits marked the end of the era where goods were traded for goods in the Wanghai area.

The crystal detector commonly found on the streets would gradually become part of history. With the credits, people would choose to trade with EPs, just like how people paid with their phone in the 21st century.

Not only this, Jiang Chen planned to push the "NAC standard" to other places.

Use the invisible fulcrum known as Economics to lift the resources of the wasteland. Just like in the other world, where the USD used gold and oil to kidnap the world economy. Credits would use the prosperity of the Sixth Street and the food storage of the NAC to control all trades on the wasteland.

The specifics were demonstrated by the Zhao Corporation changing their crystal strategy and use NAC credits to charge for goods. Crystals would become one of the products and no longer used as a trade equivalent.

Although the survivors outside of the province had no concept of credits and bills, with the passage of time and more merchants heading out of the Sixth Street, the currency would one day become the currency of the world.

...

Followed by the introduction of credits, NAC government had a huge storage of crystals. After thorough auditing, Wang Qin put a report on Jiang Chen's desk.

<Credits Distributed: 16 million, Crystals Accepted: 38 million.>

"No wonder the government loves to print currency, it is a much faster way to make money than taxes." Jiang Chen was shocked.

Just from three days, the NAC treasury expanded by 38 million

crystals; comparable to one year of NAC's total food trade.

"But we also distributed 16 million credits. Rather than saying this money belongs to us, it was more fitting to say we borrowed it from the market." Wang Qin was worried that Jiang Chen would start to mass print currency, so she warned him, "If we cannot supply the products we promised by next spring, we may face a credit bankruptcy."

But her concern was clearly extraneous. Jiang Chen knew clearly the harm of inflation. As to why, he had personally experienced it before...

"Don't worry." Jiang Chen smiled. "Out of the total currency amount, only a small amount will be used in the exchange for products. Most of the currency will flow into the market. As long as we can prove that the food supply is sufficient and stable, we don't have to worry about a bank run. Rather than saying the market let us burrow the crystals, I think it is more of a "protection fee" the market gave us.

Rather than saying it was the NAC's food and production that guaranteed the currency, it was more appropriate to say it was the NAC government's credit.

Just like precious metals in the 21st century was the guarantee for paper bills, only rarely did people use stacks of bills in exchange for precious metals. When people believed in the stability of the country, people would be in favor of holding its currency.

NAC government would control the market for food and the amount of currency circulating on the market. There was no need to worry that the currency would lose control.

Distributing credit was only part of it. Jiang Chen planned to use the Sixth Street bank to lend out 10 million credits in total to encourage the factories to increase production.

The mutants and zombies on the west side of the city were

completely wiped out and the plan to wipe out the east side was in progress. The situation in areas surrounding the Sixth Street was never so slack before and it was the perfect opportunity to expand out!

After Wang Qin left, Han Junhua came into the office.

Jiang Chen didn't need to ask to know the intention of her visit.

It was mid-September already and the plan to attack the city center was about to commence.

"The plan of attack will require the mobilization of First Corps and part of Third Corps. A total of 3000 personnel, 41 power armors, 400 kinetic skeletons, 9 Tiger IIs, 40 armored vehicles will be involved. This is the plan of attack." Han Junhua with crisp motions put the tablet on Jiang Chen's table.

The hologram expanded and outlined the map of Wanghai.

The First Corps would move from Qingpu and attack the area near the Qingpu airport. Then this will become the starting point of attacks on the city center. The Third Corps would attack the city center from the west through Camp 27.

At the same time, the artillery in the Fishbone base will provide support.

Without hesitation, Jiang Chen inputted his fingerprint onto the screen.

"Let the battle begin!"

Chapter 475: Start of the Battle

The artillery support consisted of eight trucks modified into "Fireball-1" launchers. The previous BM-21s that Jiang Chen bought from Russia quickly went obsolete.

Just in terms of combustion, Fireball-1 had combustion energy twice that of BM-21 and a combustion time that was three times longer. At the same time, its accuracy was higher.

Other than the combustion rockets and bombs, the Aerospace Research Technology Institute led by Jiang Lin explored their imagination and designed various laser explosive missiles, EMP missiles, and other futurist weapons.

EMP missiles were simple to explain. Once exploded, all electronic equipment in the area would be rendered useless or destroyed.

And the power of the explosive laser missile was not to be underestimated. The missile would be launched into the air before exploding into countless high energy beams. The power laser damage dealt a considerable amount of damage to any target. Under the shower of multiple missiles, the scene would be as glorious as a massive storm.

Because Jiang Chen contracted out the shell of the rocket to private military factories in the Sixth Street, the number of rockets held in NAC's reserve far exceeded the 1000 target Jiang Chen had set a month ago.

Thousands of giant rockets stacked together on the launching ground at the Aerospace Technology Research Institute with the artillery soldiers under the direct command of the advisory department carefully loading the rockets into the launchers.

Right now, Jiang Chen stood beside the launcher with a tablet in his hand while he listened to Jiang Lin's instructions.

"The details of each vehicle launch status is here along with the internal temperature of the launcher and the number of the ammunition. The tablet can be used to target the coverage fire area and the number of rockets launched. The projectile motion will be calculated with the smart program. After completing all the input specifications, just print your finger beside it."

Jiang Chen intriguingly rubbed his chin looking at the red circle beside the tablet.

"The automatic ammunition loading program is still under design. It won't be completed until some time later. Just use this for now."

"Not bad. A reserve of 5100 rounds of rockets, 1000 bombs, 151 laser explosive missiles... no EMP?" Jiang Chen asked.

"No. The command office ordered us to prioritize the production of combustion rockets. Isn't this an attack against mutants? EMP is useless against creatures."

It didn't take long for all the launchers to be loaded. The soldiers all backed five meters away, dragging the ammo boxes with them.

On the command tablet, the First Corps and Third Corps were marked with blue dots, approaching the city center. The scanned out red dots were zombies and mutants, behaving aggressively. Just from the map, Cheng Weiguo was approaching Wanghai Airport.

With his finger sliding on the screen, he drew out a circle. Just like a life restricted zone, it included all the mutants in the airport.

"It feels like I'm casting a spell." With his finger hovering above the launch button, Jiang Chen grinned.

"And it is the forbidden spell." The designer of the weapon Jiang Lin laughed along.

With a finger on the red circle, the scanning waves ripped through the screen and the merciless words appeared.

Fireball-1 attack group launched.

At the same time, the launch ground was engulfed by the exhaust left by the ascending combustion rockets.

...

Outside of Wanghai airport, the heavy metal symphony was playing.

After a few days of rain, the burning marks left on the street were beginning to fade. The dried up corpses under the weather turned to dust.

Suddenly, the tranquil streets were broken by engines homing and yellow shells.

Tiger IIs crushed the corpses with its mighty force and the charged cannon released its prowess, shredding the heads of Roshans into bits. The zombies and mutants on the east side of the city spread to the city center again. However, the concentration was at a normal level.

The machine gun on the top continuously unleashed its bullets as they trampled the zombies on the highway. Zombies without forming into a sizable group would not pose a threat to tanks.

Most of the risks faced by the First Corps were from the dark alley and the shattered windows of the stores. A lot of zombies in there remained inside, and the zombies from the east were mixed among them.

"Follow up."

Feng Yu in kinetic skeleton fired with his right hand while his left hand signaled his team to move forward.

Suddenly, heinous zombies flooded out from a side street and tumbled toward his team.

"Grenade!"

A soldier ripped off the grenade in front of his chest and threw it

toward the swarm of zombies rushing out.

Fire, explosion, and chunks of meat flew toward the team.

Feng Yu shook them off before raising his rifle to fire back.

Firing in close range meant that only explosive grenades can be used instead of combustion grenades, or the burning zombies would be catastrophic to other creatures. To the zombies with their limbs exploded off, the soldiers finished them off with one more bullet. Or they stepped on them as most of the soldiers were injected with the genetic vaccine could crush the corroded skull of the zombies.

"Dammit, there are more and more zombies in the front!"

With the opportunity to exchange clips, Feng Yu scanned the EP on his left arm.

The drones marked out the zombies in the area as the dense red dots made his skull feel numb.

But he would not back down, because he was an upper citizen of the Sixth Street.

He finally climbed to that level today. He was only one step away from being a knight, he was not going to back down!

"It's a Death Claw!" Suddenly, a shout came through the radio.

A lizard on its feet, waving its claw, rushed out from the street nearby with a soldier struggling to break free from its mouth. From its wrinkled skin, it should be a Death Claw that survived last month's attack.

"Fu*k!" The face that was slowly losing life chilled Feng Yu.

Without hesitating, he immediately ordered the team to move back while firing at the head of the Death Claw.

"Grenade!"

Grenades alone could not kill the Death Claw. At most, it could

suppress its movement.

A sharp claw shredded the smoke of the explosion as the grenade hurt it, but it didn't die.

The Death Claw tumbled toward their direction as its two claws waved in front of it. Just as it was about to touch Feng Yu, its throat was clamped by a powerful hand that forcefully turned it by 90 degrees, and smashed into the concrete wall.

"ROARRRR!"

The Death Claw let out its last roar with its sharp claws leaving a series of deafening screeches on the C grade steel.

But against the T-4 power armor, a dying Death Claw's attack was more like a scratch.

With a hand like an iron claw, the minigun fired and the close distance shooting penetrated the head of the Death Claw.

"You owe me a life, buddy."

The power armor threw down the Death Claw and pumped the steel plate on its chest before it continued to move with its tactical rifle.

The armored vehicles began grouping together on the road. The zombies in the area were cleared out, and they didn't encounter any dangers upon arriving at the airport.

Breathing heavily, with his rifle lowered, Feng Yu looked at the Death Claw on the ground still shaken by what had happened.

"Captain, what are we going to do next?" An infantry moved beside Feng Yu while panting.

"Continue to move—, wait, alert from the command office." With the flashing symbol on the EP, Feng Yu immediately stopped his comrade from moving forward.

The fleet stopped moving, and the power armor dashing in front also stopped and enacted a defensive stance.

Feng Yu raised his head and looked at the clear sky.

Suddenly, hundreds of sharp arrows soared through while dragging long trails of smokes, heading toward the airport.

The bright red flame ascended into the air and the thick smoke hid away the airport.

"Combustion rockets..."

"Our artillery!"

A soldier put down his gun while staring blankly at the sky. Feng Yu who was gazing at the flames shooting up did the same. He quietly watched the fireworks.

When the smoke dispersed, only the ground scorching in fire remained.

The soldiers raised their rifles up high, and loud cheers erupted.

With the cover fire of the rockets, the First Corps with boosted morale stepped onto the road again. They headed towards the last territory that blocked them from reaching the city center.

Chapter 476: Target Locked

Geosynchronous orbit.

36000 kilometers away from the surface of the earth was a zone devoid of life.

Steel, plastic, and unexploded rockets floated around in the quiet space. Among the debris was an aircraft carrier-sized space station.

The God's Cane.

It was completed in 2025 and was continually refined throughout the century to become the massive giant it was today. It turned from a sky-based weapon satellite to a sky-based weapon platform.

The dodecagon metal rings kept the tungsten rods in place while they quietly floated beside the space station just like a loaded revolver. An electromagnetic push would allow the tungsten rods weighing several tons to fall at speeds faster than meteors with a horrifying amount of kinetic energy.

Other than the tungsten rods, there were laser arrays and an HPM weapon in front. In the back were wireless electricity receivers powered by the nuclear fusion power plant built on the moon. When power from the moon wasn't available, it could use its foldable solar panel to generate electricity. The eight engines located on the space station could allow the weapon platform to move between the geosynchronous and low-earth orbits to alter its target area.

It was like the Sword of Damocles hovering over the CCCP and PAC's heads.

But ironically, the "suppressive weapon" that cost generations of taxpayer money was conquered by PAC's fearless Space Special Forces with their undying battle spirit at the beginning of the war.

"Power system repaired." Lin Chaoen grinned before he wiped his forehead although he didn't sweat and there was no point in

speaking in a vacuum.

It had taken him a month's time and a lot of energy to repair this. Bodies floated in the space station because of the lack of gravity, and all the bodies still looked the same as when they died. Outside of the cockpit, he met a sentry robot still with power. But with his laser sword, he quickly resolved the problem.

"Tungsten rod launch device: functional... This is so troublesome. Whatever, it's fine if I only use it once." Lin Chaoen stared at the warning symbols on the screen and clapped his hands with satisfaction.

There was only one tungsten rod left. The few remaining ones either flew out of the geosynchronous orbit or crashed into the ocean when the space station had fallen. Others were floating in orbit thousands of kilometers away.

The sky-based weapon platform was completely destroyed. When PAC gained control of the platform, the NATO commander immediately initiated self-destruction to turn the space station into a land of death. The sprint to sacrifice wasn't any country's specialty - on the brink of collapse, any creature would subconsciously make the "correct choice."

But unfortunately, the right choice was often made after a series of "wrong choices."

Therefore, creatures are troublesome.

Lin Chaoen shook his head and pressed a few buttons on the touchscreen.

He was fortunate to obtain some of the blueprints of the sky-based weapon to make some of the parts on the ground. While most of the God's Cane was destroyed, it could still perform simple firing actions.

"It can only fire now?"

Lin Chaoen scanned a map of Wanghai City as he looked at the

screen with a smile.

In the picture, NAC soldiers were firing at zombies and mutants. Afterward, countless combustion rockets littered the battlefield and engulfed the mutants and zombies at the airport in a blaze.

"Nice fireworks. They already established order... Then could I consider them naturals?"

...

As he watched the flames on the screen with a smile, flickers of images were reflected in his pupils.

The screen moved with the crosshairs targeted at the artillery grounds. Jiang Chen, on the target screen, was pointing at his tablet.

"And you are Harmony."

The screen was focused in the city center onto the giant tree floating in the water. The rumbling meat chuck seemed to possess a tremendous amount of energy.

[Which threat's bigger?]

There was only one bullet in the revolver.

Lin Chaoen watched the battle with a God-eye view as he fell into deep thought.

...

From the cleansing courtesy of the combustion rockets, the First and Third Corps didn't encounter any resistance before converging at the airstrip in Wanghai Airport.

Although the airstrip was bombed into jagged patches and was now burned pitch-black as a result, it would still be usable after some repairs. Jiang Chen ordered Fallout Shelter 027 to research fighter jet technology earlier and they came up with some initial results.

Wanghai airport was perfect as a base for the NAC fighter jets.

After some restocking, the converged divisions once again headed out. With the support of the soaring rockets, they continued to push towards the city center.

Along the way, they encountered a Thrower, Death Claw, and even a horrific Bug Vehicle, but they didn't stop marching forward.

They pushed forward while destroying mutant nests along the way. When they met a Bug Vehicle or Roshan, electromagnetic cannons took care of the problem. When the mutants swarmed together, they called on support from the artillery. When they found mutant nests hidden among the ruins, they sent the infantry to clear out the area.

They destroyed a total of 91 mutant nests, encountered 371 reproducing mutants and cleared out all irregular life signals from the map.

When they approached the forbidden zone, the radiation level gradually climbed. The soldiers took out their protective suits from the trucks and put on breathing masks to push forward.

Tatata—

Sparks emerged and shells dropped. Feng Yu pulled on the trigger calmly while moving forward under the cover fire of the armored vehicle.

"What's this?"

A soldier stared at the luminescent lake among the ruins in the far distance.

"It's a nuclear crater - I think it's where Death Claw gives birth?" Another soldier's machine gun bullets swept across the zombies while he responded.

"It doesn't look like one - there's water in the crater. I think Death Claw gives birth on land... Fu*k, what is that?"

The mountain made of chunks of red meat was in the middle of the luminescent lake. The dense veins on the surface crossed the meat blob and moved rhythmically with the flow of blood. The bottom was infused into the lake surface just like a massive tree rooted into the ground.

A meat bulb that could light up was hung by a tentacle.

It was just like a light bulb.

"This is team E. We identified an unknown creature, requesting artillery support. I repeat..."

Feng Yu immediately raised his EP. Not letting his guard down, he reported the situation on the frontlines to the command office.

A large amount of static noise filled the radio as a strong interference entered the area. Even the EP, known for its stability, started to blur.

"Signal interference? Or is there still an EMP generator in the area?" The soldier beside Feng Yu reloaded his clip while he muttered.

In the distance, rockets appeared again.

Flames instantly engulfed the meat mountain. The rockets covering the sky not only cleansed the nuclear crater, but they even burned out an isolation zone to the east of the city center made of flames.

But when the smoke began to fade, Feng Yu's eyes widened as he looked at the meat chunks in disbelief. He was so stunned that he forgot to press the trigger.

The mutants all died, but the meat chunks...

They were unscathed.

How could that be possible!

Before he could shout out, the meat chunks began to move.

The light bulb on top began to turn red as it flashed an ominous light. The unknown particles moved restlessly in the air and concentrated together into a crimson ray. Even a cloud began to spread out due to the force the bulb was creating.

It seemed prepared to shoot something!

Almost at the same time, all the electronic equipment in Wanghai experienced interference to some extent.

"Not working anymore?"

Jiang Chen looked sternly at the tablet in his hands as the screen turned into a sparkling white. The connection to the frontlines was suddenly cut off and he didn't even know if the meat mountain was destroyed.

Suddenly, he felt like he was someone's target.

Jiang Chen immediately raised his head and looked in the sky.

A blinding white light flashed in the sky.

Something was dropping down.

36000 kilometers in distance disappeared instantly. The blinding white light dropped down and crashed to the city center's location.

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows before his eyes widened in disbelief.

For some reason, a word suddenly popped into his head along with an image that seemed familiar.

The weapon that existed in virtual reality.

The God's Cane!

Chapter 477: The God's Cane

The ring hovering in the sky began to move.

A button was pressed just like a revolver's trigger.

A blue arching light flashed and something escaped it, falling straight to the ground.

On earth, it was as small as a feather, minuscule and thin. But the instant it entered the atmosphere, it transformed into a flaming dragon hundreds of meters long, roaring at the earth. It lit up the sky like a sun rising at dawn, even though the sun was already in the sky.

It was just as the Genesis described the scene of Jehovah's destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah: "And when Lot reached Zoar, the sun came out, and the Lord rained down sulfur and fire from heaven. The city was destroyed in Sodom and Gomorrah along with all the inhabitants of the city and all the earth was destroyed; the wife of Rhodes looked back at it before turning into a salt rod."

When the fire touched down on the surface, there was no sound in space. The swirling trail of fire was engraved on the blue planet. The flame, thousands of degrees in temperature, was burning. The violent shockwave swept through everything and turned everything around it to dust.

And the meat chunks in the middle of the explosion turned into dust long ago.

Just like slapping a mosquito.

Right now, in the building of the Crimson Chamber of Commerce, a man in a suit on the top floor gazed in Wanghai City's direction.

"With this, Wanghai will be a mess again."

With a smile, he turned around and left.

Right now, inside the space station, Lin Chaoen witnessed everything with the same smile.

You dared to aim at the God? Then I'll have to kill you first.

He looked at the shockwave dispersing. He raised his right hand and with his thumb and index finger up, he made a shooting gesture.

"Nice shot."

...

"This is First Corps command office. Team E, please respond. I repeat, please respond..."

The noise-filled communication was fitting among the ruins.

A breeze swept by and blew away the soil on the broken walls.

The debris began to move as a hand reached out among the ruins.

"Uh....ah!" With a deep roar, he tossed away the rock on his chest.

The protective suit was broken - it would be the end of him if he stayed any longer in the vicinity with such high radiation.

He could already smell the sweetness in the air.

It was a sign of excessive radiation.

Without staying any longer, Feng Yu climbed up from the ruins while shaking to free his leg stuck in the debris.

His kinetic skeleton was half-destroyed. The joints were sparkling with fire while they made deafening screeching noises.

The polyethylene board in front of his chest was completely shattered while the metal frame connecting the boards was caved in. He ripped the board against his chest off, looked at the crack with a lingering fear, then tossed it on the ground.

The meat chunks and the lake were no longer there; only a deep pit remained.

There was chaos everywhere.

The meteor destroyed the meat chunks and everything around.

Just as Feng Yu was preparing to leave, he heard some noises around him which made him immediately pull out his pistol.

"He...Help me... ahhhh!"

It was his comrade's voice.

He put the pistol away while he stumbled in the direction of the voice.

"Feng..."

"Don't talk and give me your hand. We'll be done for if we stay here much longer." With strength from the kinetic skeleton, Feng Yu moved the rock on his comrade's body. When he saw the clearly crushed left leg, he paused.

"Whatever, just leave me, if you stay longer..."

"Shut up, hold on!" Feng Yu gritted his teeth while pulling out his dagger.

"No, no! Just end me-ahhh."

Feng Yu cut off his comrade's broken leg before pulling out the hemostatic spray and spraying it on the severed part.

The soldier's expression was terrifying. Blood spilled out from his mouth and his twitching throat couldn't make any sounds.

"You'll be better, don't worry. I heard the director of the Aerospace Institute is a master in prosthetics." Feng Yu lifted him up and supported him with his arm before running with trembling steps.

There was a horrific scene along the way.

The First Crops' leading team was almost completely wiped out and the subsequent force was hit hard by the impact. The high-temperature shockwave almost swept through the entire city

center. Some of the armored vehicles were crushed flat by the rocks blown from the center of impact.

Standing in the middle of the launching ground, Jiang Chen looked at the light in the distance, completely stunned.

The light already disappeared.

The wind blowing by carried a faint smell of explosives coming from the frontlines.

"Did an earthquake just happen?"

Jiang Lin gulped and turned his head.

"Probably."

Jiang Chen looked back at the tablet again; it was still white in the city center. But soon after, communication from the frontlines came back.

"This is the First Corps, we were hit by a meteor... Dammit, I swore it wasn't a meteor." Cheng Weiguo's voice was screeching and hectic.

"Report casualty figures," Jiang Chen said with a deep voice.

"We're calculating. We can confirm that 2 Tigers and 11 armored vehicles lost contact... Dammit, the mutants are attacking-"

A noise came from the radio and Jiang Chen immediately made some orders.

"Immediately retreat from the city center to Camp 27. Fireball-1 will cover for you."

"Roger!" Cheng Weiguo responded.

Communications ended as Jiang Chen looked at the launch interface again.

Eight Fireball-1 launch vehicles were locked and loaded. He stuck out his finger and drew a curve on the northeast side of the First Division to surround all the red dots.

After confirming that the blue dots had left the area, Jiang Chen pressed fire.

"Fire!"

The rockets launched one by one and began to soar toward the city center to cut off the path of the mutants and zombies.

Seeing the First and Third Corps moving further and further away from the red dots, Jiang Chen finally felt somewhat relieved.

Although the battle ended with a retreat, no mutant nest could've survived through the meteor strike. Even though they retreated, they still achieved their objective.

The life detection device scanned the area again. Just as he expected, the unnatural red dots located in the city center vanished. The internal stress produced by the tungsten rods striking the ground should've been fatal to the underground structure.

They only needed to get rid of the smaller mutant nests scattered around the city and establish stations at the entrances to Wanghai City before the mutant crisis in Wanghai could be resolved.

But just as Jiang Chen was starting to feel relieved, his tablet suddenly started to flash.

"Who is it?"

"Hello, we meet again."

A face surfaced in the middle of the screen and Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes.

"Lin Chaoen?"

"That's right, I'm happy you still remember me, Lord of Wanghai." Lin Chaoen smiled.

[Lord?]

It was fitting, but Jiang Chen felt it was a jab at him.

"Whenever I see your face, I want to smash it against the wall."
Jiang Chen raised his head while looking down at the screen.

"What a pity. I do enjoy looking at your face, especially when I'm looking down on it." Lin Chaoen smiled.

[Looking down?]

Jiang Chen paused and subconsciously looked up at the sky with his expression turning violent.

How do you feel?"

"Terrible," Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

"I have a recommendation for you," Lin Chaoen said.

"Speak your mind."

"You can rule the humans while I rule the digitalized humans. We can conquer the wasteland together as long as you swear allegiance to my father."

[Together?]

Jiang Chen scoffed.

"Did you evolve into advanced artificial intelligence?"

"That's still far, far away." Lin Chaoen sighed. "I heard my father say that I had a sister before. After trillions and trillions of calculations, her thought process infinitely approached advanced artificial intelligence. But unfortunately, when I arrived at Fallout Shelter 005, she was destroyed by a bug."

Jiang Chen's pupils contracted slightly.

The Secret Teller and The Secret Protector, or X71291... Rather than saying it was destroyed by a bug, it was more fitting to say he destroyed it with his very own hands.

"A bug?" Jiang Chen pretended not to know.

"That's right, the ambassador of Harmony. There's evidence indicating that it killed her." Lin Chaoen didn't look remorseful in

the slightest as he explained with a smile. "So we need new samples. What's your decision?"

"I reject," Jiang Chen said without hesitation. "Coexisting together is only a lie."

Coexisting together was just one force putting the other force into captivity. Even if it could create a temporary peace, it was a fictitious peace. Once they figured out the path to evolving into advanced artificial intelligence, the old humans would lose their purpose and be forced to live in the zoo while awaiting their deaths.

There was only brutality and blood on the path to evolving their civilization; there was no compromise!

"Is that so? That's regretful to hear then. You are on the absolute path to purity. Compared to the fallen Harmony, you are only a bit stronger. Without accepting the evolution of the Supreme, you will have to wait to be eliminated because of your stubborn persistence."

"Is it so? Why do I think you should be eliminated?"

He had plenty of trump cards in his hand - he still had the Third Corps at the Sixth Street as well as the ballistic missiles deployed in Shenxiang Colony. At the same time, Shenxiang and Jia city had soldiers stationed along with new recruits and the survivors from the Defiant.

The only trouble was the God's Cane hovering in the sky. He was certain Lin Chaoen controlled the God's Cane.

Which was the biggest problem.

And Lin Chaoen seemed to have read his mind.

"We already surrounded your base and hijacked your base's radio signals. To us, your knowledge of information technology is a mere joke. You have two choices: surrender or death. Of course, I understand how slow your species' brains are, so I will give you

three days to reconsider."

His smile was mixed with menace. He raised one finger.

"One day is enough time for an ant to circle your base."

Afterwards Lin Chaoen waved his hand. Faced with Jiang Chen's gloomy expression, he ended communications.

Chapter 478: Path of Evolution

The flashing light outside the window drew the attention of Lin Lin who was working in front of a lab bench.

For some odd reason, watching the light outside made her restless.

"A meteor? Should I make a wish?"

Lin Lin murmured while the test tube in her hand stopped shaking. She gazed into the distance.

The meteor crashed into the ground.

Suddenly, her mechanical heart felt a sharp pain.

"Uhhh! AHH!"

Her pupils contracted. She covered her chest in pain while droplets of sweat rolled down profusely from her forehead.

Splash!

The test tube smashed and shattered and Lin Lin curled up on the ground. Her hands covered her chest as her expression twisted because of the pain.

[Dammit, is it that thing again?]

She heard a noise from outside the door. There were brisk footsteps before the door was knocked.

"Lin Lin? Did something happen?"

It was Sun Jiao.

"Help...Help..."

Sun Jiao immediately realized the situation was odd. She twisted the doorknob. Seeing as it was locked, she backed away before kicking the door forcefully.

The door was kicked open, breaking the doorframe.

Sun Jiao was shocked by the scene of Lin Lin curled up on the ground as she moved to help her up.

"Lin Lin, Lin Lin! Are you okay?"

The menacing light radiating from her pupils gave her the chills.

But quickly after, the menace was replaced by agony.

"No, no! Tingting... Stop!" Lin Lin suddenly jerked her head up as her silvery-white hair became drenched with sweat because of her pain.

Suddenly, Lin Lin's pupils were completely covered by crimson rays as she turned around, diving towards Sun Jiao. But Sun Jiao was prepared as she snagged both of Lin Lin's hands and put her on the ground face down.

Sun Xiaorou, who heard the noises in the room, rushed in. When she saw Lin Lin being pinned down by Sun Jiao, she was stunned by the scene.

"Sister, what happened?"

Not long after, Yao Yao appeared at the door. When she saw the two people on the ground, she covered her mouth in shock.

"Sister Sun Jiao, Lin Lin..."

"You two, come help me! This girl...how is she so strong?!" Sun Jiao's hands were shaking because of the force as her face turned red.

The power of mechanical parts was indeed superior to that of creatures. Her strength of 50 barely managed to contain Lin Lin.

Sun Xiaorou reacted first and rushed forward.

"I'll help you. Strap her onto the surgery bed first."

"Yao Yao, get Jiang Chen here. He should be at the launching ground."

"Mhmm!" The little girl turned around and ran out of the room.

Her eyes teared up as she didn't know what was going on; it made her extremely worried.

She pushed open the mansion door. Just as she ran to the gate, she crashed into Jiang Chen with a stern expression.

"Ouch—"

With a short yelp, Yao Yao fell backward with clumsiness. But Jiang Chen, with his quick hands, managed to snag her.

"Yao Yao? What's going on?"

Seeing Yao Yao rushing out, Jiang Chen thought something serious happened as he held her up.

"Lin Lin turned into that again." Yao Yao was about to cry.

Without needing any more detail, Jiang Chen immediately realized what she was talking about before he ran into the mansion.

...

Pushing open the lab door, Jiang Chen quickly walked to the surgery table in the middle of the room. Yao Yao, running with short steps, immediately followed behind him.

When Sun Jiao saw Jiang Chen, she walked over.

"What happened—wait, are you injured?!" Jiang Chen saw the bandage around Sun Jiao's arm.

Sun Jiao's right arm sleeve had been ripped off completely.

"I'm okay. Just got some small scratches while trying to contain her. Lin Lin... is a bit weird right now." With the concerned expression on Jiang Chen's face, Sun Jiao felt warm inside. But when she looked back at Lin Lin, her face turned solemn again.

They weren't small scratches at all.

But with Sun Jiao's abilities, she should recover easily.

Jiang Chen put aside his concern for Sun Jiao temporarily and

focused on Lin Lin strapped down on the bed. With a crimson light flashing in her eyes, her limbs twitched as if she was having a seizure in an attempt to break free from the bed.

"She can't control herself again?" Jiang Chen asked with a headache.

The bug in her body was like a time bomb - no one knew when it would explode.

"Mhmm, but this time it's a bit stranger." Sun Jiao nodded.

"Brother Jiang Chen, Sister Lin Lin... will she get better?" Yao Yao looked at Jiang Chen with a serious expression and pulled on his sleeve.

Although Lin Lin liked to trick people, Yao Yao knew she didn't have any harmful intentions. It was just that she didn't know how to express her emotions aside from "badmouthing" people.

From the bottom of her heart, she always treated Lin Lin like a dear friend.

Looking at the worried expression on Yao Yao's face, Jiang Chen rubbed her soft hair attempting to comfort her. "Definitely."

"Mhmm!"

Yao Yao nodded with a slightly relieved smile on her face.

Although she was still concerned about Lin Lin's condition, she trusted Brother Jiang Chen's words.

With a deep breath, Jiang Chen walked toward Lin Lin. Just as he approached her, he noticed Lin Lin's gaze was locked onto his face.

No, precisely speaking, it wasn't Lin Lin but Tingting in her body - the brain of that bug.

Being stared down by her crimson pupils gave Jiang Chen chills down the back of his spine. The feeling was similar to being watched by a higher level creature in the middle of a forest.

Tingting stopped trying to break free while she silently gazed at him without speaking a word.

Then Jiang Chen noticed that she opened her mouth.

[She opened her mouth?]

[What's going on? Is she hungry?]

"Yao Yao, bring me mango pudding from the fridge."

"Mhmm!" Yao Yao nodded and ran out.

A moment later, the little lolita ran back with mango pudding.

Jiang Chen took the pudding and kneeled down beside Lin Lin.

Jiang Chen took a plastic spoon to scoop out the orange pudding and put it beside the opened mouth.

But Lin Lin didn't eat the pudding. She didn't even look at it; her crimson eyes still gazed at Jiang Chen.

This time it made Jiang Chen completely confused, unsure what she wanted.

Just then, she - or it - spoke.

"The antenna is broken."

[The antenna?]

"Sorry, I don't know what you're talking about?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

It learned how to speak, which was an improvement. But for some reason, Jiang Chen didn't feel happy about it. He had almost forgotten everything related to this creature and he didn't think he had an obligation to save a fictitious character.

Yes, Yao Tingting died already in the fall of 2172. And the person he encountered in virtual reality was just a character created by PAC researchers based on the memory of a captive.

When he escaped the digital prison, almost all his memories

related to that girl disappeared. The person in front of him was just another player in the virtual reality.

Jiang Chen looked at her, not understanding what she wanted to express.

Tingting then said, "The path to evolution is broken."

"Evolution?" Jiang Chen looked down as he began to understand.

Lin Chaoen used the God's Cane to destroy something in the city center, and that thing was what she referred to as the antenna. And the antenna was related to evolution. If he understood correctly, evolution had something to do with the zombies and mutants.

"Do you want to know?"

Tingting looked quietly into Jiang Chen's eyes. Perhaps she was getting used to mechanical vocal cords as her voice was a lot more clear now.

Jiang Chen looked straight at the red pupils, attempting to read her thoughts, but he failed.

"I want to."

There was nothing wrong with listening.

"Then kiss me." Tingting shocked everyone.

Jiang Chen was shocked. He didn't know what she meant.

Tingting opened her mouth slightly wider without saying anymore.

"Kiss?" Sun Jiao's face turned red and she rejected Tingting's request on behalf of Jiang Chen: "No no, that's too weird! What does it have to do with kissing? This is too weird. And she's so aggressive now - what if she bites?"

Yao Yao blushed too. Although she didn't say anything, her expression indicated she shared the same opinion as Sun Jiao.

"I agree with sister. Although my instinct tells me she won't hurt you, if something does happen..." Sun Xiaorou hesitantly stopped midway.

[Kiss?]

[What's the point?]

Staring at Tingting - or Lin Lin's - face, even if he wanted to kiss her, he didn't have the heart to do so.

He gulped and his heartbeat began to accelerate.

He didn't know what kind of expression he should have, nor did he know if he should try kissing her.

After a moment of hesitation, Jiang Chen let out a sigh and stared into the crimson eyes.

"...Okay, I'll trust you for now."

The red eyes blinked and seemed to respond to his trust.

"Wait, but..." Sun Jiao wanted to add something more but was one second too slow.

Jiang Chen resisted the odd feeling in his mind as he took a deep breath and slowly kissed the thin lips.

[I'll just pretend this is CPR ...]

Just as Sun Xiaorou guessed, although Lin Lin was aggressive, she didn't bite Jiang Chen.

A cold tongue pried open Jiang Chen's teeth.

Just as Jiang Chen felt shocked by Lin Lin's kissing technique, something unexpected happened.

It felt soft and gentle.

A tentacle-like string slipped down her tongue and touched Jiang Chen's tongue before twirling up, then continuing...

It felt good...

But Jiang Chen was suddenly alerted to something.

[Fu*k! Something is wrong!]

Just as he tried to break off the kiss, his consciousness fell into an abyss and his field of vision turned dark.

Chapter 479: Humans aren't humans

It was a strange feeling. It felt like his consciousness was dragged into a vacuum by that tentacle and was floating in the endless universe.

[Spiritual connection?]

Jiang Chen didn't know why these words would appear in his hand, but once he thought carefully, the word seemed accurately describe everything he saw.

Gradually, the universe brightened up.

Everything around him was covered in color. The world made out of nothingness began to fill up. It didn't feel like virtual reality, but it was similar.

Yes, it was just like watching a hologram movie.

Suddenly, behind the clouds, Jiang Chen saw a magnificent scene.

It was a vertical building or a rectangular shape that pierced through the clouds. People were busy working below with hovercars moving around it, operating all kinds of equipment while building this massive skyscraper.

<The Braham>

White paint in 12 languages described the same word.

It was like an inscription.

The space colonization ship based on the god of creation in India's legends belonged to the PAC. It was launched from Sri Heligida Island.

It was just like watching an animated CG of a game. The stabilizer holding the skyscraper began to detach as Jiang Chen watched it ignite, rise, break through the atmosphere, and head away from the blue planet.

Away from the solar system.

Like Noah's Ark engraved in the "Genesis" at the top of the Roman Sistine Chapel, it carried the hopes of one-sixth of mankind. But it wasn't heading into a monstrous flood but rather it was en route to the boundless galaxy.

With regrets for past hatred and best wishes for the remaining survivors on land, the passengers waved goodbye to the planet.

Top speeds were one-tenth of the speed of light and it had a capacity of 27,000 passengers. The passengers were mostly from the elite class of different fields in addition to the constructors of the ship.

The plan was that the Braham would form a fleet with two other ships at the synchronous orbit around Neptune before heading to the wormhole 6400 astronomical units away from the sun.

Although humans hadn't set foot in this area, 22nd-century theories already proved that a singularity point existed here. All parameters of physics were twisted in this place. As long as they passed through this area, they could traverse hundreds and even thousands of lightyears away.

And behind that wormhole would be mankind's new home!

Before they entered the wormhole, everyone would lie in the hibernation chambers. Of course, while they envisioned the best for the future, they were also prepared for the worst.

Fortunately, the Gods they believed in didn't abandon them as they passed through the wormhole safely.

A year passed before the survivor with code 01 came out of hibernation. When he woke up from hibernation, he was ecstatic to discover that he was still alive. The ship was in auto-exploration mode, floating in boundless space.

According to plan, he entered the cockpit and proved to the system that he was healthy. He woke all the other passengers in

the hibernation chamber.

They held a huge celebration party and cheered for the rebirth of mankind in the merciless galaxy.

Astronomers looked at the star map and confirmed that the ship was still in the Milky Way, but it was 20.5 light years outside the Libra near the planet Gliese 581g.

This 581g planet was located in the red dwarf Gliese 581's "habitable" zone, 0.15 astronomical units away from the star.

The planet was similar to Mercury in the solar system with one side always facing the star. One side of the planet was permanently under the star's light while the other side was permanently in the dark, known as tidal locking.

Although it was hard to imagine, this particular formation stabilized the planet's climate.

In addition, people also learned that the planet revolved around itself in 37 days with a thick atmosphere. There was water on the surface. The planet's diameter was 1.3 times that of Earth, so its gravity was similar.

It was a planet suitable for habitation.

Because of their unexpected happiness, the crew began to cheer just like when Columbus discovered the new continent.

Unfortunately, they lost contact with the other two space colonization ships; they couldn't share their joy with anyone else.

The ship ended its automatic exploration mode, changed courses, and headed to planet 581g.

On the way, the crew began all forms of preparation for colonizing the new world including checking the status of the colonization model and voting to see who would be the first to step onto the new land.

Just as everyone was working toward their new life, the physicist

on the ship made another astonishing discovery.

The cesium atomic clock they brought appeared to have backtracked.

The backtracking phenomenon could not be explained with physics. It was like everyone knew that atoms decayed, but no one would believe that atoms would return to the state before decaying under normal circumstances.

There was only one explanation - when they passed through the wormhole, they not only passed through the twisted space but they also passed through twisted time.

To put it in simple terms, they returned to the past.

Based on the calculations from the quantum computers, the cesium atomic clock showed that the time was 120 years B.C.

It was the third year into the Han dynasty under Emperor Yuan and 634 years since Rome was first built. This year, the Han Dynasty sent envoys to Alexandria and the ancient Greeks built the Pantheon.

If the ship returned to earth, the earth would be in a primal stage.

It was an odd feeling - it was as if your parents weren't even alive, yet you were born into this world.

The physicists had multiple explanations for this phenomenon.

They suggested that if the multi-world theory was true, they might have reached a world distinct from the previous world. And the previous Earth was a distinct world from this Earth.

This theory was accepted by everyone to some extent.

Their 22nd-century◆ selves couldn't believe that three-dimensional people could move vertically on a four-dimensional plane as this would lead to a time paradox. The only thing that could explain this was probably that they jumped to a parallel

world and their old world had nothing to do with this.

It was an obscure feeling.

Just like being born as a baby and having your umbilical cord cut off.

The universe not only cut them off in terms of distance but also their spiritual sense of belonging.

In the next three seconds, everyone became quiet.

Someone suggested that if they changed course to return to earth, they could use the power on the colonization ship to conquer the earth in the Bronze Age. Even with a distance of 20.5 light years, with a maximum cruise speed of one-tenth of the speed of light, they would only need 400 to 500 years. The worst case would be that they could encounter Huns cavalry.

But this proposal was quickly shut down.

No one could be certain that in this parallel world, the history of the world would follow the same track as in their previous world. Perhaps writing was invented a thousand years earlier? Perhaps Columbus was born 500 years earlier? Perhaps the first industrial revolution started 200 years earlier? Perhaps nothing happened yet.

Relative to the entire human race's 400,000 years of evolutionary history, it would only take a small disruption to create earth-shattering changes. The only thing they could be certain of was that the world was certainly different from their previous world.

Perhaps when they returned to their original earth of this world, they would face a civilization far more advanced. Perhaps they would be the ones getting colonized like primal people.

It was an odd thought. While they were 20.5 light years away from earth, everyone shared the same thought.

War.

Because of their fear of the unknown, everyone settled down and retrained their focus on the colonization of planet 581g.

Two other thoughts began to take shape in everyone's head at the same time and ultimately influenced the development of the newborn civilization.

"Earth is not home."

"Humans are not humans."

Chapter 480: Colonization Era

But regardless, life had to continue.

People began to forget about their old Earth and they began to start their new life while masking their communication channels.

Without being certain about the level of civilization on the Earth in this universe, it would be unwise to expose themselves.

Survival took precedence.

This idea was supported by all crew members.

The colonization ship entered the synchronous orbit of 581g and began to deploy observation devices along the twilight line.

When the device landed on the surface and transferred up data from the surface, the colonization ship released the airdrop cabin for the paratroopers. Next was the basic infrastructure unit then the living quarters with the survivors. Thus began the "Colonization Era." Although a year was 37 days, since there was no concept of day and night on this planet, people still used the 24 hour and 365-day calendar year convention from Earth as a sign of commemoration to the blue mother planet.

There was no ocean on this planet; all the freshwater came from the glaciers on the other side of the planet and freshwater lakes scattered around the twilight line as well as the underground river with complex vein-like tributaries.

The large fungi and low shrubs on the surface provided adequate oxygen for the air which made breathing the planet's air pleasant. The planet was almost designed for humans.

The planet was beautiful; a lot of stunning views were here that couldn't be seen on Earth.

From the river that stretched out from the sun-facing surface to the back of the planet to the mist wall thousands of kilometers

long due to high-temperature evaporation, sunlight refracted and formed an everlasting rainbow. The giant fungi and odd-looking vegetation covered every single inch of the soft soil on this land. From space, it was just like a carpet interwoven with fresh green and vibrant red.

Life existed on this planet, although it was scarce.

From long ago, the planet's observer, Steven Vogt, made a prediction. From his point of view, he thought that life must exist on this planet without a doubt.

And he was proven to be right.

The twilight line was covered with dense vegetation and a large amount of eccentric small and medium-sized arthropods, forming a simple ecosystem.

The colonists were delighted by the discovery because this meant they weren't alone.

With the living quarters built, an endless amount of farms were created then the roads began to expand to create a connected city. The mining vehicles traversed the ground like ants, the construction vehicles terraformed, and the biologists keenly collected genetic data they had never seen before. The unsetting giant sun was like the sun at dawn. People worked hard to create their new home and celebrate the beautiful future.

They were just like the colonists who first stepped onto the land of America.

Except they weren't criminals from Europe but human elites from PAC. They had the confidence to despise the painful history of work. Utopia would be built from their hands. There was no war nor crimes here; everyone here were brothers and sisters.

The conflict was resolved in the old world.

The seed of mankind would once again prosper on this soil.

Of course, there were still difficulties.

For example, the mineral reserve on this planet was beyond low. Toxic gas from underground could lower human immunity and even cause people to become sick.

But all the problems could be resolved - the space mining module on the colonization ship could increase mineral stores and the toxic gas that endangered the health of the colonists was caused by a special form of spores. The biologists quickly invented antibiotics that could eliminate the reproduction of spores, easily solving the problem.

But aside from that, there was a more pressing problem.

It was the solar wind.

Without a stable magnetic field, the planet had almost no resistance against the particles thrown its way from the red dwarf.

581g was only 0.15 astronomical units away from the star, therefore 0.15 times the distance between sun and Earth. The constant solar wind whipped the humans' faces directly. Without the protection of a magnetic field, all the electronic equipment had to operate under the electromagnetic shielding environment.

It was like thousands of EMPs constantly bombarding the planet.

To increase the accuracy of some physics experiments at the atomic level, they had to be moved onto the space colonization ship.

Later, to prevent solar wind from the red dwarf from damaging the ship, people moved the ship to the back of the planet, away from the sun. Therefore, the space colonization ship was always one planet away from the star to prevent the disruption of the solar wind on the space colonization ship to enable scientific research to be properly conducted.

The humans who relied heavily on electronic equipment were heavily influenced. Even though humans used a wide-range

magnetic field to solve the problem of the solar wind, the disruptions still existed.

Regardless of how wide the magnetic field was, it couldn't enclose the entire planet under its field.

But humans were adaptable.

After they adapted to the difficulties, everything became smoother. All the cities were built within the magnetic field. From space, it looked like umbrellas opened around the twilight line and people were sheltered under the umbrella.

Everything was so pleasant.

Until they discovered the "original inhabitants" of the planet.

They were a bunch of hostile creatures with a similar social form to ants. They had a queen bug responsible for reproducing, battle bugs responsible for hunting, and worker bugs responsible for the expansion of caves.

Typically, they lived 20-30 thousand meters below the surface on the dark side of the planet. The temperature underground could mitigate the frozen surface and could melt underground ice into water.

People discovered later that the thousands of rivers underneath the surface were the work of the bugs and their species had been in existence for millions of years already or their civilization existed at least for the past hundred thousands of years.

A civilization longer than the total sum of all the human civilizations added together.

Although their civilization wasn't yet "civilized."

Their living spaces were too far apart from each other, with one on the twilight line while the other was in the deep underground of the dark side. Perhaps both thought the other were "bugs" so humans didn't discover their neighbor until living there for over a

hundred years.

This only happened when the living spaces became constrained and humans began to expand to the underground river belonging to the bugs.

It was determined the instant both parties encountered each other that a war was inevitable.

Typical speaking, with bugs made out of flesh, humans with technology would not be at a disadvantage, but the reality soon proved far more complicated than the humans imagined.

Soldiers with Gauss Rifles steamrolled through the bugs that spread to the surface. The scientists invented a virus that could make the bugs extinct, and the satellite in orbit launched drilling missiles to clear the underground caves of the bugs.

Everything was going smoothly to the point that people thought optimistically that they could easily declare ownership of the underground river the bugs spent thousands of years carving out.

Until a bug flood attacked a border city.

Millions of arthropods flooded the human city without a fear of death. With a thunderous attack, they crashed through the human colonies along the twilight line.

The explosions lit up the sky and still couldn't stop the bug flood from moving forward.

The scene looked like doomsday.

Everyone was stunned. They never thought the bugs they crashed through could become such a strong battle force. Although their missiles and bombs could easily penetrate through weak bodies, they were still futile against the swarm of bugs.

From biological weapons to genetic bombs, humans thought of everything yet were still unable to exterminate the bugs. Instead, they facilitated the evolution of the bugs. Just like humans took

hundreds of years to not even eradicate mosquitos and cockroaches, these bugs couldn't be wiped out.

Under highly intensive natural selection, the bugs evolved different functionalities with similar genetics. The previous queen bugs, warrior bugs, and worker bugs continued to differentiate into a difficult-to-ignore state.

The Spatter's acidic saliva could corrode tanks and the Shredder's diamond-strength claws could easily rip through nanocarbon vests. A hundred-meter-long Attacker with a hardened surface could destroy the city by wreaking havoc like worms. Humans had to limit the usage of nuclear and biological weapons to prevent bugs from further evolving.

The civilization that continued for hundreds of thousands of years demonstrated their heritage. The civilization that could not be understood by humans used its own cruelty to declare its sovereignty on this planet.

It would take 18 years for humans to be born and grow into adults, but it would take the bugs one week at the longest for that to happen. They would feast on the bodies of their own species and use the organic matter to evolve. People were dumbfounded to discover from an economic perspective that mutants could rip through nanocarbon vests with their claws that had less "cost" than a magazine clip of the Gauss Rifle.

The creatures, not knowing what death stood for, used their numbers to test humans.

With their living space challenged by the bugs, the humans had to retreat to the space station near the orbit. Even with advanced scientific research, without the resources to convert it into power, they had to admit that they were at a disadvantage in the war with the bugs.

Their saving grace was that while some bugs could fly, they could not leave the atmosphere.

Humans created a word to summarize the bugs who evolved through the mutated process – mutants.

With this, the "Battle Era" that spanned a thousand years unfolded.

The battle between humans and mutants.

Chapter 481: Harmony Era

The scene changed.

It was still the tidal-locked planet, but its geographic landscape altered drastically.

An orange line divided the planet's surface with one side always facing the sun.

One side was vibrant green, while the other was crimson red.

That colonization ship was nowhere to be seen.

For some reason, Jiang Chen felt like the planet was moving.

It felt like the planet was a living creature rather than dead.

"What happened to the Battle Era?" Looking down at everything, Jiang Chen was intrigued.

At the same time, a person surfaced beside him.

In the queen uniform, looking elegant, she stood straight with hands behind her back, looking solemnly forward.

"The War Era is over, right now it is the Harmony Era."

"It is over? Did the humans lose?"

"No."

"Did the mutants lose?"

To Jiang Chen's surprise, she shook her head again.

"No."

"Then what happened?" Jiang Chen persisted.

"Common prosperity."

She only said two words before drifting to the planet.

At the same time, without control of his own body, Jiang Chen flew along with her.

"Humans used hundreds of years and didn't eliminate mosquitos and cockroaches. We are not greater than our ancestor. We spent a thousand year without eliminating our enemy. So there was no victor in this war. Everyone compromised. Or, everyone sacrificed something."

"I don't understand." Jiang Chen frowned.

"We chose to fuse."

Jiang Chen recollected the words of Academician Qin, and he seemed to have understood something, but he didn't understand why they took this path.

"Steel is the foundation of industry, but this planet's metal reserve is extremely scarce. The cost of space mining was also too high which made developing industries extremely difficult. On the other hand, due to the influence of the constant solar wind from the Red Dwarf, our electronic equipment had a higher failure rate."

"Our industry was going into a dead end and even began to regress. With production, we could no longer equip more armies, and the balance began to tip to the mutants' favor. But just then, a great biologist stood out and proposed a new ideology to the evolutionized civilization – Harmony. With this, the Harmony Era began to unfold."

"We used calculation cells to replace digital chips. We used the highly efficient biological computer to replace quantum computers. Then, we changed our own genetics to expand our 23 pairs of chromosomes to 139 pairs. Through the selective expression, we differentiated into scientists, producers, combatants, and commanders.

"All the problems were solved. We no longer relied on metal. This planet's rich carbon and oxygen supply are at our disposal. Every "person" is independent but also the "cell" of the civilization. At the same time, we stopped our attack on mutants. We began to communicate with them, then marriage, before integrating

together."

[Fu*king a bug?]

"This is crazy!" Jiang Chen had to interrupt this bewildering idea.

For some reason, a bunch of random hentai popped up in his head with octopus and tentacles.

"Was it crazy when the black and white first married?" She asked.

Jiang Chen stopped, not being able to say a word.

"In the 17th century it is indeed crazy, but not in the 20th century. Without eliminating the other, understanding was the only solution."

Then, she skipped over the irrelevant question and pointed at the green planet.

"It is just like a giant tree. The part facing the sun is the leaf, and the back is the tree trunk. We used an entire century to complete this project. The leaf provides the energy and nutrients for our civilization to form the atmospheric environment on this planet. Water circulates between the veins and carries the excess energy to the back of the truck. The truck is the area where everyone lives."

Jiang Chen followed her finger. He murmured at the half green, half red planet.

"This tree is too massive."

"It is not that big. Compared to the entire universe, it is more like a seed," she said quietly.

"What about the humans?"

"All the neo-humans live under the leaf. Everyone is independent and a collective group."

"Then who are you?"

Just as he asked this, Jiang Chen saw the shadow turn into a different form. A graceful princess gown replaced the empire

uniform. The yellow face turned pale white with a hooked nose.

"I'm the main consciousness of the nest. All the consciousness is born from me, so I'm the queen. As to the form, I can be Wu Zetian, I can be Elizabeth or Ekaterina. We no longer possess the concept of "Art," so I could only search through historical records to show you the figures that appeared through history.

"... And why are you showing me this?"

The Queen looked at Jiang Chen.

"To spread the seed of civilization to further places."

Jiang Chen held his breath. Although as an embodiment of consciousness, he didn't need to breathe.

The Queen continued.

"We used our constructed high-resolution biological telescope to confirm the status of the mother planet. Although all the records are from 20.5 years away based on comparing planetary stats, we confirmed your civilization level. Based on time, you are at the beginning of the 21st century."

"You're outdated compared to us."

"So we decided to return."

"94 years ago, we finally built a colonization ship capable of ensuring our survival. To prevent crossing dimensions, we decide to traverse through the three-dimensional universe."

"We'll bring your civilization and help you interrogate with nature."

Like a declaration of war, the queen declared the cruel reality.

"But we don't need your help," Jiang Chen said with uneasiness.

Although he knew that even if he said that, they wouldn't care.

Just like...

"Just like the Homo Erectus and Neanderthals ultimately losing

to the Homo Sapiens. Humans view the Homo Sapiens as their ancestors from which they evolve into the "modern human". Blood must accompany the evolution of the civilization, and we agree with blood." The Queen spoke out the cruel words emotionlessly.

"Wait, didn't you say, you traveled to a parallel world?" Jiang Chen realized something.

"Yes." The Queen blinked and looked at Jiang Chen without expression.

The sight made him feel extremely uneasy.

Unfortunately, the queen's words made his unease turn into a reality.

"We are currently located on your home planet."

[That's impossible!]

Jiang Chen's suddenly flinched.

[How does she know that I can interdimensional travel! How could she confirm my coordinates in that world!]

[Wait, Lin Lin...]

Jiang Chen's eyes suddenly widened as he realized that. If Tingting had been living in Lin Lin, then what Lin Lin saw must be known by Tingting. And from the current situation, Tingting must be able to communicate with the Queen of Harmony.

"The Klein particle." The Queen raised her hand as a dark red ray formed in her hand, "As long as time exists, then this must exist."

"So you obtained the communication channel between Lin Lin and me?" Jiang Chen said with an undertone.

Fourth dimension messenger. If Lin Lin could know his coordinates on that side, there was no reason Tingting wouldn't know.

"No," The Queen said without emotion, "We are shocked how you

could freely traverse through two worlds. And the world you are born in happens to be the world we arrived in from the wormhole."

[Is this real...]

Jiang Chen's sight moved between the planet and the Queen. Although there was a lot he wanted to say, he couldn't speak a single word.

Momentarily after, Jiang Chen spoke in a light voice.

"What's the purpose of you telling me this?"

"We plan to convince you."

[Convince?]

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows as he couldn't understand the meaning behind her words.

The queen moved her gaze away from Jiang Chen and to the two-colored planet.

"We thought that our world was disconnected from the original world and that the information we obtained through evolution can no longer be shared with the survivors."

"But the situation soon took a turn."

"The Klein particles we sent were finally received and successfully guided a believer of us. He used himself and used biological technology to change himself to become an antenna for our communication. With our guidance, he successfully evolved into what we hoped for and communicated with creatures in an entire area. Most important, he even managed to divide out an egg."

"We chose 12 citizens and converted their consciousness into Klein particle waves and sent them to that egg with the messenger. The distance that could not be traversed with the body could be done through a message. Fortunately, we found the way to return

to the original world."

"But unfortunately, that egg was destroyed by your foolish behavior. But we still luckily, and surprisingly, preserved the individuals."

"She was captured by artificial intelligence, put into a fallout shelter, and locked into the virtual world before finally meeting you."

[The egg was destroyed? Could it be the Liuding's military mission to destroy some extreme mutants?] He heard Chu Nan talk about this mission before. The biological cannon that could launch red beams that took out the electronic equipment in the entire area.

It was not a mutant, but the "paratroopers" the Harmony deployed to the world.

Jiang Chen gulped with difficulty.

"And you discovered me through Lin Lin?"

"That's right." The queen nodded.

"It was a pleasant surprise to discover you. If you're willing to join us, I can promise you that even if Natural Selection arrives in the new world earth, we can still preserve you."

"Preserve me? What about the other people..."

The Queen said blatantly.

"They will donate their organic matter."

[Become food? Just like the natural selection of mankind in ancient times, the Homo Sapiens, after the destruction of Homo Erectus and the Neanderthals, chose to treat them as food.]

When he thought about this, sweat rolled down his forehead, although he was just an embodiment of consciousness.

"I'll have to disappoint you. Since you know that I can freely

traverse between two worlds. Then you must know that it is impossible to catch me."

"That's fine." The Queen was emotionless.

The primary task is to conquest the new world. As to the original world's "died" earth, it was more of a memory. Even if Jiang Chen was unwilling to surrender, they would express their regret at most without feeling any sympathy at all...

Jiang Chen was silent.

"And your choice is?" The queen said calmly.

"... I reject." Jiang Chen was at peace.

The Queen was silent for two seconds.

"This is a wrong choice. You don't have the capability to stop us."

"Is that so?"

"If I guessed correctly, the world you're currently in now, and Supreme is currently ruling the 'original world' by our definition. They are a tough opponent, although powerless in front of us."

Klein particles could destroy most of the digital equipment.

"Ruled? It is too early to say ruled. Only you lost, and I haven't lost yet," Jiang Chen said without changes in his expression.

"In our perspective, you don't have the ability to defend against them."

In front of sky-based weapons, any land-based weapon is useless. And combustion rockets dealt substantial damage to creatures, but to the Supreme that ditched their bodies, the damage is almost negligible.

The only thing they could use was EMP. Though there were plenty of ways to defend against EMP with 22nd-century technology.

[So fu*king unlucky. The ambassador from Harmony is on the

way to the modern world while the threat of Supreme erupted in the apocalypse.]

"I'm really curious. With mechanical parts, how can you travel through interstellar?"

"Why do we need mechanical parts?" The Queen rebutted.

Jiang Chen was stunned.

[No need for mechanical parts?]

Perhaps because of their arrogance as a higher level civilization, the Queen didn't avoid the question and continued to explain.

"Have you heard of the water bear?"

"What is that?"

"Tardigrade. Although the smallest tardigrade is only 50 microns in size, they are known as the most resilient creature on earth as they could survive in outer space without any protection measures. Any facts proved that, without external assistance, creatures could still achieve interstellar travel. 50 microns creature could, then a creature 50 kilometers naturally could too."

"The ark of evolution is sailing toward you. Since you already rejected it, then, in the end, I will allow you to meet our force."

As the voice died down, the Queen waved her hand, and the scene changed again.

It was a giant octopus. It slowly swayed its tentacles in the back and quietly traversed the boundless universe.

A Sailing Bug.

Abruptly, this odd name surfaced in Jiang Chen's head.

The Sailing Bug was 50 kilometers long and 10 kilometers wide. Its shape was similar to a hammer with multiple holes on its side. There were cilia in the back. The middle was grown with umbrella-shaped membranes that could contract or expand to a radius of 40

kilometers.

Bright light particles shone behind the meat membranes. Although Jiang Chen couldn't guess the working principles behind it, Jiang Chen felt that the membrane was similar to a giant solar sail using radiation pressure exerted by sunlight.

Just from its structure, it was a non-working propulsion engine. Jiang Chen could not guess its cruising speed, although it must not be very low.

[This is Natural Selection?]

Jiang Chen watched the sail pass by him and watched it head further into the distance.

He wanted to say something more in an attempt to gather more intelligence.

"Wait!"

Just then, his field of vision turned dark again...

Chapter 482: The Crisis Afar

The spiritual connection ended. It felt like a lengthy dream.

Jiang Chen opened his eyes and happened to meet a blank stare.

From her black pupils, she should also be "awakened" from her dream soon.

Jiang Chen moved two steps away.

He was hesitating if he should sneak out from the room before Lin Lin had time to realize what had happened.

But as he was contemplating, the crystal-like pupils began to be covered in a fine layer of mist. The numbed lips collapsed down.

Instantly, two thoughts flashed through her head.

[That was my first kiss!]

[This pervert finally made a move on me!]

Her blush extended from her face all the way to her ears before covering her pale neck.

"PERVERT!"

The cry in agony went out of tune because she was too emotional.

Jiang Chen rubbed his nose in awkwardness as he didn't know how to comfort Lin Lin and looked ashamed.

Sun Jiao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen before she walked out to loosen the straps on Lin Lin and started to comfort the undoubtedly sad her.

"Calm down Lin Lin. Jiang Chen was saving you, uh, how should I explain this..."

Without finishing her sentence, Sun Jiao also began to feel awkward as she became silent.

"Seems to be impossible to explain..." Sun Xiaorou had a wry

smile on her face.

"Kissed for so long." Yao Yao pouted as her jealousy was clearly evident.

Just as Jiang Chen was bothered by how to explain this to Lin Lin, crisp knocking sound came from the door.

Jiang Chen turned around and saw Han Junhua in uniform standing at the door without any expression on her face.

"Although I don't want to interrupt you, right now –"

"Let's talk outside," Jiang Chen immediately said when Han Junhua was halfway through her sentence.

Han Junhua briefly scanned the girls in the lab and nodded to Jiang Chen.

"Okay."

She swung her ponytail and left without a hassle.

"Did something happen?" Sun Jiao looked concerned.

Jiang Chen throat moved, he looked at Sun Jiao and smiled at her.

"Don't worry."

That smile made people feel calm, but uneasy at the same time.

Sun Jiao walked to Jiang Chen and held onto his hand.

"if there is anything I can do to help, please tell me."

With certainty in his eyes, Jiang Chen squeezed Sun Jiao's hand and promised.

"Definitely."

[If you could help.]

...

With brisk steps walking into the community center, Han Junhua's ponytail swung back and forth. Beside her was Jiang

Chen as he never had a more stern expression on his face.

"The communication signal of the Fishbone base is blocked."

"I know that. Is there any other method to contact the people from Camp 27?"

"There is only one communication channel." Han Junhua shook her head.

She arrived at the command room. She stopped and opened the door.

When Jiang Chen walked in, she followed.

The two stopped in front of the command table. Han Junhua pressed her finger on the fingerprint detection device and opened the hologram.

"What's the situation like outside?"

"There are 300 'Reptile' quadruped robots, 1200 'Viper' attack drones surrounding us." Han Junhua tapped the map, and the dense red dots appeared around the base.

Two popup windows appeared, recording the pictures and specifications of the Reptile and Viper. Both were standard units from PAC. As the Colonel of the Mechanical Division, Han Junhua knew the specs of the two robots well.

The former was known as an "all-terrain battle platform", and the latter was known for its balanced performance and smart artificial intelligence design which earned it the name "Battle Assistance" by PAC soldiers.

"The force in the base?"

"Only 500 new recruits that recently completed training. The 327 people Hunter Division, and eight RPGs." Han Junhua reported.

"What about our drones?" Jiang Chen asked in an undertone.

"I shut them down."

"Why?" Jiang Chen looked at her.

She seemed to be expecting this question as she pointed to the hologram map, "There is a KN30 signal hijacking device here. Its functionality is not only there to hijack the communication channel, but also hijack the communication between the drone terminal and drones. We can be certain that they are at an absolute advantage in information technology. Even if we deployed drones to the battle, there is a high probability that they could hijack them."

This was certainly Han Junhua's style.

Jiang Chen peeked at her. On her face, he didn't see any signs of fear.

But it made sense; she didn't have extraneous things like emotions.

In deep thought, Jiang Chen thought for a while before looking at Han Junhua.

"Could we establish communication with the Sixth Street through the underground system?"

"The underground system is captured. When communication first ceased, I sent scouts out immediately." Han Junhua pointed at the location between the Fishbone base and the Sixth Street.

While the subsystems in the underground system were blocked by partitions, the partitions were mostly there to prevent the mutants from entering. With a welding tool, it was easy to hijack the underground tunnel.

"So the only thing we can rely on in the base is the 500 new recruits and the Hunter Corps?" Jiang Chen began to frown.

Because of the close proximity, the rockets were ineffective. The new recruits wouldn't be much use and at most provide assistance in firing. The Hunter Corps was the elite force of the NAC which certainly made people more at ease.

But they were against a mechanical force of over one thousand units. With eight hundred bodies made out of flesh, could they defeat the force from Supreme?

"What do you think is our probability of winning?" With hands on the table, Jiang Chen looked at Han Junhua.

"50%."

"Even with your command?" Jiang Chen was surprised.

"Mhmm." Han Junhua nodded as she had a rare sternness on her face.

"The base has an ample reserve of EMP grenades, but if it the Reptile and the Viper, the pulse level of the EMP grenade could only cause minor damage to the friendly unit detection system which would cause it to stall temporarily. We don't have a reserve of powerful EMP weapons."

"Then don't use EMP. We can use the electromagnetic cannons, the Pythons, the Red Arrow-42 RPG, rifles. We can use bonfires. Without electro signal, we can use smoke. As long as there is hope, we can't give up," Jiang Chen ordered.

"That will have to be. But I'm afraid of the sky." Han Junhua looked up, "If they really did control the God's Cane, we don't have any possibility of winning."

The tungsten rod dropping from the sky. The invincible spear unguarded by any shield.

Perhaps only the Holy Shield System could defend its attack.

Is there really a possibility of winning?

Wait...

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

He closed his eyes. Then after a long moment, he abruptly opened them.

"There should be one tungsten rod."

Han Junhua looked to him.

"The probability is low."

"No, or rather, there is only one." Jiang Chen gazed at the hologram map as certainty began to appear in his eyes.

"Reason?"

Jiang Chen recollected what Academician Qin told him and the conversation with the bug queen.

"Because we're different, and that's enough of a reason."

With his arms crossed, Han Junhua thought for half a minute. She closed her eyes.

"I see."

From the beginning, it was a war without a captive.

If they had a second round, there was no need to save it. Only one tungsten rod could destroy the "heart" of the NAC and the order established in Wanghai would again turn back to chaos. Only when the wasteland turned into chaos could the digitalized humans have the hope of replacing humans as the ruler of the land. Jiang Chen recalled everything Lin Chaoen did. Other than killing the "experimenter" from Fallout Shelter 027, all he did was bring chaos to the wasteland.

Either NAC or Supreme must be eliminated.

Because the outcome of this war would go down in history.

The reason why they didn't do anything was that they didn't have the confidence to win either.

As long as the Fishbone can last until assistance from the Sixth Street and Camp 27 arrives, they will not lose.

Chapter 483: The Last Shackle

The atmosphere on the wall was depressing.

Soldiers hidden behind cover anxiously rubbed the trigger, aiming at the robots hundred meters away in ruins.

It had a circular body filled with fluid but powerful short legs, if it was not for the daunting machine gun and the grenade launcher on top, its appearance was cute.

"What are these things..." A recruit moved around his sore arms as he said with unease.

"If the "reptile" comes, remember to aim at the observation hole, the four holes on its wall." The soldier beside them also looked unsettled, but because of his experience traversing through the wasteland, he didn't look too fearful.

[How does this thing look like a reptile?]

"Okay, okay!" The recruit gulped, perhaps he thought the first okay didn't sound confident, so he replied again.

The unknown mechanical force surrounded the base, making all the survivors tense. The engineering soldiers dragged the heavy weapons and ammo along the wall in silence. The weapons included the Python, the Red Arrow-42, and the EMP grenades.

The survivors hauled out the rubber tires from the warehouse, soaked them in gasoline, and waited for Jiang Chen's order.

In front of the community center, Jiang Chen in a T-3 power armor looked at the soldiers in the square with a solemn face.

They were the most elite soldiers of the NAC; the Hunter Corps led by Ma Zhongcheng.

200 kinetic skeletons and 14 power armors. Everyone had no expression on their face and stared at Jiang Chen standing under the Mother of Death Claw statue. Their comrades were already on

the wall and the NAC they swore allegiance to was facing its toughest challenge.

Like all the survivors, Jiang Chen was also facing this challenge.

If he abandoned everything here and escaped to the modern world, even without the apocalypse, he could still use the technology he has now to establish a force that stood at the peak of the world.

20.5 light years? Therefore, 94 years ago, the Natural Selection that left in 1922 is on route to modern day earth.

Realistically, it should only have a speed of one-tenth of the speed of light, at most one-eighth of the speed of light. With consideration of the acceleration and deceleration phase at the two ends of the journey, it would still take at least one hundred years before it arrived on earth. And the one hundred year time was more than enough for him to live a happy life.

If he chose not to change his lifespan.

But he couldn't do that.

The reason? Obviously because of his responsibility.

With his head pointed at by a "gun", it was certainly an obscure feeling.

Jiang Chen looked at the reflection of the statue on the ground as he suddenly grinned.

[Fu*k! When am I ever afraid!]

Just then, Lin Chaoen appeared in Jiang Chen's communication channel and said in an intermittent voice.

"Could I interpret this as the negotiation failed?"

The God's Cane on the synchronous orbit looked down at everything. Jiang Chen in the power armor in front of the soldiers obviously didn't escape his eyes.

"When did you get the illusion that I planned to negotiate with you?"

Jiang Chen grinned and gazed at the "block" option on the hologram screen and closed the communication channel.

Lin Chaoen's voice ceased all of a sudden. Jiang Chen raised his head and iron arm to the clear sky, giving it a middle finger.

"Fire!"

The survivors beside the tires tossed out the lighters in their hands.

...

With the thick smoking rising, the Fishbone base used the most primal way to send out a help signal.

When the Sixth Street and Camp 27 saw the smoke in Fishbone's direction, they immediately responded.

"All units wait for orders! Complete preparation in one minute, and rush to the base in half an hour! Quick! Quick!"

Under Cheng Weiguo's thunderous roar, the soldiers boarded the trucks.

The gate immediately opened, and the First Corps led the charge while the Second Corps followed. The two helicopters also lifted off with electromagnetic cannons and the power armor paratroops to provide assistance to the base.

The First and Second Corps only had 1000 people left to garrison in Camp 27, with everyone else returning on route to defend the base.

Inside the tank, Cheng Weiguo gazed at the rising smoke with eyebrows locked.

"What happened?"

At the same time, the Sixth Street also began to mobilize its

soldiers. When the patrol soldiers at the gate discovered the smoke from Fishbone base, Zhao Gang immediately led two-thirds of the Third Corps force along with 1000 mercenaries still under contract in Fishbone's direction.

"The communication channel has been blocked. I should have known that something was wrong." Chu Nan stared at the "Standby" command on the EP with concern.

The enemy not only blocked off communication, but they also hijacked the communication channel between the Fishbone base and the Sixth Street. To avoid suspicion, to any of the requests sent by Chu Nan, the enemy used the ambiguous "Standby" command.

"But who could it be?" Chu Nan stared at the hologram map and fell into thought.

While the three Corps were being mobilized, the battle outside of the Fishbone wall also started.

"Fire!"

The mortars launched a series of electromagnetic shells before it exploded outside the wall.

The "reptile" equipped with grenade launchers continued to fire with explosions happening all over the wall.

Concrete debris flew as a lot of reinforced steels were exposed.

The soldiers behind cover valiantly fought and fired back with rifles in hand. In the conflict against weapons, the nitrogen armor recently equipped to the force became useful.

The soldiers let the shrapnel fly above their heads as they raised the Red Arrow-42 behind cover, they used their roar to disperse away any fear they had.

"Fire!"

The rocket launched out and flew into the high air before crashing down at rapid speed, directed at the escaping "reptile"

robot.

"Nice sh—"

The explosion sound interrupted his voice. The loud noise transmitted the vibration below everyone's feet.

"Dammit! The gate is blown open."

In modern warfare, a wall didn't serve many purposes. A high-speed quadruped robot dashed in front of the gate and exploded the C4 on its body and blew the entire steel gate away.

"The East gate is lost! I repeat! The East gate is lost!"

"Shrink the defensive line."

"Get the electromagnetic cannon up! Quick!"

Because the radio was blocked, control could only rely on the loudspeaker in the base which made the entire scene chaotic. The "reptile" that broke into the wall quickly turned its gun and began to unleash its furious firepower on the wall. The soldiers that couldn't dodge in time all dropped to the ground and left a trail of blood splashes on the wall.

"EMP!"

With a loud roar, a soldier dived to the ground, dodged the bullets above his head, and threw an EMP grenade below the wall.

The static noise temporarily filled the battle scene as the closest "reptile" immediately shut down, the other ones all stalled.

At the same time, an orange bullet shower came from the apartment side.

The Hunter Corps hidden behind ground covers simultaneously pressed the trigger at the "reptile" and "viper" that broke through the wall. The bullets splattered all over the steel surface.

At the same time, the Type-99 anti-tank cannon moved down from the wall, unleashed its power, and left massive craters on the

wall and ground.

The soldiers on the wall began to retreat which brought the battle down to the ground. The family of the soldiers all retreated into the mansion and community center, males with some strength and even some strong females were handed a rifle to stand on the frontline to defend the people that mattered the most.

The community center and Jiang Chen's mansion were the top priority of the Supreme's attack, and the NAC soldiers would not let their plan succeed as they didn't give up any ground.

At the office on the top floor of the mansion, Jiang Chen in power armor looked outside.

The battle line was gradually moving toward the mansion, soldiers already moved back to the wall of the mansion backyard. The flying shrapnel even scratched the bulletproof glass and left spider web-like cracks on it.

"Only five minutes passed?"

He looked at the time on the screen and took a deep breath.

"Are you going to go?"

Sun Jiao voice came from behind him. She was leaning on the door with a PK2000 hanging in front of her chest.

From the kinetic skeleton on her body along with the expression on her face, her intention was obvious.

"Of course."

"I'm there to cheat, why are you following me," Jiang Chen said.

If it is a robot, then that method should work! But regardless, it was risky to do.

Cheat?

Sun Jiao didn't understand his words, but it didn't prevent her from showing her determination.

"Protecting this home," Sun Jiao said seriously.

Jiang Chen was silent.

Suddenly, a loud explosion came from outside the mansion; it sounded like something exploded against the wall.

"Be careful."

"You too." Sun Jiao looked at Jiang Chen and smiled.

Chapter 484: This is Impossible

"Fu*k! Their firepower is too strong!"

The machine gunner kneeled behind cover and roared.

"EMP! Is there more EMP?" An infantry five meters out shouted at him.

"All gone! Dammit, I need ammo—"

His eardrums were almost shattered due to the violent explosions. He gritted his teeth without his finger leaving the trigger. With the communication being blocked and the constant explosions, they could only shout to communicate.

Suddenly, a mortar shell smashed onto the side of the cover.

A bowl sized dent appeared on the steel surface, the machine gunner kneeling behind it didn't have time to react before being smashed by the caving effect and flew out.

Seeing his comrade die, the soldier on the side's eyes became bloodshot. He got up to the machine gun position. But before he could make two steps, he was shredded to pieces by the bullets that came from the sky.

Smoke dispersed from the launcher. The reptile that just fired stood still and started the reloading program.

The battle was completely chaotic. The commanding voice was covered by the sound of bullets and fires. With communication being suppressed, the Supreme was slowly but surely gaining the upper hand.

Multiple Python drones broke out from the fire suppression and soared in at low altitude. The engine spat at blue air streams and ripped a hole in NAC's defensive line.

Then they encountered a giant hand.

The smoke grenade exploded, and Jiang Chen in his power armor

suddenly broke out from the wall, and both of his hands reached for the roaming Pythons.

After Jiang Chen passed by them, the two Pythons disappeared out of thin air.

Jiang Chen closed his left eye as a cocky smirk appeared on his lips.

After being sent to the pitch black small universe, the two drones instantly became flies without heads and smashed against the edge of the small universe. Because there was no oxygen, the engine immediately stalled. The drones without power and information guidance stopped at the edge of the universe.

"Just like what I expected... with robots, a storage dimension is the trump card."

Jiang Chen smiled and looked at the drones and quadruped robots outside of the smoke screen.

Because they were not living creatures, the energy they consumed to be put into the storage dimension was similar to normal items. With the robot units with sizes no bigger than two cubic meters, the storage dimension was like cheating.

As long as he could reach them.

The quadruped robots trying to break through the wall found the power armor and immediately turned its machine gun and began to focus fire on Jiang Chen.

Nitrogen armor!

The violent air stream blew open and shifted the bullets. The turbine engines on him propelled and dragged him to the wall on the side.

Tatatata—

At least 20 reptiles moved toward the collapsed wall with their machine guns on the top unleashing its fury and continuing its

destruction on the smoke and wall.

But at the same time, countless steel strings attached with magnets stuck to the twenty reptile robots.

[As long as I can touch them!]

With a grimacing smile, Jiang Chen hid behind cover and dragged onto the strings in hand.

"I'm a fu*king genius!"

Storage dimension, activate!

The twenty-something robots connected by the string disappeared from the battleground.

"How is that possible!"

Standing in the space station, Lin Chaoen very "humanly" pressed his arms against the table and looked in disbelief at the satellite image.

The twenty robots just disappeared under his eyes. He thought that he made a mistake when he saw the two Pythons disappear, but with that look, the power armor was strange.

Lin Chaoen's eyes adjusted as the digitalized eyes locked onto the power armor.

[Jiang Chen?]

He narrowed his eyes while a smile emerged on his face.

His finger slid on the screen and selected 200 drones and 20 Reptiles. Then his finger pressed onto the power armor.

"The General is on the battlefield? It's like you're asking for death."

But just then, the corner of his eyes caught a familiar but distant figure.

"How is that possible!"

Muttering to himself, disbelief was written all over his face.

...

[Fu*k, there are too many!]

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth and dodged the bullets coming toward him. The nitrogen armor could only blow so much mass away. If the unit was attacked by too many bullets, the nitrogen armor could easily be shredded.

He could, of course, use the interdimensional travel ability to dodge, but with the fact that Lin Chaoen was in the God's Cane watching him, any of the exposed areas must be under his watch. If possible, he didn't want to reveal this ability.

On the roof of the mansion, Sun Jiao raised the Ghost Sniper Rifle and provided assistance to Jiang Chen. She tried desperately not to let her troubled state distract her focus, but when she saw the waves of bullets directed at Jiang Chen, her heart uncontrollably clenched.

"Please don't let anything happen!"

She pressed the trigger.

Bang—!

The Reptile with its observation hole penetrated collapsed on the ground with sparks emerging from its body.

Just then, she was suddenly alerted and immediately rolled to the side. At the same time, a series of bullets flew to her from the back and smashed the tile she was on into debris.

"Pshh!"

She spat out and took out the laser pistol around her waist. With her index finger scrolling through the power adjustment, she pressed the trigger simultaneously.

The powerful laser beam instantly fired and burned the Reptile as the robot fell down from the roof.

Just then, a cold sweat rolled down from her forehead. In her field of vision, at least ten Reptiles appeared.

The black muzzles were all locked onto her.

[Dammit, she didn't focus on her surroundings.]

Just as Sun Jiao raised her pistol in despair and fired onto the Reptile closest to her, a red light suddenly broke out through the air and the Reptiles and surrounded Sun Jiao all collapsed onto the ground.

The laser rifle in her hand also stalled.

"Lin Lin!" Sun Jiao looked at Lin Lin in shock.

She was covering her left eye while tumbling to get up onto the roof. She clenched onto a dagger in her hand and pressed it against her heart.

"Did we make it... Uhhh! Don't move around! You don't want him to be hurt either. Whatever since you can't go back! I promise you, I will lend my body to you sometimes... Uh!" She seemed to be fighting against something as the muscles on her face twitched while she muttered to herself.

Then, she forcefully moved her eyes to the drones and robots surrounding Jiang Chen. Then with a sharp shout, "Now!"

A red light began to form in Lin Lin's eyes. The solidified light twisted space and something horrific was building up.

Sun Jiao first paused. Before she was aware of what was going on, she stood up and shouted to Jiang Chen.

"Quick, use travel!"

Jiang Chen didn't hesitate at all when he heard Sun Jiao's shout and instantly disappeared from where he stood.

At the same time, the crimson particles fired through the battlefield and destroyed all the electronics in the area. The high-density Klein particles rapidly decayed to the third dimension. The

accelerated high energy particles instantly fried all the internal circuits of the robots and drones.

Klein particles ray.

The trump card invented by the Harmony against the Supreme.

"This is impossible

Lin Chaoen muttered with his digitalized eyes locked onto Lin Lin, streams of data flowed through his pupils.

The sample in Fallout Shelter 05.

The masterpiece of his father.

The first digitalized human.

His sister.

Number 00.

Lin Lin.

(Lin Lin has the same sound as 00 in Chinese.)

Chapter 485: Backup

When Jiang Chen returned to the apocalypse again, he was completely stunned.

All the Reptile robots' machine guns stalled and the Pythons drones crashed.

[What the fu*k! What kind of cheat is more powerful than mine?]

Jiang Chen immediately looked in the mansion's direction. He saw Lin Lin with a dagger in one hand while she waved at him with the other.

[It was it... or her.]

Jiang Chen's expression was perplexed.

Tingting was a spy sent by Harmony. Even if the "Antenna" was no longer there, he didn't have an idea how he should take of it as he has been hesitant. She seemed to like him but his impression of her was far less.

And she just saved him.

[Whatever... I'll think about it later.]

Jiang Chen let out a sigh. Just then, his pupils suddenly contracted.

The dagger from Lin Lin's hand slid down. The swaying body slowly fell to the ground.

"Lin Lin!"

Sun Jiao saw that something was odd and immediately jumped to that direction. But because the distance was too far, she was just inches away.

With hands hanging in the air, Sun Jiao watched Lin Lin fall to the ground as she screamed out a cry.

"No!"

Just then, a shadow broke through the air as Jiang Chen caught Lin Lin falling to the ground head first. He rolled on the ground with her in between his arms and smashed into the wall.

His head was dizzy from the impact, but he shook it off and looked at Lin Lin in his arms anxiously.

The helmet opened as Jiang Chen put his head closer. When he felt the faint breath, he finally felt relieved.

"Pervert... do you want to kiss me again?" Lin Lin's eyes opened a line and looked at Jiang Chen as she said feebly.

"Could you not say that every time?" Jiang Chen wryly replied.

Lin Lin smiled and looked away. A red hue covered her pale face.

[Switch to me.] Tingting's voice surfaced in her head.

[No, let me stay for a bit longer,] since she already controlled the technique to speak with her, Lin Lin said in her head.

"You lied to me!"

[How could I? I said I would lend you the body, but, but this is a princess hug!] Lin Lin's face blushed even more.

Although a layer of steel was between them.

[So switch to me!]

"What are you murmuring to yourself about?" Jiang Chen had a genuine smile on his face when he saw Lin Lin with continually changing expressions.

"No, nothing—"

Bang—

The bullets fired at Jiang Chen and hit his back.

"Ouch!"

Jiang Chen let out a painful roar and covered Lin Lin in his lap.

The back was the entrance to the power armor and the weakest

point of the power armor. It was the most foolish choice to face the enemy with his back, but he was hugging Lin Lin.

Warning: Power module damaged.

[Fu*k! Too careless!]

Jiang Chen didn't dare to hesitate. He swung his hand with a steel hook and fired it into the smoke, sticking to the Reptile Robot. His hand shook and the steel string along with the robot disappeared into thin air.

Just then, Jiang Chen's expression changed again.

The power model being damaged meant that the entire power armor had collapsed and the 300-kilogram weight was being held on by his pure muscle strength. His entire body felt like it was injected with lead.

Afraid to stay any longer, Jiang Chen stood up with Lin Lin still in his arms. Dragging his heavy body, he jogged to the side of the mansion.

"I will cover for you!"

Right now, Sun Jiao was already on the top floor with the sniper rifle aimed at the collapsed mansion wall. But then, her eyes widened.

Ten Reptile drones and ten Python drones swarmed into the broken wall again.

Regardless of how skillful her shooting was, she could not take out 20 targets in an instant.

"Dammit." Jiang Chen raised the machine guns on his right arm and fired at the robotic force.

The bullets sparkled on the mechanical surface, but the enemy's firepower was no inferior. To protect Lin Lin, he had to take the shots.

"Ahhhh—"

With finger locked on the trigger, the machine guns revolved rapidly. With one hand holding Lin Lin and covering her on the side, Jiang Chen moved toward the edge of the mansion with difficulty.

As long as he could circle to the other side.

Warning: Armor damage 80%, please exit the power armor as soon as possible.

"That's enough, just put me down." Lin Lin put her hand in front of Jiang Chen's chest and gave him a feeble smile.

"Enough my a*s!" Jiang Chen gritted his teeth as he locked onto the mechanical force rushing in without consideration for loss, "I fu*king said that I would take you to try all the puddings in the world."

Although he used derogatory words, Lin Lin felt a stream of warmth flow inside her.

She felt the vibration in the front of her chest and gently closed her eyes.

[What to do?]

[The storage dimension is full.]

With the energy of the nitrogen armor nearly depleted and the increasingly powerful force attacking him, Jiang Chen clenched his teeth and used his spare hand to fire back.

Suddenly, at where his crosshair aimed, dust erupted and interrupted the bullets coming at him.

Jiang Chen paused and raised his head as his expression turned ecstatic.

[It was the Type-51 helicopter! The Second Corps finally made it!]

"Direct him."

"Reloading... completed."

"Fire!"

"This is Gunship 1, we have arrived at target airspace. General, are you okay?"

The calm voice rang in Jiang Chen's ears. The electromagnetic cannon destroyed the communication hijacking device, and the communication returned to normal.

"I'm very... not good. Thank you all. You finally made it." Jiang Chen sat on the ground, on his butt, and forced a bitter smile.

Finally made it.

Six black dots dropped down from the sky, and the airborne power armor landed in the backyard of the mansion as they spread out, in formation, to protect Jiang Chen. At the same time, the electromagnetic pulse cannon hovering in the sky unleashed its power against the enemy and smashed the robotic force. The victory was beginning to tip towards NAC's side.

The communication returned to normal and the teams that fought independently united again.

Han Junhua in the community center immediately executed the battle plan through the map. She ordered the remaining force in the base and the paratroopers that entered the battle to launch retaliation attack against the remaining mechanical force.

The outcome of the battle was determined.

In the space station, Lin Chaoen looked emotionlessly at the pawns disappearing one by one.

He still didn't understand how Jiang Chen made the robots disappear.

And the ability to suddenly disappear and appear.

"Could it be the hidden genetic code? No, that's not possible... The anti-physics ability is not something that the hidden genetic code can achieve." Lin Chaoen slowly closed his eyes.

On his face, there were no more expressions that mimicked a human. All his computation power was used to analyze the event. But some of the things could not be solved by just computation.

He let out a sigh and opened his eyes.

"Father, I need your intelligence."

He muttered and pressed the control interface a few times. The antenna he just fixed was pointed to a location in Wanghai.

The plan half failed. Harmony left the battle, but Jiang Chen was still alive. He wanted to know what he should do next. And Lin Lin was still alive. The outcome from Fallout Shelter 05 was no longer as disastrous as they had thought.

Just then, Yao Yao who was busy working in front of a computer without much effect finally felt relieved by the fact that the communication returned to a normal state. She suddenly realized an odd wave.

A wave from space.

Directed toward...

Without any hesitation, Yao Yao moved her nimble fingers and quickly pressed on the screens to track the target of the signal.

The hologram surfaced as the target appeared as a red dot on the map.

Yao Yao was fixated on the map. Her eyes widened and slowly gulped.

"Yao Yao finally achieved something..."

Chapter 486: Counterattack

The battle left the area in shambles.

Right now, Fishbone base was filled with glass shards, exposed steel, and concrete debris. The apartments near the wall were half-destroyed by grenades and recoilless cannons. The community center was also damaged. Even half of a wall at Jiang Chen's mansion was blown up by heavy machine gun bullets.

A series of steel scaffolds were set up around the buildings and walls that needed repair with Lu Huasheng leading the survivors to start the restoration project. Wang Qin led the logistics department to start evaluating the loss of supplies and overseeing the military factory to restart production.

70% of the recruits suffered casualties and 50% of the Hunter Corps was either injured or killed. It was a tragic battle.

Jiang Chen personally led the funeral of the deceased warriors and buried their bodies in the cemetery outside the base.

The scale of their loss wasn't an exaggeration.

But it wasn't without some rewards.

Right now, Jiang Chen's storage dimension was filled with robots and drones that couldn't move. Without commands from the terminal, the robots without intelligence could only move their limbs in the storage dimension while their engines roared and spent their remaining power to search for a non-existent enemy.

Once the robots lost power, Jiang Chen could take them and send to the Fallout Shelter for technology restoration and improvement work.

To coordinate the rebuilding effort, Jiang Chen found Jiang Lin. The guy's arm was wounded by a bullet so it was covered by thick bandages and wasn't in the best shape. Although he was sympathetic to his situation, there were still more urgent matters

to take care of. Jiang Chen didn't send too many condolences before getting to the main point.

"It was confirmed that NAC's opposing force controls the God's Cane. Do you have any way of shooting it down?"

"The God's Cane?" Jiang Lin looked troubled. "That's going to be hard - that thing is known as the space fortress. With missiles, they might approach the orbit before being destroyed by the laser anti-missile system."

"Is that so?" Jiang Chen frowned.

The God's Cane was a sword hanging in the air. Without taking it out, it would be hard to sleep at night. Even if the tungsten rods were all used up, it was hard to prevent Lin Chaoen from acquiring another round from the synchronous orbit and reloading it.

"The key is: to what extent did he repair the God's Cane? Even if the laser anti-missile system is repaired, our ability to do high damage is still limited." Jiang Lin didn't seem to have any better solutions.

Jiang Chen said, "The God's Cane shouldn't be fully repaired. If we use the Northwind-76, could it do damage?"

"In theory, the Northwind-76 could reach the synchronous orbit. But if it carried conventional ballistic missiles and they exploded in a vacuum environment, it would still be difficult for the resulting shockwaves to damage the shell of the God's Cane," Jiang Lin explained to Jiang Chen.

Since it was the weapon NATO refined for a century, it was too much to ask a forged version of Northwind-76 to take down this "space fortress."

"What if we carried EMP instead?" Jiang Chen proposed.

"It's hard for normal EMP to damage the electronic components of God's Cane. Otherwise, it wouldn't be so hard to take down." Jiang Lin shook his head.

"We don't need to damage the God's Cane." A smile surfaced on Jiang Lin's face. "We just need to take out the robot hidden inside the God's Cane."

Jiang Chen took a moment to think as he stroked his chin.

"In theory, it's possible. If the outer shell of the God's Cane is damaged, wide-range EMP weapons should be able to damage the mechanical parts."

Jiang Chen gave Jiang Lin the problem of solving the issue in the sky before heading to the community center and meeting the leaders of the Three Divisions as well as the leader of the Hunter Division to call for an emergency meeting.

Just half an hour ago, Yao Yao, who was working hard to break through the communication blockage, happened to intercept the communication coordinates between the God's Cane and a ground facility. The target was inside Wanghai and Jiang Chen wouldn't let this guy escape.

The target was on the edge of the east side of the city center, the right bank of the Huangpu River. Based on the issues with the relationship to Liuding, multiple rocket launchers didn't have the right bank of the Huangpu River as a target area.

In simple war mobilization, Jiang Chen sent out the order with Han Junhua establishing a battle plan.

At the end of the ten-minute meeting, all three corps were prepared and ready to mobilize. With 1000 soldiers left to defend the camp, the three corps departed. At the same time, the eight "Fireball-1s" on the launching ground were fully locked and loaded to cover the area with combustion missiles to eliminate any mutants in the area.

At the same time, the helicopter transported all the researchers from the Aerospace Technology Research Institute to Shenxiang to change the module of the Northwind-76 deployed from

combustible material to a wide-range EMP device.

Once the module was changed, it would be launched into the geosynchronous orbit to eliminate the robot in God's Cane – Lin Chaoen.

...

It had been half an hour since the Northwind-76 was launched into the air.

At the Lin Fallout Shelter, three thousand meters underground:

The central computer in the middle of the room quietly hummed. Inside the silent space, the only sound was the buzzing of the processors.

The screen above the central computer flashed a faint light. The middle-aged man on the screen had his hand supporting his chin and he fell into silence inside the empty fallout shelter. He glanced at the nutrient vial underneath the screen. The life support device contained his brain.

After he abandoned his body twenty years ago, he hadn't looked at it since. But now that he was looking at it, he felt wistful.

Of course, a heart is an abstract concept. He didn't have a heart and aside from his brain, all his organs were replaced by mechanical parts. When he found a device that could allow mechanics to replace his brain, he could even ditch that last hindrance.

A cold light slowly illuminated the fallout shelter. It came from the bottom of a hibernation chamber. Suddenly, the inert gas leaked out and the chamber door opened. A handsome man walked out.

The convenience of being a robot was exactly this - even after countless destructions, as long as the backup data was there, they could reincarnate countless times.

"Father." Lin Chaoen knelt on the ground.

"Mhmm." He replied and didn't speak more.

This was a rare time when "father" didn't give any instructions to his son. He only quietly looked at him. Whenever he looked at it, he felt like he was looking at a puppet.

But he understood the feeling. Due to the insufficiency of intermediate artificial intelligence in dealing with emotions, rather than saying they were individuals, they were more like tools without desires and needs.

After a long silence, he abruptly said, "What should we do?"

Lin Chaoen looked up and smiled.

"I was awaiting for your instructions."

Father let out a sigh and shook his head. Although he was infinitely close to a God, ultimately, before he could digitalize his consciousness, he was a human after all. After he lost the God's Cane, he lost everything. From the satellite image from the God's Cane, the NAC force was moving in his direction. They not only sent an EMP missile to attack God's Cane, but they were now using combustion missiles to wipe out the mutants in the area.

The original plan was for the robotic force he controlled to attack Fishbone base. Whether Jiang Chen surrendered or died, NAC would collapse. The entire Wanghai region would once again return to chaos, and all the survivors would become believers of the Supreme. He would have the opportunity again to restart the advanced artificial intelligence project and lead all his believers on the path to digitalization.

But reality and his plan were different.

Whether it was Lin Lin or Jiang Chen's abilities, they were the variables that affected the outcome.

Right now, with their coordinates exposed, they had to face the

wrath of the NAC.

"With the computation power of the quantum computer, we still can't calculate the next move?" Father asked.

Lin Chaoen didn't reply as he quietly waited for Father's instructions.

The computer itself couldn't think unless humans told them what to think.

[It's so close?]

Father looked at Lin Chaoen kneeling on the ground and entered deep thought.

But just then, Lin Chaoen abruptly interrupted the silence in the fallout shelter.

"Speaking of which, in that base, I saw Lin Lin."

The kind father on the screen paused then his pupils began to narrow.

Chapter 487: A Pleasant Surprise

320 rockets ascended and pierced the dome. They blanketed the New Age Square along the bank of the Huangpu River.

The rockets penetrated the concrete without any explosion. Blue sparks jumped outside the missiles and loud static buzzed in the area. The machine guns present became fried as the 320 EMP rockets eliminated any unprotected electronics.

A helicopter hovered above the New Age Square and confirmed the area was secure. The three corps began to pass over the bridge and the force totaling 5000 people were pushed to the square without any resistance.

In an EMP attack of such intensity and density, even if a chip was built with EMP resistance, it still couldn't be protected from being fried.

Without any fighting required, the NAC soldiers captured the area easily. But what made Cheng Weiguo puzzled was why they didn't face any resistance or people; it made him feel like his fist hadn't landed anywhere.

After discussing with Zhao Gang and Wang Zhaowu, Cheng Weiguo ordered the corps to station themselves in the square and he sent out reconnaissance units to scout the area.

Near New Age Square, the First Corps reconnaissance units discovered a data tower installed on the surface as well as an automated factory. When they found the place, Cheng Weiguo immediately sent out soldiers to occupy the area and obtained two production lines to the Reptile drone and Python drone.

Compared to the multi-functional "Hummingbird" drone, the Python was a complete war machine. The hovering fixed machine guns along with its elongated design allowed the unit to be agile while carrying six times the amount of ammo capacity compared

to the Hummingbird. It possessed an independent attack module which allowed it to operate in offline mode while still detecting friendly units and analyzing the terrain to complete the mission.

The Reptile drone was just like the Python - it was an unmanned ground vehicle (UGV) that could still operate in offline mode. It could assist the infantry during battle to act as a mobile supply box and an even more powerful mobile fire platform. The name "Battle Assistant" didn't come out of nowhere.

It was a pleasant surprise to be able to find so many goodies at Lin Chaoen's base.

Soon after, the Third Corps found the entrance to the fallout shelter in the metro station near the square. They cleared out the zombies inside the area and secured the location.

But a new problem appeared.

They took the elevator underground and secluded themselves there entirely.

Cheng Weiguo immediately made orders to take apart the elevator platform and sent a knight in power armor. The power armor was tied to a graphene rapport and if anything odd happened, they would immediately drag him up.

Once he reached the bottom, the knight encountered a situation similar to Fallout Shelter 027.

The fallout shelter's door was tightly shut. The thick door didn't look like it could be opened with force. The gear-shaped door was engraved with "Lin Fallout Shelter." Just from the name, the fallout shelter was probably private and not a numbered fallout shelter constructed by the PAC.

The people inside probably used data towers on the surface to exchange information.

Facing this circumstance, Cheng Weiguo had to contact Jiang Chen for directions.

"Although we can't open the door, we can place explosives underneath. We only need an equivalent of 100 tons of explosives to make the 3000-meter tunnel collapse and bury them underground."

"If we're only burying them, it's still a hazard." Jiang Chen shook his head. "And I'm also curious what's behind the door."

"But in theory, the door to the fallout shelter can't be opened from the outside with force." Cheng Weiguo had a wry smile.

It was indeed a difficult problem and Jiang Chen couldn't think of any solutions. It was a turtle shell even a nuke couldn't crack; he didn't have any better solutions.

"How about this? Standby there and I'll make a trip down."

"Okay." Cheng Weiguo nodded.

Communication ended. Jiang Chen closed his eyes and began to think, leaning on his chair.

But after some deliberation, he still hadn't come up with a solution.

Just then came some knocks on the door.

"Come in."

The door opened and Sun Jiao, without a kinetic skeleton, came in.

"Lin Lin already recovered, but she's still really weak. Tingting in her body used too much energy by using the Klein particle ray. What's going on at the frontlines?"

Sun Jiao wearily grabbed a chair and sat in front of Jiang Chen's desk.

"Lin Chaoen's base is cleared out and we obtained two production lines. The only problem is, their people hid in the fallout shelter... if they have people."

"Bury them with nukes," Sun Jiao said menacingly.

Whenever she thought about the bullet holes in the walls and the base in shambles, she felt angry. After living there for so long, this place was her home. It would be hard to ease her hatred unless she wiped out those despicable people.

"That's a must, but burying them is too easy of an ending for them." Jiang Chen smiled at Sun Jiao gritting her teeth.

"Then what do we do? They won't come out of their turtle shells." Sun Jiao put her hand on the table and pouted her mouth.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment and said, "I'll make a trip down there."

"A trip down there?" Sun Jiao looked cautiously at Jiang Chen. "Are you going to do something dangerous?"

"How's that possible?" Jiang Chen rolled his eyes. "I'm going to see if I can throw the door into the storage dimension."

Sun Jiao looked at Jiang Chen with skepticism while laying on her arm.

"That should be hard. I remember your storage dimension can't cut out items connected to something. In the case of a door, it's attached to the wall."

Sun Jiao conducted an experiment with Jiang Chen that tested to see it was possible to throw other people's guns in their hands into the storage dimension. The answer was no because creatures with life energy above a certain level couldn't enter the storage dimension, and the guns held by people by default were viewed as one. But magnets connected with steel could be transported.

Jiang Chen guessed they might have to forcibly move atoms on the surface. He didn't explain why the items on the floor weren't viewed as being relative to the earth.

Even now, there were still many secrets he didn't understand

from the storage dimension.

"How would you do it without testing?" Jiang Chen sighed.

Although he knew it was a lost cause, it was worth trying. That place contained the top technology of the Supreme. Two production lines would be extremely helpful and who knew what else was inside?

He came to the hanger and the two helicopters returned to the base on standby.

He changed into a new set of T-3 power armor. Just as Jiang Chen was about to board, Lin Lin ran over with small steps.

He stopped in front of the helicopter as he turned around in shock.

"Lin Lin? Why are you here?"

"I..." She bent over with her hands on her knees to regain her breath. She looked to the side, slightly embarrassed. "I heard from sister Sun Jiao that you're going there and I'm worried, so I followed along."

"Take care of yourself first." Jiang Chen looked speechlessly at her and turned around to board.

"Wait, don't leave! I-I can help! If your opponents are machines, I can use my Klein particle ray to wipe them out." Lin Lin raised her chest with pride with a proud curvature formed on her face. "I just saved you a few hours ago. You'll be safer with me."

[It's what Tingting wanted.]

Lin Lin added that in her mind.

"With your current condition, could you still use that ability?" Jiang Chen asked with skepticism.

"Of course, yes! I'm mostly recovered, so please bring me along!" Lin Lin nodded with certainty.

Jiang Chen sighed and had to nod.

"Okay, you have to promise you won't cause trouble."

"Don't worry! I'm very obedient!" Lin Lin giggled and said cheerfully.

With how energized she looked, Jiang Chen also felt less worried.

It was indeed an excellent choice to bring Lin Lin along. The Klein particle ray was the nemesis of robots no matter how strong the robots were. And Lin Lin already knew the secret to his storage dimension. Bringing her along meant there were safety concerns and he didn't need to worry about his secret being leaked.

Just like this, Lin Lin boarded the helicopter with Jiang Chen.

With the guide's instructions, the helicopter slowly lifted off and transported the duo to the city center.

Chapter 488: The Not-so-heartwarming Reunion

1000 meters underground.

The vertical tunnel down was replaced by a new elevator supported by a durable graphene beam heading directly into the deep underground.

Jiang Chen, in T-3 power armor, was now on the elevator with his eyes focused on the hologram instructions in the helmet. The decreasing oxygen concentration made Jiang Chen especially wary.

Just like he expected, the fallout shelter underground wasn't designed for humans.

Lin Lin was standing beside him and she was completely covered by an orange protective suit with a large oxygen tank strapped behind her. Although she was a digitalized human, her brain, and vital organs were still made out of organic matter. Even if a lot of organic parts were replaced by mechanical parts, she was still a human.

"Open the oxygen supply device." When the oxygen concentration dropped below the threshold, Jiang Chen said calmly.

"Mhmm!" Lin Lin obediently put her hand on her neck and opened the switch.

When they arrived at the temporary camp established at the New Age Square, it was already nighttime. But a thousand meters underground, there was no fundamental difference between night and day. In the beginning, Cheng Weiguo was firmly against the idea of going on until Jiang Chen made an order as the General.

It made sense that he was worried since this was the enemy home base.

But Jiang Chen didn't worry too much as he still had 100 cubic meters in his storage dimension, so even a few Reptiles wouldn't be too troublesome especially since Lin Lin was with him and the Harmony creature hidden inside her was a robot killer. Almost no electronic units could survive under the Klein particle ray.

When they were close to the bottom, Jiang Chen took out a tactical rifle and turned on the flashlight attached to it.

Lin Lin beside him gulped and crouched cowardly with a hint of fear on her face.

[Let me do it.] A contemptuous voice appeared in her heart; it must've been Tingting. After learning how to speak, she was more and more ruthless.

[Who-who said I'm scared?] Lin Lin's face turned red as she immediately spoke in her mind.

[It's not me.]

"Just follow behind me." Jiang Chen noticed Lin Lin's fear and put his hand on her shoulder.

"Mhmm?! Mhmm!"

Lin Lin, who was distracted, flinched at Jiang Chen's actions. It wasn't until she realized what happened that an awkward blush appeared on her face.

Jiang Chen looked at her, puzzled by the sight.

[Is she really okay in her current state?]

The elevator slowly reached the bottom and Jiang Chen's rifle locked onto the door of the fallout shelter.

But just as he expected, the door was locked shut.

He took Lin Lin to the door and he put his hand against it.

[Storage dimension, activate!]

There was no reaction...

"The door and the wall are considered one?" Jiang Chen frowned and muttered to himself.

Just as Jiang Chen was deliberating how he should open the door, Lin Lin walked beside Jiang Chen and proposed to him in a small voice: "How about I use the ray to take out all the robots inside then we'll go back..."

"Take them all out? Mhmm, that'll be our last resort. If possible, I want to get the stuff inside." Jiang Chen felt his way all along the gear-shaped door in an attempt to find a switch.

Since it was the home base of the Supreme, if they could invent something like Lin Chaoen, then they must be advanced in electronic technology. Compared to Harmony's genetic technology, electronic technology was more coherent and applicable to the needs of the NAC.

Lin Lin seemed scared of the darkness as she looked around the place, feeling unsettled.

[There seems to be something not good about living inside, could I fire one ray at it?] Tingting said.

[Let's not do it. If we destroy the stuff inside, Jiang Chen will be angry.] Lin Lin said in her mind.

[Then we don't have a solution.] Tingting didn't say anything further.

Without any luck finding a switch, there wasn't even a communication cable similar to Fallout Shelter 27. Jiang Chen took out the laser sword from the storage dimension and stabbed the thick door.

Ten minutes passed by and the energy of the laser sword was completely drained.

Jiang Chen directed the flashlight at only one hol. The size of a nail was burnt out.

"What material is this thing made out of?" Jiang Chen cursed and kicked the door.

The noise echoed back was very deep. Just judging by the sound; the door was at least seven meters thick. It was more fitting to describe it as a wall.

[Is giving up the only option?]

Jiang Chen sighed.

Just as he wanted to ask Lin Lin to use the Klein particle ray at the door, the door suddenly moved.

Jiang Chen was alerted and pulled out his rifle.

"NOOOO!"

Lin Lin screamed out in fear and hid behind Jiang Chen's back.

The gear-shaped wall slowly moved forward and caused rock debris to fall down. Jiang Chen moved back slowly with Lin Lin and established a clear distance from the door. The vibrations continued for half a minute before the door came to a sudden halt and started to roll toward the side.

[8.1 meters thick, mhmm... I might not be able to penetrate this.] Tingting said.

[Is there anything you can't penetrate?] Lin Lin was curious.

[Of course. Although Klein particles can cause strong electromagnetic pulses, it doesn't mean they have infinite penetrative power. You research this area and you should know this?]

Although Tingting's voice didn't show any scorn, Lin Lin's face turned uncontrollably red. Just as she wanted to rebut, Jiang Chen stood in front of her and suddenly said: "Lin Lin, be prepared to fight. Try your best to control the power of the output and don't take apart the noncombat units."

"Oh, okay!" Lin Lin nodded.

But from inside the pitch black hole, a man with hands up to surrender walked up.

When he saw the face, Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes and a red scope was already pointed on his face.

"Lin Chaoen."

"That's right. It's me." Lin Chaoen let out a sigh then joked, "I can't believe we meet again, in this fashion."

"You provoked me multiple times, so you should've expected this day would come." With finger rubbing against the trigger, Jiang Chen spoke emotionlessly.

Lin Chaoen shrugged and looked at Jiang Chen.

"Regardless, you won. In the end, Father wants to see you."

Lin Chaoen then looked at Lin Lin who hid behind Jiang Chen with a bright smile on her face.

"And you, my dear sister."

"Sis... sister?" Jiang Chen looked at Lin Lin in shock, but she looked puzzled too.

"What?" Lin Lin looked at Lin Chaoen, puzzled.

"You will know once you come in."

Lin Chaoen smiled mysteriously at her, turned around, and headed into the fallout shelter.

Looking at the pitch black tunnel, Jiang Chen was uncertainty whether it was a trap or if they really did surrender like what Lin Chaoen said.

After debating for a while, Jiang Chen took out a signal stick, pulled the cord, and threw it in.

The bright red light luminated the space. Other than rows of hibernation chambers, the basketball court-sized room didn't have any weapons. With his rifle raised, Jiang Chen took Lin Lin into

the fallout shelter.

"Lin Lin."

"Mhmm?" Lin Lin hid behind Jiang Chen looked at his helmet anxiously.

"If they're planning to close the door, shoot that engine at the door." Jiang Chen used a voice that Lin Chaoen could hear.

"Oh...Okay!" Because she was too nervous, she almost bit her tongue.

There wasn't too much light in the room other than the signal rod Jiang Chen threw out. The air in the room was filled with concentrated ozone. Because of this, the signal burned brightly.

A tower-shaped computer sat in the middle of the room with the flashing signal lights indicating it was running. The middle of the computer, a vial with a brain inside and the bottom, was connected with a complex series of wiring to the different machines in the room.

The room was filled with computers, hibernation chambers and nothing else with a sign of life.

Other than saying it was a fallout shelter, the place was more of a mechanical city hidden underground. The central computer was its brain, and its heart and the complex wiring was its vein.

Lin Chaoen walked beneath the computer and stopped.

"Father, they are here."

The screen suddenly lit up and a middle-aged face appeared in the center. The hairstyle looked sleek, the two eyebrows were thick but tidy, the blank pupils looked collected but possessed a degree of sharpness, and the glasses gave him a more educated vibe.

Lin Lin looked at the man with pupils suddenly contracted as she took two steps forward.

"Fa, father..."

"Don't go." Jiang Chen put his hand on her shoulder.

"No! That's my father! Let me go—" Lin Lin fought in an attempt to break free from Jiang Chen to run.

Jiang Chen was stunned by the situation.

He didn't expect this could happen. His right hand was still holding the rifle with the left hand tightly grasping Lin Lin's shoulder.

"Lin Lin! Your father already went to—, went to the space colonization ship. This is only a video!"

He almost said "went to heaven" but he changed halfway in the sentence.

"Father, father! You're back to pick up your daughter, right?" Mist began to cover Lin Lin's eyes as she was about to cry, Jiang Chen stared at the middle-aged man and aimed at the screen.

"If you continue to pretend to be Lin Lin's father, I'll shoot your brain!"

"No—" Lin Lin screamed out.

"I didn't pretend to be anyone." The middle-aged man on the screen closed his eyes and pointed down there, "I'm here. You should be able to see my brain."

The room quieted down.

Lin Lin blankly looked at him with disbelief in her eyes. "Brain? Dad, you..."

Shock also appeared in Jiang Chen's eyes as he adjusted the aim to the vial.

Seeing Jiang Chen's small adjustment, the middle-aged man laughed.

"Is this how you treat your father-in-law?"

[Father-in-law?]

Jiang Chen took a moment to process.

Lin Lin's face blushed as she waved her hands to cover up. "No, no, dad you're mistaken, he is not..."

It was just that when she said that, she didn't sound like she meant it.

"Ahem." The middle-aged man interrupted his daughter and looked seriously at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen stared at him without a word. The rifle in hand still pointed at him – the brain.

"If you feel like this will bring you a sense of security, you can point at it. But I have to let you know that the vial's glass could withstand the bullets of the anti-armor sniper rifle."

[The Old man who smells like ozone, can I shoot him?] Tingting didn't disguise her disgust to mechanical parts.

<No! He's my father!> Lin Lin restrained Tingting who was eager to move.

Jiang Chen smiled and lowered his rifle.

"By letting me in, you're preparing to surrender?"

"I just want to see my daughter." The middle-aged man had a genuine smile on his face.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He didn't think the situation would evolve into the reunion of a father and a daughter.

"Dad, where-where are you, the colonization ship—"

"I didn't board the colonization ship," the middle-aged man told Lin Lin.

Lin Lin's eyes widened as she didn't realize what he said. She didn't know how she felt - shocked? Happy? Sad? Perhaps similar to no one, but close to all of the emotions combined.

After a while, she squeezed out a few words.

"Why?"

"Because there's no need to leave. Space is dark and it's the same going in any direction." The man slowly said.

He then looked at Jiang Chen.

"I'm confused. You seem to have a remarkable ability. Instincts tell me it's the primary reason why I'm lost."

"I don't disagree with your perspective," Jiang Chen said.

[No sh*t. Without my interdimensional travel and storage dimension, I would've died many times already.]

The man gazed into Jiang Chen's eyes then he sighed.

"Is that so? Although I hoped I would've lost because of a deeper reason."

He then looked at Lin Lin, his daughter.

"I'm not a qualified father. On the path to Supreme, if there is anything I regretted, it would be you."

Lin Lin eyes teared up, "No, dad, you gave me life, you gave the opportunity to—"

The middle-aged man interrupted her.

"Do you know why you had muscular dystrophy?"

Lin Lin stopped, "Is it that because it is congenital—"

"No." The man shook his head. "I did it."

Lin Lin became idle with tears freezing on her face then she murmured in a quiet voice, "Why?"

"It's a long story, if you have patience, watch this."

His face looked reminiscent and slowly faded on the screen.

The picture in the screen changed just like the old film tape rolling. It unfolded the history belonging here.

Chapter 489: The Path of Supreme

The fundamental part of life is the journey and not the result.

Birth, survival, fade to black.

But in the end, how many people can live a life without regret?

Immortality is an alluring concept that becomes even stronger when technological advancements reach the forbidden part of life.

For a period of time, billions of dollars in investments flooded the industry as labs began to pop up like bamboo after the rain. People were willing to pay and people were willing to experiment. The wealthy wished to enjoy their lavish lives for longer, drawn in by the temptation of immortality since they couldn't bring their paper bills with them to the next life.

But the current resources available couldn't support continuous population growth, even if only a small proportion of the population was immortal.

Once immortality became a reality, it wouldn't bring human prosperity but rather, it'd be an apocalypse.

Yes, it would be an apocalypse.

The immortals would have an endless amount of time to accumulate wealth, reinforce their status, and become toxic to society, the cancer cells of civilization. They would extract nutrients from healthy "cells" and extract resources from ordinary people...

It would be an apocalypse.

The Science Ethics Committee was born. Three countries agreed to follow the accord and promised to prevent any technology that would cause public fear to be created while also strictly preventing others from breaking the first rule. In a world divided into three factions, a tacit understanding was easier to reach than in a world

divided into more parts.

Just like the IAEA in the modern world.

But after the economic crisis in 2150, the tacit understand became threatened. Although the Science Ethics Committee still existed, their influence on the government and control of private capital was far inferior compared to half a century ago.

The summer of 2160.

"Doctor Lin Minjie, your research is suspected of violating Science Research Regulations. Please arrive at the court in Wanghai in ten days to face the interrogations of the Science Ethics Committee." A police in black stood in front of him and presented him with his ID.

"That's impossible! My research is absolutely intended to better mankind! How dare you act on behalf of all of mankind—" Lin Minjie roared at the expressionless police.

The man in a suit behind the police interrupted his roar as he spoke with contempt in his eyes.

"Because we receive one hundred billion in donations a year, because most people agree with our cause."

"You only abuse people's fear of the unknown, you despicable, weak-minded fools." Lin Minjie stared at the man, wishing to strangle his neck, but his malicious intent was weaker than the strength of a policeman's hand.

"Is that so? Sorry, I also don't agree with your experiments of putting people's heads into metal boxes." The man in a suit pointed at his own head and smiled at him.

"Please remain calm, Doctor Lin Minjie. If you are displeased with the process, please use a civilized process to resolve the problem in the courts. Of course, before that, we have to confiscate your research," the policeman said without emotion.

"No, you can't take it away! My research is guilty of no crime!" Lin Minjie stared at the policemen flooding into this lab in despair as he watched them taking away his essays and equipment.

"One more point - only safe technology is innocent." Before he left, the man in the suit smiled.

After being accused of violating the Science Ethics Committee, his reputation was completely tarnished in the research field. The corporations all drew a clear line between themselves and him to avoid public distrust. Without funding, although he was an information technology and electrical engineering double major, he was unemployed.

Life became very difficult.

His beautiful wife left him, leaving behind the half-year-old Lin Lin. He couldn't afford rent for their 24th-floor apartment and had to move into a damp basement, living off PAC welfare.

He spent six years in agony.

In 2166, the situation finally took a turn.

After the 2150 economic crisis, the global situation was visibly deteriorating. Each country was in conflict over resources, airspace sovereignty, and space exploration. In a matter of ten short years, trust fell to an all-time low. And naturally, the influence of international organizations such as the Science Ethics Committee became weaker and weaker.

The research previously viewed as forbidden now had a resurgence in interest. It included advanced artificial intelligence and digitalized human technology.

Finally, a renowned businessman found him.

"Doctor Lin Minjie, although it might be hurtful to say this, but I'm taking a significant risk to meet you in person. You know, the media likes to assume things." While he was also in a suit, this man's attitude was so much better than the man who destroyed

everything he owned.

"I understand," Lin Minjie responded without any light in his eyes.

"Then I hope the risk I'm taking is worth it." The man smiled.

"What do you want?" Lin Minjie looked up at the man in a suit.

He signaled his assistant and placed a stack of documents 10-centimeters-thick on the table. Lin Minjie looked at the documents as disbelief appeared in his eyes along with a hint of hatred.

It was because of this that he ended up in his current condition.

"Oh... how did you get this?" Lin Minjie asked in a disinterested tone.

"You're in an age where there's nothing that can't be resolved with money." The man smiled. "We need you to continue your research, and we'll pay for your research."

"Okay." Lin Minjie agreed without hesitation. "Where's the contract?"

The man shook his head.

"You know, your research can't be written on the contract or it would become evidence. Even if the Science Ethics Committee doesn't have as much power as before, the court will still fine us, so —"

He stopped there and signaled his assistant again.

The assistant walked up and opened a briefcase on the table.

There was a syringe inside.

"This is?" Lin Minjie frowned and looked at the man in the suit, puzzled.

"With just 10ml, this can make anyone get muscular dystrophy without any evidence and they would be at a terminal stage." The man smiled.

Lin Minjie blankly looked at him and his devilish smile.

"What... what do you mean?"

"Nothing. It's just that if your only family member, your daughter, suffered from muscular dystrophy, then even the Science Ethics Committee wouldn't make too much commotion about a father saving his daughter. At the same time, us, East Pacific Heavy Industrial, will make a donation on humanitarian grounds to fund your research." The man lowered his voice. "With this, you'll be more motivated, right?"

Lin Minjie looked at the man in disbelief.

Out of his own surprise, he didn't feel anger or remorse. After experiencing the ups and downs of the past six years, he was thoroughly annoyed at the world and even felt hatred toward it.

People always applied their own standards to other people and attacked people with different beliefs on supposedly ethical grounds. It would only take a few strokes of a pen on the prosecution document to end the results of ten years of research.

Even though a family would collapse because of it...

What exactly is ethics?

He was lost.

After that, the six-year-old Lin Lin "accidentally" suffered from muscular dystrophy after a cold and was diagnosed to be in the terminal stage. East Pacific Heavy Industrial donated 1 billion to support her father's research on digitalized humans. They also bought the media to use public opinion to support his cause and forced the Science Ethics Committee to withdraw their prosecution against the "great" father.

He engraved consciousness onto a circuit board and used currents and mechanics to replace blood and bone.

Public opinion about digitalized humans, the technology viewed

by the world as forbidden, became surprisingly smooth under the support of East Pacific Heavy Industrial.

The limitations of intermediate artificial intelligence were removed and the development of advanced artificial intelligence along with the body design ran concurrently. Although his feeble daughter stuck in a hospital ward made him feel some guilt, the rapid progress in technology gave him some slight comfort.

The picture turned again - it was a hospital. Looking at the ward, Jiang Chen thought it looked familiar before he quickly remembered it was where he met Lin Lin for the first time.

"Once Lin Lin can walk, dad will take you to the movie theater, to the amusement park. Anywhere you want to go, I will take you there." With a lily in the vial on the nightstand, Lin Minjie didn't look at his daughter's face. Instead, he spoke to the pristine white flower petal.

"The uncle who made a donation is a good person." Lin Lin smiled joyfully.

Even though all the muscles in her body were affected by the dystrophy, she still believed he could allow her to run freely under the sunshine again.

Lin Minjie's throat twitched. He looked at his daughter.

Looking at his daughter's bright smile, he didn't know what to say.

Finally, he forced on a smile and squeezed out a sentence.

"Mhmm, he is a good person."

And then, the war erupted.

The 2150 economic crisis foreshadowed the war in 2171. Humans weren't machines and they could use logic to solve problems. Small problems could be fixed through meetings, but fundamental problems had to be addressed by war.

East Pacific Heavy Industrial, who funded his research, was acquired by PAC to transform into a military corporation. He then went from being a scientist working for a private company to an academician serving the army, helping PAC to develop killing machines related to artificial intelligence.

He was involved in the development of Reptile and Python.

Because of the war, the block on research was completely unlocked. War captives were constantly sent into Fallout Shelter 005 to live in a deadly virtual reality experience. The seed of the birth of advanced artificial intelligence was germinating, and the technology of digitalized humans was completed. Once Fallout Shelter 005's testing enabled the evolution from intermediate to advanced artificial intelligence, combined together, a human made up of completely mechanical parts would be born into this world!

At the time, a sudden dangerous, extreme thought was born.

If advanced artificial intelligence could replace humans and give birth to a new mechanical civilization, what was the purpose of humans?

Humans were disgusting, greedy, pedantic, ugly...

A crazy thought was born.

He even gave the child that had yet to be born in this world a name.

It would be called Supreme.

The Supreme who was above all.

Chapter 490: The Dowry

"How..." Tears filled Lin Lin's eyes as she stared at the image on the screen and mumbled, "No, this must be a lie. Jiang Chen, tell me, dad is lying to me, right...?"

Jiang Chen took her into his arms without saying a word.

Although the cold armor couldn't bring her any warmth, he hoped she would feel better from his embrace.

Jiang Chen looked at Lin Chaoen who was still smiling along with the old father who reappeared on the screen – Lin Minjie.

"Fallout Shelter 005 was a pawn and Lin Lin's presence there wasn't an accident but a necessity."

"Didn't you find it odd? Why would a fallout shelter used to develop advanced artificial intelligence have a copy of <Project Garden of Eden>? And so many people knew it was inside the fallout shelter."

"It wasn't there to be the hope of mankind but rather a piece of bait to lure naïve survivors to run inside and become subjects for the experiment."

"If things had gone according to plan, the Dusk organization would've sent people inside the fallout shelter to become fresh subjects for our experiment. But unfortunately, our project had flaws from the beginning. The bug from 'the Harmony' infiltrated the fallout shelter and then you. If I guessed correctly, you should be the person who destroyed x71291. What a stubborn individual - that product saved thousands of lives." Lin Minjie shook his head and cursed.

Jiang Chen silently listened to Doctor Lin Minjie's readme file with a perplexed expression.

When Jiang Chen saved Lin Lin from Fallout Shelter 005 after she realized her father left her to leave the planet, Jiang Chen said

this to her: "Perhaps, from another perspective, he left hope on this planet."

But now, maybe what he said was wrong.

From before the war, everyone was his pawn on the path to reaching the Supreme.

If Jiang Chen hadn't forcefully flipped over the chessboard, perhaps he would've already succeeded.

Lin Lin's whimpering voice interrupted Jiang Chen's train of thought. Her eyes were filled with tears and she looked at her father with certainty.

"But... I will still use my knowledge to bring hope for our people."

Lin Minjie stared at his daughter for a while before he started to smile. "Is that so? I'm happy you have dreams, my dear daughter... I genuinely hope you can achieve your dream."

He paused and looked at Jiang Chen. "Jiang Chen, right? I already know your stance of being a human. Regarding your victory, I graciously accept it, but I won't congratulate you."

"I never had expectations of receiving congratulations from my enemy."

"Also, I hope you won't discriminate against my daughter just because she's a digitalized human."

"Please be assured that won't happen."

What should be buried wasn't digitalized humans nor artificial intelligence... but dangerous thought. While Lin Lin had fundamental differences from real digitalized humans, her brain was still a brain.

Jiang Chen looked down and raised the rifle in his hand.

Lin Lin gently pulled at him.

"Do you want to stop me?" Jiang Chen said in a quiet voice.

"Can you not spare him?"

Jiang Chen's certainty was his response to her.

This was the only circumstance where he couldn't show mercy.

"Then... let me do it. I don't want ... don't want you to become the person who kills my father," Lin Lin spoke with a remorseful smile.

She stood there with her father's brain in front of her and droplets of tears rolling down her face. She never was a strong person.

At the end of the road, with his daughter in tears, Lin Minjie seemed to have understood something - the definition of emotion, the algorithm he tried to craft for advanced artificial intelligence had been always within his reach.

But he couldn't see.

Because on the path to the Supreme, he had given up too much.

He watched his daughter kneeling on the ground, crying. He suddenly felt that this outcome wasn't too bad.

"Inside this server, there is a document numbered 7381 with a 103-page essay about warp drives." Lin Minjie stared into Jiang Chen's eyes. "If you ever face them one day, it might be useful. This is her dowry from father to daughter; I hope you can treat her well because of this gift."

"Thank you."

Although without this gift, he would still treat her well.

"You don't need to thank me. Because even if you really create the warp drive, your odds of winning only increase from 0% to 1%." Lin Minjie scoffed.

Communication was tuned into Jiang Chen's communication channel; he didn't make Lin Lin hear his final monologue.

Jiang Chen wanted to say something. He took a deep breath to calm himself in a desperate attempt to hide the weakness in his heart.

"Why didn't you tell her?"

"In the end, I wanted to experience what it felt like to be a father." He ended with a sentence that had more meaning than met the eye.

In that instant, Jiang Chen had the impulse to stop everything. He wasn't a coldblooded man and was never indifferent to cruelty. Since Lin Minjie already lost, he didn't need to put the final nail in the coffin. Since he was the father of Lin Lin, even just for... for Lin Lin, maybe he could let his brain survive.

Lin Minjie seemed to have read Jiang Chen's thoughts as he laughed and spoke in the communication channel: "It doesn't feel good to live with just a brain. The only reason I could live till now was to wait for the day I could abandon this brain too. Won't you allow that day to come?"

Jiang Chen was silent.

"The places I didn't take her to - I hope you can do that for me."

Jiang Chen nodded. "I promise."

Lin Minjie smiled at Jiang Chen. A sudden trace of remorse appeared in his eyes, but it was quickly replaced by certainty.

Suddenly, he looked at Lin Chaoen who had been smiling the whole time.

"My son, I'll give you the last order. No, two last orders..."

Lin Chaoen nodded.

"First, turn off the life-supporting device of my brain."

Lin Chaoen's brain was buried low.

Lin Lin raised her face covered in tears as she looked at her

father. Her lips trembled and she whimpered "no" repeatedly.

Lin Minjie looked at his daughter one last time and slowly closed his eyes.

"Second, end your life."

"Understood, father."

Without hesitation, Lin Chaoen walked to the side of the central computer.

"No—" Lin Lin screamed out.

The cry echoed in the empty fallout shelter. Jiang Chen tried not to look at Lin Lin.

But Jiang Chen noticed that before he pressed the button, Lin Chaoen's hand hovered over the switch for two seconds.

In the end, he still pressed it.

The bubbles in the vial gradually stopped and the green nutrient levels calmed down.

If blood and oxygen supplies are cut off, brain cells will stop functioning within 60 seconds. Within four minutes, brain cells will start to die. In 6-10 minutes, the brain will suffer irreparable damage with a large amount of brain cell death.

Watching that vial, tears rolled down on Lin Lin's mask.

Jiang Chen took a deep breath and counted in his mind.

Lin Chaoen turned around and looked thoughtfully at Jiang Chen.

"That's weird. For an instant, I had a thought to reject the order."

Jiang Chen said quietly, "Congratulations."

"No, you don't have to congratulate me since I didn't receive a mission to evolve into advanced artificial intelligence." A sudden smile appeared on Lin Chaoen's face. "Goodbye."

Chapter 491: Garden of Eden Initialize

The arm is not powerful enough? Switch to a mechanical arm. Giving birth is too slow? Raise it in a nutrient chamber. Reaching consensus is impossible in a meeting? Connect everyone's thoughts together. The brain could explode? Use a chip to replace the brain.

When every part of the human could be replaced, the only thing that can represent the human was its consciousness. And when consciousness could be replicated and mass produced, only efficiency would remain in the world, and the purpose of efficiency would be survival.

And the purpose of survival is what then?

...

Lin Chaoen chose to self-destruct along with 71 backup bodies in the hibernation chambers.

Perhaps he realized something in the end. When he made a choice, he was very calm; without any longing for this world.

To his choice, Jiang Chen could only lower his gun and didn't ask him to stay.

Jiang Chen surrounded the crying Lin Lin in his arms. He didn't know how to comfort her as he whispered something in her ear before carrying her and leaving the now silent fallout shelter.

Jiang Chen instructed the First Division soldiers to take away the quantum computer and other equipment from the fallout shelter. As to the eighty hibernation chambers and the vial, after asking for Lin Lin's opinion, he left them underground.

Because Doctor Lin Minjie passed away, the fallout shelter lost its sole controller, and its functionality came to a halt. The door of the fallout shelter could no longer be closed. To prevent people disturbing his long rest, Jiang Chen gifted the last grace.

Five hundred kilograms of explosives collapsed the entire tunnel and buried the fallout shelter 3000 meters underground.

Although the civilization was never born, it was still the grave of a civilization. It deserved the last tribute.

It was supreme but was never meant to be accepted by the majority.

He was a great scientist. This was without a doubt.

Inside the Lin Fallout Shelter, the NAC obtained an experimental level quantum computer which made the scientists in Fallout Shelter 027 ecstatic. The crowded quantum computer was finally freed from working over capacity which brought a significant bottleneck to NAC's research efficiency.

The research paper on wrap paper was given to Jiang Lin as he had been keen on this area of research. If the one hundred page paper could bring him some inspiration, then it would be a great contribution to the entire NAC... no, to the entire earth's mankind.

If the Natural Selection will arrive on Earth, then humans with wrap engine would have a fighting chance. If they can't win, they could still escape.

Of course, if possible, Jiang Chen still hoped he could solve the problem.

Regardless, the modern world is his home.

...

Northwest of Shenxiang, at the intersection of Taifu River and Dianshan Lake.

In a place one kilometer away from the lake, ten trucks parked on the cracked rural roads. Slaves hauled beams of steel to the barren land under the direction of the engineer with a blueprint; they inserted the steel beam into the corresponding location.

The steels formed into a circle several kilometers in diameter

with excavators working inside the circular area from the middle. They moved the chunks of soil onto the truck to the empty ground two kilometers out.

The middle of the circle was paved with concrete. A concrete circular pole stood in the middle with a diameter of five meters. The pole connected to the steel beams like a wheel bearing extended to the edge. At the same time, the bottom of the pole was installed with water outlets and a drainage pipe with graphite filter membrane. The edge of the bearing connected the water treatment plant's pipe.

It was like a giant grinding disc.

The soil moved by truck were all dumped there and mixed with fresh water transported from the automated water treatment plant a few kilometers out.

Just yesterday, the Hunter Division cleared out the Bug Vehicle nest in the water treatment plant and brought the plant under NAC control. Although the nuclear fusion battery stored inside could sustain water treatment for two years, it was still a problem to desert the water treatment plant. The construction of the Garden of Eden required a large amount of fresh water, and the fresh water will be supplied by newly built pipelines.

Soil, water, and treatment liquid will be mixed together under the "grinding disc" into mud, the continuous water will wash the toxins and radiation residue to the Dianshan river. The washing method to dilute and cleanse soil had a capacity of 1000 cubic meters of soil a day.

Soil cleansing was the first step in constructing the Garden of Eden.

Although he could transport soils from the modern world, it would require an astronomical amount of soil to construct a Garden of Eden with a diameter of five kilometers. With Xin's territory, it was not easy to obtain that amount of soil. Even if the

soil were imported, it would still be difficult to explain the whereabouts of the soil.

If it could be solved in the apocalypse, it was better to rely on the resources available in the apocalypse. Since the NAC already had acquired the absolute control of Wanghai, regardless of how reckless they were with the construction, it was achievable with NAC's financial capability and influence.

This soil cleansing system was only the first one. Jiang Chen planned to construct ten more beside Dianshan Lake.

Lin Lin looked at the spinning disc as she gently put on her chest and recollected what Jiang Chen told her when she was in despair.

"Construct a Garden of Eden for me beside Shenxiang. The soil there is not too bad. By growing mutated fruit and Carm tree sap there, the radiation and pollution in the area decreased by a lot. Although the toxicity level is still high, it'll be easier to change there.

He paused.

"Perhaps many years later, that place will become a place where flowers bloom, and birds sing."

[Perhaps even more beautiful than before the war.]

Lin Lin had a pleasant smile on her face and added in her mind.

Surprisingly, the remorse in her chest faded.

The war was finally over.

The mutant nests in the city center turned into ash with the strike of the tungsten rod. The smaller nests in the rural areas were in the process of being cleared out. NAC would send out a team of no less than 500 "scavengers" with flamethrowers, heavy machineguns, and the support of armored vehicles to clear out the remaining nests in underground sewer systems and buildings.

The entire west city center of Wanghai turned from the most

dangerous hunting place around on wasteland to a haven in the Suhang province.

And this Garden of Eden will become the most beautiful place in the Suhang province. Even the most beautiful place on the wasteland in the future.

"In three months, the Garden of Eden will finish soil cleansing. At the same time, the foundation near the lake will be completed. A month after that, the atmosphere separation membrane will be deployed, and the first phase of the Garden of Eden will be completed." Lin Lin looked at Jiang Chen who just walked beside her and had a proud smile on her face.

"Four months? Then the cannons, port, and defensive buildings along the river should be completed too." Jiang Chen stared into the distance and smiled too.

Lin Lin rolled her eyes. "Could you not say something that ruins the mood?"

"To protect the beautiful flower, guns and cannons are necessary." Jiang Chen's eyes narrowed.

He then paused and looked toward Lin Lin. "But just leave these kinds of unromantic thing to the unromantic me."

Lin Lin blushed and looked away.

"... Whatever you want to do."

Once the first Garden of Eden is complete, the food production in the apocalypse could be self-sufficient. At least grain, wheat, and some crops could be directly grown there. The cost might be higher, it was a good start.

Then the second one.

The new biosphere will begin to emerge on the wasteland like a series of air bubbles. The space will first be used to produce food, and then residential areas will be developed...

With the Sixth Street's increasing population, they can't constantly depend on Jiang Chen to be the "food transporter". Although in theory it was possible, it won't be stable in the long term.

Self-sufficient in food is the first step to Order.

And a must step for Order.

Chapter 492: The Secret of the Small Universe

Lin Lin provided the construction blueprint for the Garden of Eden, and the construction specifics were the responsibilities of the NAC engineers. Jiang Chen formed a special department named "Garden of Eden Research Institute". Lin Lin had no experience in management, and she personally had no interest in managing people. The department was different from the independent Aerospace Technology Research Institute with the human resources department responsible for managing.

Lu Huasheng was meticulous with his work which reassured Jiang Chen.

From the start, he was the chief engineer to the construction of the base, so it wouldn't be of worry to let him handle the construction project. Although the technology in the Garden of Eden was somewhat advanced, Lin Lin provided the blueprints for each step of the development. With NAC engineers' wealth of experience, it wouldn't be difficult to construct it.

The Sun was disappearing on the horizon.

After completing a tour, Jiang Chen took Lin Lin back to the mansion in the Fishbone base.

As usual, the delicious Yao Yao prepared a dinner equally as delicious as her. The usually adorable Sun Xiaorou studied on the side while helping Yao Yao out. As for Sun Jiao, she was in the kitchen "trying the food out".

When he just stepped in, the aroma of the food drifted into his nose. Lin Lin who took off her shoes ran into the kitchen shouting and fighting with Sun Jiao for the position of "taste tester". Every time this happened, Sun Xiaorou would comfort the two, but a little devil smile would appear on her face.

Jiang Chen's face would always have a joyful smile looking at the scene in the kitchen.

If would be great if he could bring his family from the modern world back.

In the cheerful atmosphere, Jiang Chen and the girls finished dinner. Jiang Chen watched Lin Lin with a pouted mouth head into the kitchen with the utensils as he rubbed his full belly and returned to his room.

Whether it was the mutants, or Harmony, or Supreme, all of them ceased to exist. Jiang Chen finally had time to research the mutated storage dimension.

Jiang Chen lied on the bed and closed his eyes to immerse his consciousness into the packed small universe.

The universe expanded exceptionally slowly, in a month's time, the radius only increased by a tiny amount.

But even then, it was still a decent size. From the 300 cubic meters at the big bang, it stretched into 340 cubic meters. But Jiang Chen didn't understand the mechanism behind the small universe's expansion.

Inside the pitch black space, Reptile drone and Python drones floated. Their power was almost drained and could be brought out from the storage dimension after a few more days.

And right now, most of them were scattered around the boundary of the small universe. Jiang Chen still faintly recalled that when these things were first thrown in the storage dimension. They still maintained motion.

"Would the motion be lost when it contacted the boundary of the universe?" Jiang Chen pondered with a hand on his chin.

He was not a physicist and couldn't explain the phenomenon. Even Lin Lin with knowledge in Klein particle couldn't explain it. She roughly summarized it to "The original eleven-dimensional

space decayed into three dimensional under the collapse and the big bang."

According to the [superstring theory in M-theory](#), the existence of eleven-dimensional super-gravitational attractions, Jiang Chen's previous storage dimension was similar to what was described in the theory, the dimension created through pure gravity.

When Jiang Chen asked about the pros and cons, Lin Lin only gave an ambiguous answer.

"It is hard to say if it is good or bad. The objective existence of nature has always been irrelevant of good or bad. You can interpret the previous dimension as playdoh that can be freely squished, but now it became a fixed spherical space. There are points, lines, time and all other eleven dimensions and below concepts. But you only foolishly use it as a handy treasure box. Since then, no matter what it becomes, it wouldn't matter to you." Lin Lin rolled her eyes.

But if it could become a bit bigger...

Jiang Chen stared at the deep abyss and entered into deep thought.

Inside the small universe, he was the god of the place. Any of the items inside could be moved with his consciousness. Changing the location of the things inside was as simple as organizing a backpack.

But the ability to give an object motion would consume the energy of the bracelet. Also, any item that came in contact with the boundary would lose its kinetic energy.

Inside the entire small universe, only the boundary was out of his control.

If the universe was bigger, big enough to put a planet inside.

Jiang Chen was suddenly shocked by the idea before he shook his head with a wry smile.

With the current expansion speed, even after his 17th life, it would still not be big enough to put a Wanghai inside.

Maybe he should throw a few nukes inside and forcefully "expand" this space?

Jiang Chen quickly negated the idea.

Disregarding if he could gather so many nuclear bombs or blood crystals, and overlooking if Sun Xiaorou can explode the blood crystals, no one was certain if another collapse and big bang could happen in the storage dimension. Would the space dimension fall to the first dimension? If the entire space only stretched vertically, he would have played himself.

There was also a possibility that the energy of the explosion couldn't meet the energy required for collapsing and the detonated blood crystals in the space would form a never attenuated light ball. In some sense, it would be the most painful situation. The instant he removed the light ball, he would be vaporized by the one million degrees of high temperature, but if he did not remove the light ball, the storage space would be useless.

There must be a way to increase the size of the storage dimension...

"But the way is still unknown?" Jiang Chen let out a sigh and moved the robots around a bit.

But then, he suddenly felt a light motion on his body. Although his consciousness sank into the small universe, he could still feel his body in the real world.

When he opened his eyes, a blushed face appeared in sight.

"Yao Yao, is there something wrong?" Jiang Chen looked at Yao Yao retracting her finger and rubbed her soft head.

"Hmm, is Brother Jiang Chen going to go back to that side soon?" Yao Yao asked in a quiet voice.

"Mhmm, I still have things to take care of on that side." Jiang Chen sensed the softness in his palm and smiled.

"Big Brother is working really hard," Yao Yao said in a worried voice.

[Not so much working so hard, or rather, it is more relaxing.]

With her concerned attitude, Jiang Chen felt a bit embarrassed.

"Hmm, as a way to relax, do you need Yao Yao to give you a massage?" Yao Yao lowered her head, smiled timidly, and played with the corner of her dress.

[Massage?]

Jiang Chen remembered the intimate moment that happened when she massaged him, Jiang Chen uncontrollably gulped.

Instincts told him that he should reject, but his body nodded with honesty.

Sometimes he thought that he was too evil...

Superstring theory is an attempt to explain all of the particles and fundamental forces of nature in one theory by modeling them as vibrations of tiny supersymmetric strings.

'Superstring theory' is a shorthand for supersymmetric string theory because unlike bosonic string theory, it is the version of string theory that accounts for both fermions and bosons and incorporates supersymmetry to model gravity.

Since the second superstring revolution, the five superstring theories are regarded as different limits of a single theory tentatively called M-theory. (Source: Wikipedia)

Chapter 493: Open the bank to Hang City

A small head with wet hair peeked out from the door of the bathroom. The big eyes covered with shyness scanned around. After confirming that no one was in the hall, Yao Yao was relieved. Her hands tightly squeezed onto the towel that covered her body and ran toward her room.

Around five minutes later, Jiang Chen walked out from the bathroom feeling refreshed and energized.

He didn't think it was a big deal to walk out together, but Yao Yao insisted leaving separately with a blushed face. When she remembered the look on everyone's face when they walked together, she wanted to bury her head into the ground.

"This... really doesn't hide anything." Jiang Chen dried his hair with the towel around his shoulder while he muttered to himself.

[I'll go sleep now.]

As he thought, Jiang Chen walked toward his own room.

When he passed by Sun Jiao's room, the door was suddenly pushed open.

Sun Jiao with hair already dried only in a dress shirt was smiling at Jiang Chen.

"Uh, is there something wrong?" Although she looked alluring, Jiang Chen without any bullets left was in "Saint Mode." If he accepted Sun Jiao's invitation, it wouldn't be good.

Right now, Sun Xiaorou suddenly hugged him from the back.

"Brother-in-law, why aren't you going in?" With a devil smirk on her face, Sun Xiaorou whispered playfully beside Jiang Chen's ear.

[This little devil...]

With the softness behind his back, Jiang Chen was pushed into the room by Sun Xiaorou.

He felt that if this continued, it would be the death of his body.

...

The next morning.

"Is your body okay?" Han Junhua looked at Jiang Chen feebly walking into the office as her eyebrows raised.

"It's okay." Jiang Chen didn't look her in the face and sat on his throne.

Han Junhua looked at him speechlessly and spoke after a while.

"... regardless of which perspective, you should be more restrained sometimes."

Jiang Chen who just sipped tea almost spat it out.

If it were before, Jiang Chen who slept late would choose to sleep till noon and pass on the work for the next day. But the information from Jia City stated that there would be a visitor from Hang City. For his reputation, Jiang Chen had to climb out of bed.

He sat in the office for less than an hour before someone knocked on the door. He fixed his collars and said "please come in" before a man in a blue suit that was somewhat bleached stepped in under a NAC knight's guidance.

It was a familiar face. Jiang Chen remembered his name was Kong Qian. He led the first contact with Hang's Merchant Alliance.

"Welcome, Mr. Director." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Hello, Mr. General." Kong Qian smiled back and added, "The uncrowned king of Wanghai."

[The uncrowned king?]

Jiang Chen was pleased with the title as the tip of his mouth carved up.

He warmly welcomed Kong Qian to take a seat and instructed the staff at the community center to serve tea for them. Jiang Chen

noticed the director's eyes stared at the tea floating in the cup and made a noticeable gulping gesture.

Kong Qian took a sip as an intoxicated complexion appeared on his face.

"Great tea. If I guessed correctly, it should be West Lake Longjing."

"Director Kong knows tea too?" Jiang Chen was quite intrigued.

Jiang Chen never sold luxury goods like Longjing and Tieguanying (1) at the Sixth Street; the high-grade stuff was only available in the community center with Blue Mountain coffee and Sri Lanka black tea to improve the quality of life for his officials. If it was Jiang Chen himself, he drank them like water, and everything tasted pretty much the same.

"I drank it before the war and studied tea a little," Kong Qian smiled, but a regretful expression appeared on his face, "Unfortunately, the West Lake no longer produces tea."

The harsh natural environment, the ruthless bandits, the bloodthirsty mutants, and zombies. The tea's anti-radiation trait meant that it could grow on most soils. While the quality may not be comparable to before the war, the difficulty of growing this kind of delicacies was extremely high.

"If Director Kong likes it, I can gift you two packs." Jiang Chen smiled.

Jiang Chen was pleased that the Hang Merchant Alliance listened to his warning and didn't cause trouble when NAC was attacking the mutated humans. According to their agreement, his soldiers stopped at Jia city and didn't push west.

"Thank you so much." Kong Qian was ecstatic.

There was nothing else to demonstrate friendship than things that couldn't be bought.

"No worries." Jiang Chen in a delighted mood continued, "But my guess is that the purpose of your trip is not to catch up with me and drink tea."

"That's right," Kong Qian sat up straight and cautiously suggested, "I'm here to be certain about our friendship."

"There is no need to doubt our friendship. One month ago, you already made the correct choice, one fitting for our friendship."

Kong Qian was relieved.

After a pause, he proposed with a cautious tone.

"We are grateful for your party's effort in establishing a clear trade route. To reinforce our friendship, I have a proposal."

"Let's hear it." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Based on our estimates, there are currently 1121 merchants utilizing the trade route to the Sixth Street. Now that the mutated humans in Jia City and the Seventh Area have been eliminated, the dangerous level of Wanghai decreased significantly. In the foreseeable future, the number will exponentially increase by next year. So we hope we could establish a division of the Merchant Guild at the Sixth Street."

"Guild?" Jiang Chen looked at Kong Qian feeling intrigued, "Could the Sixth Street council not protect your rights?"

"No, no, no, Mr. General, you're misunderstanding the situation." Kong Qian rushed to explain, "This guild is not political, it is only here to provide information support to merchants as well as trade fleet security contracts..."

"The mercenary guild can provide the last item."

Without other solutions, Kong Qian had to compromise, "We can take out the last item."

"I obviously won't reject the proposal to establish the merchant guild, but an organization with a guild nature must be established

under the supervision of the local government."

"I want to know the definition of supervision. Do they have to wear NAC uniforms during work?" Kong Qian asked carefully.

"Of course not." Jiang Chen shook his head. "We'll send out an inspector to be stationed in the guild. We will pay the salary. Other than attending public meetings, he will not interfere with your day-to-day work. Or, as long as you do things that a merchant should do, he won't cause any disturbances to your daily work.

"Just that?" Kong Qian was skeptical.

"Just that." Jiang Chen nodded.

Jiang Chen paused and continued.

"Relatively, we want to establish a similar partnership with your party. For example, establish a division of the mercenary guild in your jurisdiction. Don't be anxious, other than providing employees, we won't send any military units to be stationed there as we have full confidence that you can protect their lives and assets. We'll provide you with mercenary information, the channels for mercenary hiring as well as credit ratings."

"On the other hand, if you're interested, we can open up a branch of the Sixth Street Bank in your area. Crystals are currently depreciating at a rapid speed in the Sixth Street. With the trade route being more open than ever, the depreciation would spread to other areas in no time. The Sixth Street trade has mostly eliminated crystals for its trade which would further accelerate the depreciation of crystals. Of course, if you are not confident with the purchasing power of the credit, we won't have to talk about this."

Kong Qian hastened to say, "No, we are very interested, it's just that we heard the digital channel of the credit could only be done in Wanghai—"

"It is currently only available in Wanghai. But if we expand our

relay station to Hang City, then you will be included in our established network and the area for this payment channel will expand westward by two hundred kilometers." Jiang Chen smiled.

Kong Qian held his breath.

Establishing a mercenary guild division and a branch of the Sixth Street Bank, build a relay station, and join the information network of Wanghai. Jiang Chen's offer made it impossible for Kong Qian to refuse.

The risk that existed in this was also difficult to neglect.

While NAC promised not to send forces into Hang City, and Jiang Chen did prove his creditability with his action and NAC's noninvasive nature. But anyone would feel instinctively uneasy beside such a powerful neighbor.

Once the proposal is agreed upon, NAC's influence would without a doubt expand to Hang City. If the influence were setting up for the inevitable invasion, then it would be fearful. But if it only existed to increase trade relationship, then it would only be beneficial.

"Your proposal is enticing, but it also makes people uneasy," Kong Qian sighed and spoke with honesty.

"With the current situation of the wasteland, how much people could fit in Wanghai and Jia City?" Jiang Chen asked abruptly.

Kong Qian thought for a moment, "Around a few million."

"Then did your military force pose a threat to us?"

Kong Qian had a wry smile on his face.

Their people had witnessed NAC's "financial power" the rockets that covered the sky. Despite the lack of technical expertise in that, it was not something that they could do with their production capability.

"Then why are you afraid." Jiang Chen laughed.

Kong Qian took a moment to process this before he understood Jiang Chen's message as a troubled but understanding smile appeared.

The entire Suhang Province had less than one million people, and they didn't need to fight for space to survive. NAC had enough on their plate to develop Wanghai alone. From the power perspective, they didn't pose any threat to NAC.

There was no need to invade.

Once credit becomes common, Suhang Province's survivors must depend on NAC's economy.

"This is a flabbergasting reality. The reason we can survive is that we look harmless." Kong Qian stood up. "I'll send your message to the Merchant Alliance. Of course, I don't think it will hard to pass."

"Then I'll wish the best for our potential partnership." Jiang Chen also stood up and extended his hand.

"Pleasure to work with you." Kong Qian shook Jiang Chen hand and nodded.

Chapter 494: The Everchanging Sixth Street

"How many days has it been?" On the roof of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce building, Cao Guangkai in a suit gazed in Wanghai's direction without many words.

"The sixth day," The guard beside him said respectfully.

[The sixth day already?]

Dawn colored the thin fog into a golden glow. Even in Su City ten kilometers away, he could still smell the fragrance known as order and freedom. It had been clear in that direction, without any smoke, for the sixth day.

Moments later, Cao Guangkai slowly said.

"That man, when did he leave?"

The man he referred to was Lin Chaoen.

The man who referred to himself as the apostle of Supreme civilization.

The guard hesitated for a moment and answered with an uncertain voice, "Around two months."

Cao Guangkai nodded.

"He shouldn't be back then."

Based on their agreement, if he didn't come back in two months, that meant their agreement was over.

"Even God could not stop their rise to power?" Cao Guangkai looked to the direction of the Fishbone and raised his eyebrows.

Not long ago, the Dark Red's division in Hang City brought information that the Merchant Alliance formed a partnership with the NAC in the areas of banking, merchant guild, and mercenary guild. Although NAC soldiers didn't step into Hang City, NAC already exported its influence into Hang.

The core of a merchant is currency. What's a better way to control merchants than controlling the currency?

Cao Gunagkai lowered his head.

He needed to reconsider the future of Dark Red seriously.

...

The Sixth Street looked prosperous.

The crystal detector common among the streets of the Sixth Street suddenly disappeared without a trace and was replaced by EP transfer or bill payment. The Sixth Street also injected enough currency into the market in the form of a loan, and the council also signed on the proposal to reduce the tax on credit transactions to promote the use of "credit" in trades.

At first, people were skeptical about the currency. But with the passage of time, the exchange between credit and crystal began to appreciate. The initial 1:2 rose to what was 1:4 now. If it was not for NAC's strict control on credit circulating in the market, people were desperate to smash their slowly depreciating crystals onto the counter of the bank.

Because of NAC's control of credit circulation, it resulted in the strong purchasing power of the credit. Continually printing currency would only turn the currency into useless papers. Right now, on the black market, the exchange rate between crystals to credit climbed to an astounding 1:6.

On the other side, the establishment of the merchant guild provided merchant transaction access to Suhang Province and to even further places with information security. It also brought orders to the Sixth Street factories from beyond Wanghai's territory.

The mercenary guild established a division in Hang City and gave the hunters that lost Wanghai as a "hunting ground" a new profession. They either became mercenaries or guards of merchant

fleets in expanding the trade route from Hang City.

Jiang Chen was walking along the street in the Inner Circle with the company of Chu Nan and the NAC soldiers, touring the ever-changing city.

"There are a total of 174 mutant nests destroyed, and that accounts for 89% of the progress in capturing the west city center. The remaining 21 nests, because of higher risk ratings, no mercenary organization is willing to take on the mission alone."

"Then leave it to the NAC soldiers," Jiang Chen was quite intrigued by the prosperous city as he said nonchalantly.

"On the other hand, the slave owners from Su City expressed their dissatisfaction with us. Because of the depreciation of crystals, it shrunk their assets by four times."

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

"And their opinion is?"

"They want to trade for credit with us at a ratio of 1:2." Chu Nan chuckled.

"Reject them. Make him speak with the factories in the Sixth Street," Jiang Chen scoffed and said out of annoyance.

Only Sixth Street factories needed crystals now. Although in principle the bank would provide channels for the factories to purchase crystals with credit, the Sixth Street official promoted purchasing crystals from private owners. And the fact was credit could purchase more crystals at the same price.

"They won't accept the exchange ratio of 1:6. Their ambassador should be raging at the council and Zhao Chenwu. Do you need to see them?"

"No. Our people will conduct a military exercise in the no man zone between Wanghai and Su City, the "Fireball-1" will be part of the exercise. Give them a ticket to the VIP seats," Jiang Chen said.

Chu Nan smiled and replied courteously.

"I understand."

After they watch the lavish fireworks, anyone who was still discontent would reevaluate their abilities.

The street was filled with the delicious smell of food. The entire food street was full of different selections. Even though it was just food being sold, this place was the place that made the most money in the Inner Circle other than the casino. Other than typical restaurants, Jiang Chen saw a noodle shop operated by robots and a BBQ shop operated by outsiders. With the steady increase of NAC's food supply, the selection of food at the Sixth Street had much more varieties.

It was a scene that never could be seen a year ago.

Soilless farming of pre-war crops, cloning technology to grow non-mutated livestock, even the wealthy could only eat the original luxury goods a few times a year back then. Today, even the ordinary citizens of the Sixth Street, as long as they worked hard, could come into the Inner Circle for a lavish experience.

At the end of the street was a colorful street.

But from the arousing signs and intimate colors, it didn't look like a place of decency.

In the Sixth Street, brothels and casinos could operate legally. Even a council member in the Sixth Street, under the direction of Jiang Chen, ran the largest "entertainment complex" in the Inner Circle. Since most of the survivors that lived here were all once violent bandits that lived on the edge, to these people, only exciting things could give them the feeling of being alive.

Of course, forced sex trade was strictly prohibited. The Sixth Street didn't prohibit slave trades, but any slave can enter into the jurisdiction of the Sixth Street, the slave trade was not taxed nor protected by the soldiers.

In the other hand, anyone who stepped into the Sixth Street by default was considered free. Their personal freedom was protected under the constitution.

"Do you want to go take a look inside? I will keep this a secret." Chu Nan jokingly smiled and looked at Jiang Chen.

"I will pass." Jiang Chen looked away at the girl who was winking at him.

He couldn't even feed the girls back at home, and he didn't have too much interest in these ordinary girls.

When the group passed by the red light district, they ended the day's travel plan ahead of schedule. Jiang Chen planned to head to the council building and audit the council work for this quarter, and announce the recruitment and military plan for the next quarter.

In the end, Jiang Chen met with eight local merchants he invited to discuss partnership opportunities.

After taking a turn, the roadblock on the main street drew Jiang Chen's attention. A few construction vehicles passed through the smooth concrete road and used drillers to leave equally spaced holes in the road. The construction workers in the back surrounded the holes to insert black cylindrical poles.

"What is that?" Jiang Chen looked at the blocked road.

"They are paving maglev track, a Hang merchant invested in the project. In exchange, we provided them with two years of exclusive sales rights to maglev vehicles as well as four years of tax-free sales." Chu Nan explained, "Once the maglev track is complete, maglev cars could pass through."

The maglev track buried under the road had low resistance against explosions, so most of the tracks were demagnetized during the war. Now that the Sixth Street returned to stability with the economy skyrocketing and average personal income steadily

rising, the cunning merchants obviously began searching for opportunities.

[Maglev vehicles?]

[Finally, a feeling of the future.]

With the construction vehicles moving forward, a genuine smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face.

The seed of civilization has been planted.

He was delighted to see that it has sprouted.

Chapter 495: Mutant Pasture

The group quickly returned to the council building.

With Chu Nan's guidance, Jiang Chen came into the meeting room and sat at the head of the table.

Jiang Chen, Chu Nan, Zhao Gang, the ten council members, and fifteen industry representatives attended the meeting.

The meeting first started off with Chu Nan reporting the current work progress of the Sixth Street, and then Zhao Gang reported on the security of the city and the training progress of the Third Division. Following, Zhao Chenwu as the council representative summarized legislations that were passed in the last quarter and stats on Sixth Street's population, production, and economy.

Reporting work was only a formality. The content was all handed to NAC logistics with the logistics head Wang Qin organizing the data into visuals and delivering them to Jiang Chen.

Although the dry content made Jiang Chen sleepy, he still pretended to be engaged. Since as the leader of the "country", his attitude and authority was associated with the stability of the government system.

After the "formal" reporting ended, Jiang Chen coughed and picked up the hologram computer pen on the table and propped up the hologram screen. With the eyes in the room focused on him, he read the recruitment and military plan for the next quarter.

The focus of next quarter was on building the economy. Now that the internal and external threats were all removed, NAC won a period of a stable growth to consolidate their victory in Wanghai and Jia City.

The 2,000 recruitment target and the security tax remained unchanged.

The council members and industry representatives looked

relieved when they heard the two keywords. When the decisions to increase the number of military contracts and the firearm reserves were announced, the military industry representative was delighted by the news. With the situation around Wanghai stabilizing, it may be good news for the other industries, but it was negative news for the military industry.

They were already satisfied that NAC didn't decrease their order, but not only did they retained all existing orders, but they also increased their military spending which provided a positive boost to the military industry at the Sixth Street.

The reason why Jiang Chen introduced this decision was to make sure the military companies stayed alive and to adjust the Fishbone base's production.

In the future, the military plant at the Fishbone base would gradually transition to focus on more advanced technology. For example, the combustion rockets used by "Fireball-1", other than the key module and boosters, other parts would be outsourced to the Sixth Street military factory to produce. Not only would it increase the production of the rockets, but it could also decrease production cost which mutually benefited both parties.

The meeting took two hours before it was finally over. Everyone left the room with a smile on their face. At this meeting, they all more or less got what they wanted to gain.

"Are you not going to rest a bit?" Chu Nan looked at Jiang Chen drinking tea and asked.

"No need, I prefer to take care of everything all at once."

The quarterly meeting ended, and there was still a meeting with merchants to discuss their partnership with NAC. It was something that could be done by Wang Qin, but since Jiang Chen was at the Sixth Street, he decided to take care of it.

'Then I'll arrange it. They are already in the waiting room," Chu

Nan said courteously and left the conference room.

"Don't make them wait too long."

...

A moment later, eight merchants followed Chu Nan into the conference room. They were mostly raw material suppliers in Wanghai with farms over 50 acreages in size. They were growing mutated fruits, tea, tobacco, and a recently introduced sweet pea that could not be directly ingested, but it could be used to produce sugar like sugar cane.

Before they used to produce Carm tree sap, but because of the mass scale production at Shenxiang and due to the saturation of the Sixth Street's plastic and rubber supply, they decreased the production in that area and became the industrial raw suppliers for NAC.

With the NAC food "production" ramping up, the demand of nutrient supply also took a big hit. With one of its ingredients mutated fruit decreasing in demand, the farm owners all suffered financially.

Right now around the conference table, the eight merchants anxious exchanged eye contact with each other as they were uncertain about what Jiang Chen was going to say.

"I believe all of you should know that I plan to discuss a partnership opportunity."

"What kind of partnership?" A merchant stood up and questioned somewhat tensely.

"No need to stand up, this is only a casual meeting, just sit." Jiang Chen signaled him to sit down and then tapped his own shoulder gently. A hologram image appeared on the conference table, "We are discussing an opportunity in livestock."

"This is?" Looking at the image on the table, the merchants had a variety of expressions.

Some were shocked, some were intrigued, and some were contempt...

Without bothering with the expression on the merchants' faces, Jiang Chen looked at the creature on the hologram similar to a wild boar and introduced,

"Long Haired Pig, an artificially created mutant designed by my research institute through genetic engineering."

"Artificially created mutant?" The expressions on the merchants' faces were interesting.

"The fur could be used to produce clothes, and meat is consumable. Most importantly, its brain could form crystals without the consequence of hostility." Jiang Chen smiled.

To Jiang Chen's surprise, the merchants didn't look interested at all. Instead, they looked troubled.

"Mutant as livestock? We attempted this before, but the higher amount of crystals contained in the mutants, the higher the food they ingested. And right now, crystals are not worth the money. If it is just about producing meat, the doubled-headed cows raised are more than enough."

"What's the meat quality compared to the mutated cow," a merchant rushed to ask a more critical question.

The Double-headed Cow's meat texture was terrible and tasted like chewing on sand. But to the typical people that could not afford fresh meat, the meat of the double-head cow was not a bad choice.

Jiang Chen waited for the merchants to bring up their questions and put up three fingers.

"I will summarize your questions with three points."

"First, the Long Haired Pig is easy to raise. The feed mostly consists of mutated fruits, as well as an appropriate amount of

catalyst.

"Second, there is no need to worry about crystal output. A three-month growth cycle with a single pig producing 70-80 crystals.

"Third, although the meat quality is not comparable to the pre-war livestock raised by NAC, compared to the mutated cow, it is much better."

When Jiang Chen said these four sentences, only fervor was left on the faces of the merchants.

Could be fed with mutated fruits.

To the farm owners on the brink of bankruptcy, the only thing they didn't lack was mutated fruits!

Chapter 496: No matter how difficult it is, we have to do it

The construction of the mutant farm would be operated by the merchants themselves; the NAC would only be responsible for providing the piglets. The profit would be a three-seven split with NAC taking 30% in the form of a "patent fee."

Some clever merchants wanted to purchase the piglets at a high cost and buy the patent from NAC, but Jiang Chen rejected the proposal with a smile. Turning profits was only part of it with the priority being that NAC had to control the level of crystals produced. And these piglets must only be strictly raised in NAC territories without leaving the city. If any evidence of a leak was been discovered, NAC would terminate the partnership and issue a hefty fine.

After an agreement was reached, the eight merchants left the conference room with excitement. The partnership agreement Jiang Chen proposed without a doubt dragged them from the brinks of bankruptcy, so they had no reason to reject.

And they were even more surprised that Jiang Chen was willing to share such a big piece of the pie with them. Because of NAC's power, they easily had the ability to build their own farm.

...

Jiang Chen made the choice with careful consideration. With NAC's financial capabilities, they didn't need to bother with small profits. All in all, NAC printed the currency, so did he need to care about the profit of a few farms?

Compared to being a millionaire in the slums, Jiang Chen would much rather be a king among the rich. Other than the food trade and advanced military market controlled by the NAC military government, he had plans to contract out all "non-core profit" to

private companies. This was because regarding expansion to new markets, private individuals had more energy compared to officials. As to the reason, history certainly had many lessons.

He finally took care of everything on Sixth Street. Jiang Chen said goodbye to Chu Nan and thanked him for the arrangements at Sixth Street before he boarded a helicopter to return to Fishbone base before Dusk.

It was almost late October already and Ayesha's mission was almost done. On the other hand, the Rothschild family invited him to Europe to attend a car exhibition. Since Jiang Chen had a friendly relationship with Carmen, he obviously wouldn't decline this opportunity.

The apocalypse was on the right track.

Compared to dealing with threats in the far future, development plans had to shift toward the modern world now.

...

When the helicopter landed, Jiang Chen noticed through the window that Jiang Lin was waiting beside the helicopter pad.

When Jiang Chen came out, he immediately walked up.

"What do you need?" Jiang Chen looked at him with surprise.

"It's about that warp drive paper." Jiang Lin took a deep breath and said briskly.

"Is there any progress?"

"How is that possible?" Jiang Lin shook his head with a bitter smile. "After reading it through, it gave me and the research institute a lot of inspiration. Can I know who wrote the paper? If possible, please take me to see him."

"That's not possible. The scientist who wrote the paper already boarded the colonization ship."

Still digesting that fact, Jiang Lin let out a sigh. "Just as I

thought."

"Anything else?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Yes, it's about research priorities," Jiang Chen said with seriousness. "Although this research paper provided us with a new, clear research path, it's still extremely difficult to make the warp engine into a reality. In other words, it's almost impossible considering the current conditions..."

"The priority is the same as other research projects - regardless how hard it is and even if it takes ten or twenty years." Jiang Chen stared into Jiang Lin's eyes. "This has to do with the life of a lot of people."

Dazed by Jiang Chen's solemn tone, Jiang Lin held his breath.

Moments later, his voice trembled.

"Who?"

"A lot of people." Jiang Chen didn't tell him who but only gave him this ambiguous answer before leaving.

To be honest, with his current abilities, if the modern world was matched up against the Harmony, he would have no odds of winning at all. With the Sailor Bug that could interstellar travel as well as the weapons in their possession, he couldn't think of any way they could win.

But if this side could design the theoretically-possible warp drive that could achieve the speed of light, then his odds of winning would increase.

Although the danger could be foreseen, Jiang Chen still had some time left. The distance of 20.5 light years meant it would take Natural Selection a hundred years to reach Earth.

But even then, their time was still limited. Although it was superficial to value a civilization's power with history in time, they were still monsters who traveled thousands of years in time.

And a monster with invasion written in its genetic code.

It was strictly impossible to tell the world that "aliens" were on a path to invasion. Disregarding the possibility of current technology observing Natural Selection light years away, even if he did convince people in the modern world, it would just create unnecessary fear.

How would he get the countries around the world on board? How could he make the Earth civilizations possess the power to fight Natural Selection? There were still many problems that Jiang Chen had to solve.

Development had to be done step by step, but the steps had to be accelerated.

When he returned to the mansion, after having dinner with the girls, he went into the bedroom with Sun Jiao.

Jiang Chen had already told them his date of returning to the modern world. After his return from the Sixth Street, he took care of everything he needed to.

Sun Jiao remembered he was leaving, so she was particularly passionate during their night of intimacy as if she wanted to stuff Jiang Chen into her body and fuse their bodies into one...

It was a long night.

The next morning, Jiang Chen stood by the bed and stared at the audacious but beautiful face.

Without any parting words, he kissed her on the cheek.

Gently covering her body with the covers, he returned to his own bedroom and disappeared from the mansion.

...

When he opened his eyes again, the scenery was different and the world was colored with vibrancy.

Staring at the elegant chandelier on the ceiling, Jiang Chen laid

on the bed for a while before he switched his thought process from the apocalypse to the modern world.

The first thing he did was check his phone. Without Ayesha being a communicator, it was hard for him to receive messages from the modern world. But as soon as he opened his phone, hundreds of missed calls filled his screen.

And the missed calls belonged to the same name.

<Caller: Xia Shiyu>

Jiang Chen pressed his screen a few times and immediately called her back.

The phone only rang for a second before it went through. He couldn't even open his mouth before he heard an anxious voice.

"Where are you now? Hello? Are you okay on that side?"

Jiang Chen listened to her concerned questions as he was dumbfounded.

"I... I'm okay. Uhh, I'm in Xin of course."

After confirming Jiang Chen's safety, Xia Shiyu sounded relieved. But when she realized Jiang Chen was okay and she worried over nothing for one week, her voice carried a hint of blame.

"As the president, it's better for you to not suddenly disappear. You're in Xin. If you disappeared, I wouldn't even know which phone number to tell the police."

"Ahem, don't worry, nothing will happen. But because of my job demands, I have to occasionally go to an area without signal. A random island in the ocean." Jiang Chen made up a story.

Xia Shiyu took a deep breath and didn't completely believe Jiang Chen's explanation, but she still accepted it.

"Let's not talk about this and get to business."

"Mhmm, I'm listening." Jiang Chen held the phone with one hand while he used the other to change into a new pair of pants.

"The company recently received a lot of invitations. Aside from private functions, there are some official invites."

"For example?" he asked nonchalantly.

"The Xiangjiang Government as well as Han's invitation."

[Finally here?]

Jiang Chen smiled.

[With era-defining technology, someone finally felt pained.]

Chapter 497: Two Good News

"Arrange a time. Try to set the schedule around mid-November. By then, hmm... I'll visit Hua with the Xin president as a member of the outstanding businessmen.

As for the Xin president visiting Hua, he just said it nonchalantly. If he told Zhang Yapin, he would immediately prepare for a friendly visit. With the currently friendly relationship between Hua and Xin, the always-nice Hua had no reason to reject, especially if the outcome of a visit would be mutually beneficial to both parties.

"Does Xin have this arrangement?" Xia Shiyu asked with skepticism.

"Of course. Because I'm an outstanding businessman, I received some information beforehand." Jiang Chen made up a random excuse.

"Okay, I'll reply." Xia Shiyu nodded.

"Is there anything else?"

"Of course. I have two pieces of good news. Which one do you want to hear first?" Xia Shiyu giggled.

"Two pieces of good news? Of course I want to listen to the better news last." Jiang Chen was intrigued.

Even Xia Shiyu, who didn't like to laugh, was joking - the good news must be fantastic.

"It's about the virtual reality experience store - all 1.44 million virtual reality helmets have entered the market. The players were highly attracted by the virtual reality experience project and created a net profit of 500 million USD. Almost all our partner internet cafés requested additional Phantoms."

With the unit price at 1500 USD and sales of 1.44 million, a profit

of 1000 USD was equivalent to 1.44 billion in profit. And the virtual reality experience project created a profit of 500 million in just one month's time.

Of course, the reason they could make so much money was because of the magical experience offered by the helmet and people's curiosity. Even now, a lot of people still waited in line to experience the virtual reality helmet. But after some time, once the Phantom was officially released, the virtual reality experience hype would gradually cool off.

And the majority of Future Technology's revenue wouldn't be from the one-time gain of selling the helmet nor from the virtual reality experience project but the actual operations of virtual reality...

"What's the second piece of good news?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"You don't sound shocked?"

"I can imagine how crazy people can get for immersive virtual reality technology."

Xia Shiyu smiled as she listened to Jiang Chen's confidence and continued.

"The second good news is that the 2 million Phantom helmets we released for preorder have all been sold out with a net profit of 1 billion USD. All the preordered helmets were sold out within one minute. A lot of users left comments on our forum hoping we could increase the number of units available for preorder."

"Sold out in one minute? It looks like the market is hungry enough." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Everything is just waiting for the final push. How's the production rate of the helmet?" Xia Shiyu asked.

"20 million units of Phantom helmets should've been completed; I'll add a few more finished production lines in a bit and the goal to produce 20 million helmets will be exceeded," Jiang Chen said

proudly.

Jiang Chen was obviously very assured with Xia Shiyu handling the operations and marketing. He only asked a few things about the operation of the company before hanging up.

He stuffed his phone into his pocket before leaving his bedroom to go to the garage.

It was October 20th and the 80 days of training were completed. Based on the agreement between Jiang Chen and Ayesha, he would personally pick her up once training ended.

To be honest, Jiang Chen missed her quite dearly after so long.

...

The vessel that carried supplies to the island didn't bring any supplies this time. Its mission was to bring back the trainees on the island.

Right now, the 110 agents were standing on the beach waiting for their last examination. Watching the outline of the vessel on the horizon, everyone had genuine excitement on their faces.

The training was finally over and the rookie agents managed to make it out alive. Because of this, they completed the transformation from a rookie to a qualified agent and warrior.

Ayesha not only taught them how to disguise themselves and collect information, but she also taught them everything she knew about combat including sniping, calling airstrikes and even individual combat, which were all part of their daily training requirements. The virtual training and live ammunition training were conducted simultaneously to engrave this information deep down into their bones like instincts.

80 days ago, they were just a bunch of girls, but now, 110 fully trained agents stood there. With the assistance of carbon Nano bulletproof vests, genetic vaccines, Ghost Sniper Rifles, Type-11 Pistols, heat sensor grenades, digitalized contacts and injected

chips, the combat abilities of any one of them could compare to a fully equipped, six-man special force team.

Once Fallout Shelter 027 could produce optical camouflage and Gauss Rifles, their combat abilities could easily steamroll an entire squadron.

When he arrived on the island, Jiang Chen resisted the urge to kiss Ayesha. He stood in front of the 110 agents in formation. In front of their reserved but determined eyes, he was pleased.

He paused and spoke in a loud voice.

"Congratulations, you all passed the test. I see 110 agents and 110 warriors here. I'm happy."

"In 80 days' time, I trust Ayesha already taught you what you need to know and what you should know." Jiang Chen smiled at Ayesha then looked back at the 110 agents. "I will only emphasize two words here: loyalty and bravery. I won't waste time on anything else."

"Your work in the future will not be easier than your experience the past 80 days. Or rather, the difficult training you went through is nothing compared to what you will face in the future. Your work may be staying in Xin to conduct 'safe' counterintelligence work, or you could be sent all over the world to execute the most dangerous missions and even take on the elites from the CIB or KGB. But I promise you will be able to easily take them on. And as your boss, I will make all of you believe that your effort is well worth it."

Jiang Chen signaled the row of soldiers by the side and they opened the ten briefcases filled with cash.

Glancing at the green paper bills, even the strongest-willed agents held their breath. Each briefcase contained at least one million in cash and there were ten of them.

On the entire beach, the only people who were unaffected by the

scene was Jiang Chen, who didn't lack money, and Ayesha, who wasn't interested in money. Even the six female assistant trainers gulped at this sight.

Jiang Chen was pleased to see the expressions on the agents' faces.

"The money is all yours. You can spend it however you want."

"Everyone is rewarded with 100 thousand USD and 10 days of vacation. This is not your pay - it is just a small bonus to you for passing the training."

"At the same time, I want you to know that you're serving the richest man on the planet. So I hope you won't be foolish enough to be bought by some paper bills. You won't be let down materially. But to match that, I want you to feel a sense of purpose and belonging.

"Ghost Agents, this is your name."

"I want all of you to be proud of this name. Our enemies will fear this name."

Chapter 498: Examining Ghost Agents

With the crisp applause, the ten-minute examination was over. When Zhu Yu walked toward the briefcases full of cash, Zhu Yu felt like this was all so surreal.

The Celestial Trade employees responsible for distributing the cash gave back the agents' luggage so they could store their stacks of cash. Zhu Yu looked at her stuffed backpack then back at the door to the cabin. She felt an inexplicable feeling.

The moment she boarded the plane to the island, she dreamed of living a lavish but exciting life like 007, but when she was forced to step onto the vessel to the training base, the reality destroyed her hopes for a "perfect life."

But now with a bag full of cash and an opportunity to board the vessel back to civilized society, she felt empty.

"What're you thinking about?" The blonde girl named Penny stopped beside her and put her hand on her friend's shoulder.

"I don't know." Zhu Yu shook her head as her serene face was filled with confusion. "Although at the beginning, I felt pain and despair in my hellish days as I waited for the day I could leave... now that the day is finally here, I just feel empty inside."

"Congratulations, you graduated," Penny said optimistically.

Zhu Yu looked at her friend, puzzled.

Penny shrugged and replied, "When I was in university, our state mandated military training. At the end of the training, that's what our trainer told us."

"Is that so?" A relieved smile appeared on Zhu Yu's face.

Penny laughed and smacked her friend's shoulder playfully. "Don't think too much. It's not good for a girl to be too shy. You can be melancholic when you're old, but now you should think

about how you're going to spend the money."

Penny patted her backpack with a grin.

"You're right. I'll send some money to my family first or I'll just move my family here. Since I didn't say anything when I left, they must be worried," Zhu Yu said.

"You eastern people are so problematic - my mom kicked me out when I was 18." Penny looked speechlessly at her friend.

Aside from these two, the agents all chatted with the friends they made during training. They discussed how they would spend the money and where they would go for their ten-day vacation. The layout of the vessel was different than when they first came - the spacious cabin was filled with delicious food and champagne in a party atmosphere.

Just like a graduation ceremony.

Once all the agents boarded, Jiang Chen smiled at the female trainers standing dumbfounded.

"What are you guys waiting for? There's a share belonging to you too."

As they snapped back to reality, the six trainers walked over in excitement while suppressing their ecstatic moods to accept the 100 thousand that belonged to them.

After everyone boarded, Jiang Chen signaled the vessel to take everyone to New Moon Island. Once they were on New Moon Island, the Xin National Security Department would complete the paperwork for them, assign equipment, and arrange positions.

The busy 80-day training period had ended and the small island finally returned to peace.

Jiang Chen gazed at the girl he hadn't seen for a long time and she was gazing at him too. Her dark brown hair reflected an intoxicating brightness under the dusk sunlight. Her camouflage

shirt outlined her gorgeous figure.

Her blue pupils were the most irresistible; they seemed to be speaking - showing him her passion and gentleness.

Without any words, Jiang Chen walked up to hug her. She gave a light shout when he pushed her onto the training ground sandpit.

Ayesha felt the cold mixture of sand and seawater as well as the pressure on her chest. Ayesha timidly glanced at the podium she used to stand on when she conducted training and whispered:

"No, not here."

She watched the agents crawl through every day, but she didn't think she would fall here one day.

"Don't you think this is exciting? The place where you trained them with authority." Jiang Chen bit Ayesha's ear with a smirk.

With her face blushing and no one left on the island, Ayesha began to lose their willpower as she mumbled:

"I'm not authoritative at all... and the vessel left, how are we going to go back...?"

"I arranged a helicopter." Jiang Chen blew into her delicate ear. "It will be here tomorrow morning."

"But it's too dirty here..." Ayesha anxiously looked at the mud on her shoulder.

"Don't worry, I'll wash it off for you. There are bathrooms in the hotel on the island."

Jiang Chen could no longer resist staring at her shirt damp with seawater along with her messy hair.

Without giving any more opportunities for Ayesha to "resist," Jiang Chen kissed her.

...

The next morning, the helicopter arrived and stopped on the

helipad on top of the hotel.

When they boarded the helicopter, Ayesha looked and reminisced about the island disappearing in the distance. Jiang Chen, who noticed her gaze, gently squeezed her small hand and smiled. "Don't want to leave?"

"I'm just feeling nostalgic." A smile appeared on Ayesha's lips. "Those children, although they were very resistant in the beginning, they gradually matured after a lot of things happened during training. They are now much more reliable compared to 80 days ago."

[Children? A lot of them are older than you.]

Jiang Chen focused on Ayesha's side profile as he mocked her only in his mind, not wishing to ruin the mood.

"Will this place be deserted in the future?"

"It will be the training base for future Ghost Agents, but the training will be done by current agents, your students." Jiang Chen rubbed her soft and puffy hair. "I don't want you to leave for too long."

A stunning curvature appeared on her cold face as Ayesha rested her head on Jiang Chen's shoulder. She began to draw on Jiang Chen's leg with her finger.

"What are you writing?" Jiang Chen hugged her thin shoulder.

"A spell," Ayesha whispered.

"Can I know what kind of spell? Miss Witch." Jiang Chen joked.

"I will gift you my soul so I can stay with you through eternity... the spell from my hometown."

At her heartfelt words, Jiang Chen leaned down and pecked her pale forehead.

"Thank you, this is the most beautiful gift I've ever received."

Ayesha timidly buried her face into Jiang Chen's shoulder and happily closed her eyes. Her longing for him had been fulfilled bit by bit.

In the rays of the morning sun, the outline of the helicopter disappeared into the horizon.

Chapter 499: Modified Lamborghini

With the training of the Ghost Agents completed, the Xin national security department finally became a functional force. While training, Ayesha carefully documented each agent's talents and personality before providing a detailed summary. People with strong organizational abilities were promoted to a management role, people with high intelligence were sent to counterintelligence or personal security roles and people with strong executive abilities went abroad for intelligence collection...

The 110 agents formed a massive net that covered every corner of Xin and expanded its tentacle-like reach to the outside world. They were just like 110 pairs of eyes that monitored the comings and goings of every corner of Xin.

...

When they returned to Coro Island from the training island, it was almost 11. Ayesha dropped off her luggage in the living room before she ran to the kitchen. Water began to run. By the sound of it, Jiang Chen knew she was cleaning the dusty kitchenware.

Since Ayesha left, Jiang Chen hadn't cooked at home. He had either gone out to eat or traveled to the apocalypse, thus the kitchen was completely empty and dusty.

Moments later, the fan was turned on before he heard the sound of vegetables being chopped. Jiang Chen watched the figure moving back and forth behind the frosted glass before a genuine smile appeared on his face.

[How should I describe the feeling?]

[Absence makes the heart grow fonder?]

Although Ayesha always seemed like a newlywed wife.

After not having Ayesha's cooking for so long, Jiang Chen almost ate his tongue when he tried her delicious food again.

Ayesha's cooking style was completely different from Yao Yao's. Due to the cold of the apocalypse, Yao Yao favored stews and hotpots more while Ayesha's style was a fusion between the east and west. For example, she chopped peppered steak into strips to fry them with peppers. But regardless of her style, there was no doubt her food was delicious!

If it wasn't for the fact that he loaded his genetic vaccine with a digestive and had a higher metabolism than typical people, he would be afraid he'd get a food-baby from eating so much food.

While Ayesha gazed at her love feasting on her cooked food, a joyful smile appeared on her face.

"Aren't you hungry?" Jiang Chen noticed Ayesha hadn't even touched her chopsticks yet as he asked curiously.

Ayesha blinked her blue eyes.

"Mhmm... I feel like I haven't seen you for a while. I want to look at you more."

After lunch, Jiang Chen helped Ayesha clean up the dishes and stuffed them into the dishwasher. He also put his clothes from yesterday into the washer and they picked up cleaning equipment to completely clean the dust-covered mansion.

...

Although Ayesha insisted she would do it herself, Jiang Chen still picked up a broom to help. It would be too embarrassing if she cleaned the whole mansion herself while he didn't do any chores.

Especially since there was much inexplicable fun to be had with chores when doing them with the person you loved.

When the housework was done, it was time to clean the people.

Thus, Jiang Chen picked up Ayesha and carried the blushing woman into the washroom.

The shower ran for two hours straight before it finally stopped.

Jiang Chen relaxed for the rest of the day.

...

The next morning, Jiang Chen planned to visit Zhang Yapin at the presidential palace. Yesterday afternoon, he made an appointment and President Zhang Yapin specifically rescheduled a few meetings so he could see Jiang Chen for the entire morning.

Jiang Chen took Ayesha to the garage and handed her brand new car keys.

"Let's get familiarized with our new car."

Ayesha looked at the Lamborghini, quite puzzled.

"Is this different from the previous one?"

Jiang Chen smiled mysteriously.

"There are too many differences; you'll see once you get in."

Ayesha put her hand on the front engine cover and gently tapped it with a skeptical look. Instantly, her expression became surprised.

"The exterior of the car was completely replaced with super-plastic steel and was repainted. The car windows were replaced with organic bulletproof glass that's capable of blocking anti-armor sniper rifles. Aside from the car being slightly heavier by a few kilograms, the defense of this Lamborghini is comparable to an armored vehicle." Jiang Chen walked beside Ayesha as he explained the car to her.

"Is... is this the technology from the other side?" Ayesha ran her hand along the surface as she murmured.

"Yes. Aside from all that, there's a button below the steering wheel that can launch heat sensor grenades from the spare exhaust. Targets can be locked onto from the screen."

Although it was the technology from the apocalypse, it didn't require too much expertise. They only built an exterior based on

the specifications and added a grenade launcher. A lot of wealthy people before the war were keen to collect heavily-taxed diesel vehicles. So when Jiang Chen took out the odd-looking Lamborghini from the Sixth Street repair shop, they didn't look surprised at all.

The entire modification process took only 500 credits, which was well worth the money. If it wasn't for the fact that the trunk was in front, thus creating a lack of space, Jang Chen would've installed two Python rocket launchers on it.

Just as Natasha reminded him, was better for him to be cautious about his own safety since he was in a position of power. Jiang Chen wouldn't permit the things that happened on Coro Island to happen again.

Ayesha sat in the highly modified Lamborghini and tested the handling with a spin outside the garage then she stopped the car right in front of Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen got into the passenger seat, put on his seat belt, and Ayesha started the car again.

From Jiang Chen's experience as a passenger, aside from the vehicle being more stable compared to before, there was nothing else too different from this previous one.

They arrived at the garage of the presidential palace. With guidance from the employees, Jiang Chen stepped into Zhang Yapin's office.

Zhang Yapin stood up to greet Jiang Chen when he saw him.

"What do you want to drink?"

"Thank you, coffee is fine." Jiang Chen smiled and sat across from Zhang Yapin.

The honor of the president personally making coffee for him was something only Jiang Chen could enjoy, but it wasn't completely unjustified since Jiang Chen's Future Group and Celestial Trade

provided 10000 jobs for Xin and indirectly facilitated at least 40000 employment positions. While the large number of foreigners raised the cost of living in the short term, it also made the locals wealthy.

Just thinking about the prosperous industries at Ange Island and the tourism growing by the day on the other eight islands, the president couldn't stop smiling.

"How have you been?" Jiang Chen took a sip of his coffee.

"Busy, but it feels pretty good. Because of Moro's independence movement, Country F can no longer be self-sustaining. Australia plans to increase trade with us, but we still have a small disagreement regarding tariffs. Their people and our people have been in nonstop debate for the past few days, but it's under friendly terms." With his fingers crossed on his knee, Zhang Yapin said pleasantly, "So, the issue we are discussing today is...?"

Jiang Chen put down his coffee and said two words.

"Visiting Hua."

"Visiting Hua?" Zhang Yapin raised his eyebrows. "But with the F civil war continuing to escalate, being too close to Hua could make UA suspicious."

"Then we'll visit them together."

With December approaching, whether it was ensuring the smooth launch of virtual reality helmets or fully expanding Xin's tourism industry, an official diplomatic visit was necessary. And as a representative of Xin's corporations, Jiang Chen had to be present.

Chapter 500: The Meeting in the Presidential Palace

"Visit at the same time? What's the order then?"

"Based on the distance, we'll visit Hua first then UA. The timing will be at the end of the year. I'll go with you," Jiang Chen said.

"The end of December, after the UA election?" Zhang Yapin touched his chin.

"That's right." Jiang Chen nodded.

"It should be feasible. Once the election ends and the UA government completes its transition, we'll request a visit. Considering the time it takes to reply... let's set the date to December 25th?" Zhang Yapin proposed.

"Okay." Jiang Chen nodded.

"What's the topic of discussion?" Zhang Yapin continued.

"Of course it's about trade and discussion since maintaining absolute neutrality is one of our fundamental principles. You should be more familiar with the diplomatic rhetoric than me."

"Okay... I'll request my assistant to set up the schedule as well as the list of accompanying personnel." Zhang Yapin nodded.

"Thank you."

"No problem. With the current economic growth of Xin, we do need to establish a friendly diplomatic relationship with the superpowers. Our original plan was to conduct diplomatic visits earlier next year, so we're only ahead of schedule by a month," Zhang Yapin said while taking a drink of his coffee.

The Xin economy was transiting from a primal farming economy to a tourism economy with light support from industry. At the same time, Future Mining's deep-water mining technology shipped

large amounts of excessive molybdenum to the global market. The Xin domestic market alone obviously couldn't consume these resources and it would require the president to act as "sales" to take a bunch of businessmen to search for business opportunities.

And based on the desire to win over support and export influence, the superpowers wouldn't let the small countries leave empty-handed.

"Is that all?" Zhang Yapin put down his cup and crossed his fingers again.

"There's one other thing." Jiang Chen paused and looked at him. "I need to launch satellites."

"Launch satellites?" Because this was mentioned so spontaneously, Zhang Yapin took a moment to process it.

"That's right. I plan to build a space center on an empty island near the equator for the purpose of research, rocket launches and weather observation," Jiang Chen said with seriousness.

"Are you not going to consider renting the rocket? For example, Russia seems to be an expert in that area, and you have a pretty good relationship with them," Zhang Yapin suggested.

"Renting the rocket isn't a long-term solution. I don't want Celestial Trade's satellites to be dependent on someone else. And based on the consideration of national security, Xin must possess the ability to launch satellites independently, especially since we are close to the equator with a unique geographical advantage. If we don't utilize like it, we're wasting a God-given opportunity."

"But launching satellites isn't as simple as you think." Zhang Yapin let out a sigh and began to explain to Jiang Chen the difficulties involved.

"First, following tradition, the plan to launch a satellite must be reported to the International commercial Aerospace Organization, the Internal Maritime Organization, and the International

Telecommunication Union."

"Secondly, since Pannu acceded to the Treaty on Principles Governing the Activities of States in the Exploration and Use of Outer Space, including the Moon and Other Celestial Bodies, which are commonly referred to as the 'Outer Space Treaties,' Pannu has the obligation to inform the United Nations on space launch activities. Although the regime has changed, the new countries inherited the former Pannu regime of the United Nations seats, so we inherited the treaty by principle.

"Just reporting? Then get your assistant to write a few documents," Jiang Chen said.

"It's not that simple - all kinds of international organizations will come to investigate our launch status to confirm we're launching a satellite and ICBM. And we can be certain that country F will protest against our launch plan and use all forms of political means to disrupt our launch plan in the name of national security." Zhang Yapin shook his head.

A sneer appeared on Jiang Chen's face.

"There's no need to worry. They don't even have the ability to take care of themselves; they won't have the energy to focus on our launch plan. I'll submit the complete launch plan to you in three days. We're launching commercial telecommunication satellites that are in accordance with international law. As for the 'international tourist groups,' they can feel free to visit."

With Jiang Chen's mind made up, Zhang Yapin let out a sigh.

"Okay, if you insist. But allow me to be blatant; does Celestial Trade have the ability to launch satellites? It's not as simple as lighting fireworks."

"You don't have to worry about that; I'll take care of it."

[We can't do it today but that doesn't mean we can't do it tomorrow.]

With so many private aerospace companies on the verge of bankruptcy, he only needed to spend money to buy the equipment and manpower. He'd leave the restricted equipment there and he didn't want the outdated stuff anyways. He only needed a group of experts responsible for the launch and equipment maintenance.

He'd bring the rockets and satellites from the apocalypse and familiarize the experts with the equipment operational menu. The real "Aerospace Technology Research Institute" wasn't in the modern world; they were only in the apocalypse.

Launch rockets had great strategic and economic significance; space rockets were the prerequisite of the intercontinental missile and so were not worth mentioning. Any country with the ability to launch space rockets had the capability to strike globally. And this ability would be a deterrent to other countries.

As for the economics, from establishing a wireless power grid to the construction of the space elevator to the development of moon resources, all depended on the most fundamental technology of rocket launching.

Jiang Chen hoped the experts in the modern world could gradually digest the space technology from the apocalypse. Since he was not a scientist himself, although he could easily transport materials from the other world, the digestion of the future technology depended on the scientists of the modern world.

[Talent reserve must be started as early as possible - it's a long-term investment.]

Jiang Chen finished his coffee before departing.

When Jiang Chen opened the door, the senior advisor in a suit was about to enter. Jiang Chen smiled at the tall man and passed him.

The advisor's eyes stopped on Jiang Chen's back for a moment as his forced smile disappeared and he stepped into the president's

office.

"Mr. President, is this really appropriate?"

"What are you referring to? My senior advisor." Zhang Yapin put the coffee cups down again and smiled.

"Allow me to be honest. From what I see, you're not the person sitting in the president's seat. That man is." Zhong Wei took a deep breath and said with honesty.

"What's wrong with that? 80% of the tax revenue of Xin is either directly or indirectly related to his Future Group. This year's GDP increase is expected to exceed 100%. This is a first in history," Zhang Yapin said nonchalantly.

"But an oligopoly is extremely dangerous. In dire times, they could potentially overthrow—" Zhong Wei spoke with his voice slightly raised.

"Mr. Zhong Wei, you know this country was overthrown by them before." Zhang Yapin looked at Zhongwei emotionlessly.

In an instant, the president he was so familiar with gave him a distant feeling.

"And it's me who's the president, Mr. Zhong Wei. If I continue to work like this, it's always going to be me."

"And from what you saw, compared to one year ago, did our citizens' quality-of-life improve or worsen?"

"It certainly... improved... a lot."

Although Zhong Wei disagreed with Jiang Chen ordering the president around like a puppet, he had to admit that it was because of Jiang Chen's large investment that Pannu Island's economy woke up. From building apartments to improving citizens' living environments to investing in infrastructure development, Celestial Trade didn't do anything that harmed Xin's interests, but their good deeds couldn't be counted with the fingers on both hands.

"Then that's enough." Zhang Yapin smiled.

"But—"

Zhong Wei still wanted to say something, but Zhang Yapin interrupted him.

"Mr. Zhong Wei. The reason why I hired you as a senior advisor is because of your economic doctoral degree from Harvard as well as your excellent ability in international relations and trade. I didn't hire you because of comical political awareness and boring ambition. This isn't the Rainbow Mansion, this is the Xin Presidential Palace. Do you understand what I mean?"

After a long while, Zhong Wei nodded his head with great difficulty.

"I understand."

"So some things can't be mentioned again in the future, understand?"

"... I understand."

Table of Contents

[I Have a Mansion in the Post-apocalyptic World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: Land Reclamation?](#)

[Chapter 402: Another Usage of Jumping Ropes](#)

[Chapter 403: Safety Concern](#)

[Chapter 404: Buy, Buy, Buy](#)

[Chapter 405: Immigration Wave](#)

[Chapter 406: The Relaxing Time on the Beach](#)

[Chapter 407: You are being Monitored](#)

[Chapter 408: Arms Sale and Conditions](#)

[Chapter 409: It was not a Secret after all.](#)

[Chapter 410: Do you sell Nuclear Submarines?](#)

[Chapter 411: The Clash on the Expressway](#)

[Chapter 412: Tearing it Up](#)

[Chapter 413: Bumping Shoulders with the Slim Reaper](#)

[Chapter 414: Rage](#)

[Chapter 415: Smart Medical Chamber](#)

[Chapter 416: The Punishment for being naughty](#)

[Chapter 417: I need a list](#)

[Chapter 418: Xin National Security Bureau](#)

[Chapter 419: The new Ghost Agent Recruits](#)

[Chapter 420: Spartan's Training](#)

[Chapter 421: Exchanging Intelligence](#)

[Chapter 422: The Reunion with Robert](#)

[Chapter 423: Dismember Country F](#)

[Chapter 424: Smoke and Dust](#)

[Chapter 425: Godly Land Internal Testing](#)

[Chapter 426: The Open Ceremony on the Cruise](#)

[Chapter 427: Investment Euthanism](#)

[Chapter 428: Probe](#)

[Chapter 429: Pretending not to know](#)

[Chapter 430: Decisions](#)

[Chapter 431: The Mutants Flood](#)

[Chapter 432: Tightening the Defensive Line](#)

[Chapter 433: A Risky Choice](#)

[Chapter 434: Lightning Attack against Seventh Area](#)

[Chapter 435: Peacekeeper](#)

[Chapter 436: The Construction Robot](#)

[Chapter 437: A Sea of Zombies](#)

[Chapter 438: Incinerating Zombies](#)

[Chapter 439: The Heartwarming Bubble Bath](#)

[Chapter 440: Purchasing Gasoline](#)

[Chapter 441: It had just began](#)

[Chapter 442: The Struggle on the West Line](#)

[Chapter 443: Destruction does not require Technology](#)

[Chapter 444: The Trade in the Distance](#)

[Chapter 445: Arms Sale Agreement with Russians](#)

[Chapter 446: Adapt Ancient Forms to serve the Present](#)

[Chapter 447: Fire!](#)

[Chapter 448: 166 BMWs Flying in the Air](#)

[Chapter 449: Seige on Sports Center](#)

[Chapter 450: Or God](#)

[Chapter 451: 121 Hydrogen Bombs](#)

[Chapter 452: Collapse](#)

[Chapter 453: An End to the West Line](#)

[Chapter 454: The Fire](#)

[Chapter 455: Watching the Firework together](#)

[Chapter 456: Coming Home](#)

[Chapter 457: Regain Control from the Mutants](#)

[Chapter 458: Even more Powerful Rockets](#)

[Chapter 459: Mutant Farm Project](#)

[Chapter 460: Droplet No.1](#)

[Chapter 461: Deepwater Construction](#)

[Chapter 462: Future Mining in Production](#)

[Chapter 463: Her body is more honest than her words](#)

[Chapter 464: For Our Friendship](#)

[Chapter 465: Virtual Reality Helmet in Production](#)

[Chapter 466: Unrest at Night](#)

[Chapter 467: The Intimate Arrival](#)

[Chapter 468: What If](#)

[Chapter 469: Farewell](#)

[Chapter 470: Experiencing Virtual Reality](#)

[Chapter 471: Arena Mode](#)

[Chapter 472: The Progress in Interdimensional Travel](#)

[Chapter 473: Inflation?](#)

[Chapter 474: Issuing Currency](#)

[Chapter 475: Start of the Battle](#)

[Chapter 476: Target Locked](#)

[Chapter 477: The God's Cane](#)

[Chapter 478: Path of Evolution](#)

[Chapter 479: Humans aren't humans](#)

[Chapter 480: Colonization Era](#)

[Chapter 481: Harmony Era](#)

[Chapter 482: The Crisis Afar](#)

[Chapter 483: The Last Shackle](#)

[Chapter 484: This is Impossible](#)

[Chapter 485: Backup](#)

[Chapter 486: Counterattack](#)

[Chapter 487: A Pleasant Surprise](#)

[Chapter 488: The Not-so-heartwarming Reunion](#)

[Chapter 489: The Path of Supreme](#)

[Chapter 490: The Dowry](#)

[Chapter 491: Garden of Eden Initialize](#)

[Chapter 492: The Secret of the Small Universe](#)

[Chapter 493: Open the bank to Hang City](#)

[Chapter 494: The Everchanging Sixth Street](#)

[Chapter 495: Mutant Pasture](#)

[Chapter 496: No matter how difficult it is, we have to do it](#)

[Chapter 497: Two Good News](#)

[Chapter 498: Examining Ghost Agents](#)

[Chapter 499: Modified Lamborghini](#)

[Chapter 500: The Meeting in the Presidential Palace](#)